

# REPLIES

CONNECTED WITH THE

## REORGANIZATION

OF THE

# ARMIES OF INDIA.

## CAVALRY, ARTILLERY AND ENGINEERS.

- 1.—RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF CORPS,
- 2.—MILITARY CODE AND RULES OF DISCIPLINE,
- 3.—ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARDS,
- 4.—EUROPEAN OFFICERS,

WITH

PRECIS ON THE FOUR PARTS ON ENGINEERS ATTACHED.



# CAVALRY.

---

## THE RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF CORPS .

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. What are the races, tribes and castes of which the Cavalry of the is composed?
2. What districts are the several races, tribes, or castes drawn from?
3. Have any races, tribes, or castes been excluded from the Cavalry of either by the Regulations or the practice of the
4. Are there any races, tribes, or castes hitherto neglected or excluded, from whom recruits might with advantage be enlisted for the Cavalry of the
5. What Agency is employed for the enlistment of recruits for the Cavalry of
6. On enlistment of recruits for the Cavalry of the what precautions of Registry and other forms are observed before the Local Authorities of districts?
7. When recruits are enlisted in cantonments, or taken from the families of Troopers, or the followers of Cavalry Corps, what precautions, if any, are taken?
8. What alterations should be made in your recruiting regulations and practice, relatively to races, tribes, or castes, with a view to improve the future composition of the Cavalry of the
9. What are the words of the oath administered to the recruit on his entering the ranks of the Cavalry of the
10. How long has this Form been in use in the Cavalry of the

## QUESTIONS.

**11.** Can you recommend any improvement in the wording or matter of the oath administered to the recruit of the Cavalry of the when first enrolled?

**12.** Should the Cavalry Corps of the be raised each in a prescribed District, and be recruited there, and there only?

**13.** Or should the Cavalry Corps of the be recruited over a wide area; in fact, without reference to Districts?

**14.** Should the Corps of Cavalry of the be homogeneous as to race or caste?

**15.** Should the Corps of Cavalry of the be composed of each of which shall consist of separate tribes or castes; or should the tribes or castes be mixed up together in the whole Corps?

**16.** If the Corps of Cavalry of the are not homogeneous but composite, in what proportions should the races, tribes or castes enter?

**17.** What agency should be employed for recruiting?

**18.** What precautions should be taken before the Local Authorities, or through their instrumentality in connection with recruits for the Cavalry of the

**19.** Should a Troop or Squadron of Europeans form a component part of the Corps of Cavalry of the

**20.** If so, should such Troops, or Squadrons be enlisted for this special purpose; or be composed of men selected from the European Cavalry Corps serving in India; or be integral portions of European Cavalry Corps and subject to periodical relief?

**21.** How should the barracks and stables of such isolated European Troops or Squadrons, be placed?

**22.** Would such detachments of Europeans, seriously complicate commissariat arrangements?

**23.** How should such Troops or Squadrons of Europeans be armed? with similar,



QUESTIONS.

or with different weapons from those in the hands of Native Troopers with whom they would be associated ?

**24.** How should the Cavalry of the be armed ?

**25.** Has any advantage been derived from the dress and equipments of the Troopers of the Regular Native Cavalry of the being assimilated to those of the European Dragoon ?

**26.** How should the Cavalry of the be dressed and equipped with a view to the efficiency and comfort of the Native Trooper ?

---

GENERAL LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF IN INDIA.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 & 2.** The Mahomedan, as I am informed, compose the large majority ; Rohilcund, Delhi, and neighbouring districts furnish a large portion of the Cavalry.

**3.** I am not aware of any rule to this effect ; practically the number of Hindoos has been small.

**4.** I am not aware of any but in the old Irregular Cavalry ; Seikhs, Punjabe and Affghans were few, while in the Punjab Cavalry they predominate.

**5.** They come forward freely without any special agency.

**6.** Those laid down by the regulations should have been observed.

**7.** There seems to be no general rule on this head.

**8.** No regulations seem necessary and uniformity in the composition is not desirable. The sources of supply are considered ample.

**9.** That laid down in the Article of War, I presume.

**10.** I have no idea.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11. No, and from all I can learn, it is a matter of little moment.
12. No, but it would probably be a good plan to have Troops or Squadrons of particular races.
13. They should be recruited generally over India.
14. No, but they might be so as to Troops or Squadrons.
15. Answered above.
16. Uniformity is undesirable, Corps should differ in this respect.
17. None is believed to be necessary.
18. The usual precaution should be taken of ascertaining from the District Officers that the recruits really belong to the villages that they state they came from.
19. It does not appear necessary: when practicable, on service, there should generally be a proportion of European Cavalry, but I think it does not seem necessary to form them in Regiments with Irregular Cavalry.
20. Answered above.
21. Answered above.
22. It would be inconvenient decidedly; for Native Cavalry Corps or Wings of Corps are required at places where to send Europeans, and to have a Commissariat, would hamper efficiency and be otherwise inconvenient.
23. If there were such Troops or Squadrons they should be armed like other Dragoons.
24. Carbine and sword generally, but there must not be uniformity; some Corps might have lances, swords and pistols.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, MADRAS  
REGULAR CAVALRY.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

The Madras Cavalry, with the exception of its Trumpeters, Farriers, and Bandsmen, who are chiefly East Indians, is composed exclusively of Mahomedans, Rajpoots and Mahrattas, and by the latest return in the following proportion :—

Mahomedans, .....	2,341
Rajpoots, .....	98
Mahrattas, .....	324

2.

Twenty-three from Hindoostan.

Forty-nine from Northern Circars.

About two hundred from Mysore.

About two thousand and thirty-six from Arcot District, Vellore, Madras, &c.

About three hundred from Trichinopoly and Ganjore, and the rest from the Baramahl and Ceded Districts.

3.

No races, tribes or castes have been excluded by regulation from the Madras Cavalry, which in regard to composition is much the same now as when the two senior Regiments were transferred to the East India Company in 1784 by the Nowab of Arcot. The Regular Cavalry has for many years been considered the birthright of the Mahomedans of the Arcot District ; and with the exception of a few Mahrattas, commanding officers have made little effect to recruit elsewhere. The paucity of Hindoos in the ranks, I find attracted attention fifteen years ago, and endeavours were made, with but partial success, to obtain Rajpoots and Mahrattas. From all I have been able to gather it is clear to me that there *was*, no doubt, a strong feeling on the part of commanding officers in favor of the Mahomedans ; and this, with other causes, has tended to exclude Hindoos from the Madras Regular Cavalry.

4.

Possibly Hindoos from Mysore might be induced to enter the Native Regular Cavalry, as they readily enlist into the Mysore Horse. The Mysore Horse however, as a matter of policy, has been purposely retained in a state of comparative indiscipline, and for that reason, is, in all probability, much more popular than the Native Regular Cavalry ! Moreover there is, I learn from Lieutenant General Sir Mark Cubbon, the strongest disinclination on the part of the people of Mysore to quit the province for any lengthened period.

5.

The same agency as for Native Infantry when requisite : but the present establishment of Light Cavalry Regiments (300 privates) is on so reduced a scale, that of late years vacancies as they have occurred

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

have been easily filled up by the transfer of Recruit boys or by enlistments at Regimental Head Quarters.

- 6.** The same as for Native Infantry.
- 7.** The same precautions as for Native Infantry.
- 8.** Not of necessity, but as a simple measure of precaution, the existing preponderance of Mahomedans should be gradually reduced until Hindoos and Mahomedans are in equal portions, if it can be managed.
- 9.** The same Oath as for Native Infantry.
- 10.** See Native Infantry.
- 11.** See Native Infantry.
- 12.** I much prefer general enlistments to recruiting in any particular Districts. But as stated in the reply to question 2, it is only in certain Districts that men suitable for the mounted branch of the service have been obtained.
- 13.** Without reference to Districts if practicable.
- 14.** Composite not homogeneous corps are most to be desired in my opinion.
- 15.** The tribes and castes should be as much as possible mixed up in the whole corps.
- 16.** Mahomedans and Hindoos in equal proportions would be the best composition, but Hindoos of the inferior tribes and castes dislike the Cavalry service, neither are they well fitted for it, and Rajpoots and Mahrattas in sufficient numbers are difficult to be obtained; indeed I am led to believe that they are not procurable in this Presidency in any number.
- 17.** The present agency is quite suitable if the existing system is to be followed, but if my recommendation to enlist half Mahomedans and half Hindoos is adopted, it may be necessary to employ extra means for providing a sufficient number of the latter class, such as a Recruit-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ing Depôt and a distinct agency similar to that recently created for the Infantry.

18.

See reply to question 23 "Infantry" on this point.

19.

See reply to question 28 "Infantry" on this point.

20.

Answered as above.

21.

Answered as above.

22.

Answered as above.

23.

Answered as above.

24.

With the old Dragoon sabre adapted to the strength of the man's arm. The present sword is much too heavy for a Native trooper, and I may say, for any but the most powerful men in even a Regiment of European Dragoons ; swords of different weights adapted to the varied strength and size of the men should be given to Regiments of Cavalry, and the scabbards should either be of wood or lined with wood. The present steel scabbards have wood in them, but it is not in the proper place: it is placed at the sides of the blade, and not where it ought to be, before the edge. The perpetual drawing and returning swords should be prohibited. The swords should be drawn and inspected by the officers periodically, the edge carefully examined and reset if it has sustained injury. Because they give confidence, not for any other reason, I would give each Native Cavalry soldier a brace of *percussion* Pistols, and for sentry or vidette duty, I would arm one fifth of the men with *percussion* Carbines. But as I have often heard said by the late Colonel Charles Cuveton, than whom there was no better Cavalry Officer nor one of more varied experience, "the Dragoon's true weapon is his Horse."

25.

There is advantage in assimilating to some extent the dress and equipments of the Native Regular Cavalry to the European Dragoon, but I think that generally, assimilation is carried too far. As regards the dress and equipments &c., of Native Cavalry, I would recommend that reference be made to a report on those points which was drawn up by me under the instructions of the late Sir James Lumley (then Adjutant General of the Bengal Army) in 1841-42.

Information was sought for and obtained from the best and most experienced Officers of both Her Majesty's and the Company's service

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Tribes and castes in each, and much as possible, in equal proportions.

16.

If composite, the chief object should be to keep an equal balance between the two religious classes of Mahomedan and Hindoo

17.

I think just as at present.

18.

The man enlisting him being held responsible for a recruit seems to be as much precantious as can be necessary.

19, 20, 21, 22, & 23.

See my replies to questions 28, 29, 30, 31, & 32, " Bengal Infantry"—Head, " Recruiting and composition of Corps."

24.

Native Tulwar and Victoria percussion Carbine.

25 & 26.

See my replies to these same questions in reference to the Native Regular Light Cavalry of the Madras Army.

---

MAJOR-GENERAL W. R. MANSFIELD, CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

(Copy.)

No. 173. By order of the Commander-in-Chief; Memorandum by the Chief of the Staff.

On the future formation of the Bengal Light Cavalry European.

HEAD QUARTERS, ALLAHABAD,

2nd July 1858.

1. The Governor General has determined that the 5th and 8th Regiments of Native Light Cavalry are not more worthy of lenient treatment than the other Corps of the same arm and consequently that they shall incur a like fate.

2. A question therefore is submitted as to whether a fifth Regiment of European Cavalry should be formed, on the basis of the four Regiments recently ordered and now in of course organization, or if any modification should be proposed, so as to constitute Regiments of European Cavalry of less strength than those already authorized, and how many in that case, it may be thought desirable to organize, and with what complement of officers and men.

3. Considering the manner in which it will be necessary hereafter to disseminate the European Cavalry throughout India, it appears to the Commander-in-Chief that it will be expedient to have small Regiments instead of five strong ones.

It is of great consequence for the sake of discipline and efficiency that Corps shall not be broken up, but should move and work as a whole, whenever circumstances permit.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4. Excepting when a large Army is formed there are few Cavalry columns

1.

1 Lieutenant-Colonel.  
1 Major.  
6 Captains.  
12 Lieutenants.  
6 Cornets.  
1 Adjutant.  
1 Quarter-Master.  
1 Surgeon.  
1 Assistant Surgeon.  
1 Veterinary Surgeon.

2.

1 Regimental Sergeant  
Major.  
6 Troop Sergeant Majors.  
1 Quarter-Master Ser-  
geant.  
1 Armourer Sergeant.  
1 Saddler Sergeant.  
1 Farrier Sergeant.  
1 School Master Sergeant.  
1 Orderly Room Surgeant.  
18 Sergeants.  
1 Trumpet Major.  
6 Trumpeters.  
18 Corporals.  
6 Farriers.  
384 Privates.  
450 Horses.

organized in which it would be necessary to have more than 350 British Dragoons, as with them would be associated Native Cavalry to make the column up to (1,000) one thousand sabres in ordinary times.

5. Under these circumstances His Excellency would recommend that there should be ten Cavalry Corps consisting of (3) three squadrons or (6) six Troops. To be officered as per margin 1. The strength of the Regiment to be as per margin 2.

6. The appointment of Pay Master is not recognized in the East India Company's Service, but it is probable that ere long, considering the great increase in the number of Regiments belonging to the Hon'ble Company, it will be found necessary to adopt the practice of Her Majesty's Service in this respect.

If this should come to pass, it will be necessary to add one Pay Master and one Pay Master Sergeant to the above establishment.

7th. Before closing this paper it may be well to advert to a point of organization which has not escaped the attention of the Right Hon'ble the Governor General. The possible

mingling of Native Squadrons hereafter with the European Squadrons.

If such a project should ever be entertained and its feasibility and practical utility, there can be little doubt, it will be found that the strength of the European Regiment as above stated, will be more convenient than a large one, both as a movable body in the field, and for ordinary purposes to which Government would apply such corps.

8. If we suppose (3) three native Squadrons of British Dragoons of the strength above stated, we shall have a body of (6) six squadrons consisting when the Regiment is completely effective of (700) seven hundred sabres, after allowing a considerable margin for sickness.

9. No cavalry regiment shall exceed this in strength both on account of discipline in general and real efficiency as a movable body under one commanding officer.

Sir Sidney Cotton reports most favorably of the experiment he has made in the Peshawur Light Horse.

In that corps there is one squadron of natives to two Europeans. General Cotton passes the highest encomium on all alike.

( By order )

(Signed) W. R. MANSFIELD, *Major General,*  
*Chief of the Staff.*

## MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWAR DIVISION.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

1.

The old Irregular Cavalry Regiments were composed of Brahmins, Rajpoots, Syuds, Patans of Rohilcund and adjacent Provinces, and Mahomedan Rajpoots, their numbers in the 7th Irregular Cavalry (which may in this respect be taken as a specimen of the service) on the 1st May 1857, stood as follows:—

Mahomedans, Syuds and Patans, .....	392
Mahomedan Rajpoots, .....	82
Brahmins, .....	62
Rajpoots, .....	28
Seikhs, .....	20
Hindoos of an inferior description,.....	2

Since then, Seikhs and other Hindoos of the Punjab, as also the better class of Mahomedans of the Punjab and Trans-Indus Pathans have been enlisted.

2.

Hurreeanah and Rotuck furnishes Mahomedan and Hindoo Rajpoots; Delhie, Meerut, Goorgaon and Rohilcund furnish Pathans; Brahmins are principally furnished by Oude, Cawnpore and Allahabad.

3.

I know of no regulations for enlisting or excluding any Races, tribes or castes, but it has been the practice to exclude the low castes such as Sweepers, Goojers, Barbers, and the like.

4.

Native Christians when they can be obtained in sufficient numbers to form a troop would be highly desirable, Sweepers have been tried under the name of Bidur, or without fear, and I believe were good soldiers, but prejudice and dislike entertained for them, by the other men, led to their being got rid of; and I would by no means recommend these men being placed in a Regiment with other castes. It might however be very desirable, to have a few Regiments composed of them only, the place of Native Officers being filled with European Serjeants or Officers (European) intelligent men who distinguished themselves in European Cavalry Regiments, could be posted as Sub-Officers to these Corps, and I think the system would work well.

5.

Until the present outbreak no agency has been required, Candidates for admission have always been with the Regiment.

6.

A Roll of the recruit with a reference to some man of respectability in his village is sent to the civil authority for verification and registry.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

See reply to No. 6.

8.

Recruits should be enlisted for general Service. If Irregular Corps and preserved in the present strength, I recommend that the counterpoise of castes be preserved by enlisting a distinct race for each squadron. I consider however it would be far preferable to reduce the present strength of Irregular Cavalry Corps to about 300 to 350 men including all ranks, and forming each Corps wholly of one caste, taking care that a due proportion of each class be introduced into the service.

10.

Vide foregoing answer.

11.

I think an oath somewhat similar to that of the Infantry might well be introduced into the Irregular Cavalry.

12.

If the present strength of corps be reduced, each Corps might then be raised in a prescribed district, and recruited from that only. If the present strength be retained, then each squadron might be so raised and recruited.

13.

I recommend the system of recruiting Corps and squadrons in distinct districts.

14.

Each Corps or each squadron of a Corps should be homogeneous as to race and caste.

15.

The Mutiny of the Native Army has clearly proved as the evil result of amalgamating the castes, and judging from the experience of the past, I recommend the system of forming bodies of distinct and separate tribes.

16.

I think the Irregular Cavalry might be composed of half Hindoos and half Mussulmen, the latter including Trans-Indus Pathans, Punjabee and Hindoostan Mahomedans generally, and the former class consisting of Seikhs and Hindoostan Rajpoots. If Native Christians be obtainable, a proportion of these would be very desirable for this as well as other branches of the service.

17.

The Irregular Cavalry has ever been, and is likely to continue a popular service with all classes of Natives and a scarcity of recruits is not I think, to be apprehended. Should such occur, and if as recommended,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Corps are enlisted from particular districts, the Civil Officers of those districts could lend them aid in obtaining recruits, if the Corps is at any great distance from the district.

18.

I consider the present precaution of a verification Roll sufficient.

19.

Certainly not ; such a measure would lead to the deterioration of the European soldier in every respect. I think however that it would be beneficial to the service if a Troop or Squadron of Natives were enlisted for service with European Corps, to save the European soldiers from duties of exposure, such as that of the Rear Guard on the march and for covering foraging parties while on service.

20.

Vide foregoing reply.

21.

Vide foregoing reply.

22.

Vide foregoing reply.

23.

Vide foregoing reply.

24.

The present arms of the Irregular Cavalry are good and serviceable. I don't think any thing can be better than a Tulwar and Carbine for the men of this service.

25.

Not answered.

26.

The present dress of the Irregular Cavalry is not good, it takes a long time to put on. I would substitute the Tunic for the Alkali, a good large puggarie and black or brown leather Belts. There should be but one dress, the new coat for full dress, the old one for undress. One uniform should be fixed for the whole service. It should be supplied to the men from the clothing agency.

Nolan's saddle has been tried in the 7th Irregular Cavalry by Colonel Mulcaster and found to answer well.

The saddle is covered with shabraque of cloth dyed in England so as to imitate a Leopard's skin. This is not expensive and looks remarkably well.

## MAJOR-GENL. SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDING OUDE FIELD FORCE.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

The Irregular Cavalry is composed chiefly of Mahomedans of various tribes and races; in the early days of its formation the nobles and chiefs of tribes brought their retainers into the field, and thus troops and regiments were raised gradually; this has been changed, and though the service has still attractions for men of mark, as all have to pass through the ranks to position, these have decreased. The Rajpoots were formerly in greater numbers than now, though there are still some to be found and a few Brahmins.

2.

Rohileund has given the best men, perhaps Mahomedans (Pathans) the descendants and relatives of the men of Eusofzaie—Delhie supplies many sowars, and the least desirable in stamp—Zhujjur, Rhotuck and Kullinore send forth hundreds, Rajpoots and Ranghurs, Mahomedan converts, good soldiers, though they need to be commanded.

Hurrianah gives its share, and some of the best horsemen in the country are found in this district. A great many of the Zhujjur and Rhotuck men go the Scinde Horse, tempted by the higher pay.

3.

Of late years the demand for Irregulars has been such that no man who could manage a horse and find good security amongst his comrades has been refused service.

4.

The Jâts were perhaps neglected on account of indifferent horsemanship. I am not aware of the exclusion of any warlike class at all familiar with horses.

5.

Recruiting has been usually carried on by the Native Officers and men of each Corps, they train up their children for the service. No medium could be more efficient, any Native Officer or man of family could raise a troop if need be in his own district. This was the agency adopted chiefly by officers to whom the raising of corps have been entrusted.

6.

Men's names are registered in their own district, but desertion, ordinary desertion, is rare.

7.

In Irregular Corps, a list of candidates, the sons of relatives of men who have died or been killed, or who are still present is kept, and these pass in as vacancies arise. In some Corps this is carried to such

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

an extent that the admission of an outsider is unknown. These candidates or Omedwars move about with the Regiment. Doubtless there are many and great advantages in thus making a corps the home of a family from generation to generation but there are also disadvantages, the circle from which the supply is drawn is narrow, class interests obtain to an injurious extent.

8.

I can suggest no alteration in the mode of recruiting, the ranks of the Irregulars must be filled in a great measure for a long time from the Punjab and the Pathans of Eusofzaie and the border. There is no sympathy between the Pathan and the Seikh, and the former considers the Punjaabee Mussulmen utterly degenerate. There is a fine race of Pathan about Pindee Gahe in the Rawul Pindee district, which has lately taken service with us.

9.

Major Daly, C. B., has raised two Corps of Irregular Cavalry, the 1st Punjaub Cavalry and the 1st Oudh Cavalry, and has augmented the Corps of guides, yet he never administered an oath.

10.

No reply.

11.

I would have no oath; oaths have not served to restrain the Native Army from the utmost brutality; no oath could have strengthened the fidelity of the Guides and Punjaub Corps, and in these they are not used.

12.

Some Corps might be raised with advantage in prescribed districts.

13, 14 &amp; 15.

I think it is of little moment whether Corps or troops be of distinct races, the efficiency of the Regiment in either case would depend on the character and disposition of the Commandant, along the Punjaub Border we have had much experience of this sort; some officers have endeavoured to make their corps Pathan, others again are inclined with a Seikh fancy, companies and troop of races, in each case the result has been good, for the officers were in earnest.

16.

I would strongly advise that distinction of race be preserved. Let the Seikh troops be Seikh, and the Pathan, Pathan. I prefer troops of different races for general service to corps of one race.

17.

See. 5.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18.

See 6 &amp; 7.

19.

The introduction of a troop or squadron of Europeans would seriously embarrass the movability and therefore diminish the value of Irregular Cavalry.

20.

If adopted, the troops should be enlisted specially for the purpose; men and horses entertained on the Silladar principle, and thus no Government Commissariat would be needed.

The Commandant would have all necessary supplies in the Bazar.

21.

Bungalows built according to the custom of the district, each to hold 8 or 10 men, the most convenient and the most healthy plan.

No stables would be required.

22.

See 20.

23.

The European troops should be armed as perfectly as possible, with revolving Carbines or Pistols.

24.

Every Irregular should have a sword, lance, and carbine. He has much detached duty to perform which necessitates the possession of fire arms, Picquets, Escorts, Videttes moving through hilly and jungly countries without fire arms, he is at the mercy of his enemy. This is well understood on both sides. With his carbine the sowar is treated with respect, without it he feels helpless, this is the general feeling amongst the men. I would leave it optional to the man to carry a lance.

25.

No reply.

26.

The dress is good, in some corps there has been a tendency to tinsel and trumpery, and to besmear the sowar and officer with gold and silver. There is no head covering like the puggeree for the sowar, handsome and serviceable. The Alkalick should be of the best material but simple as becomes the service soldier. Belts and appointments should be of English manufacture, those of this country fail in the test.

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF  
ON THE FRONTIER.

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Chiefly of good caste Hindoos from Upper India with about 10 per cent. of Mahrattas and the like number of Mussulmen.
2. Chiefly from Hindostan Proper. The Mahrattas and some of the Mussulmen from the Southern districts of the Bombay Presidency.
3. Yes,—no very low caste men are ever enlisted.
4. The attending to, acknowledging at all in any way any distinctions of race, tribe, caste, &c., as giving any rights or implying any merits appears to me to be a very great error.  
  
Men should be enlisted with reference to individual qualifications only ; any race, tribe or caste, the individuals of which possessed high personal qualifications would necessarily predominate over the others, but not by reason of race, tribe or caste, but simply on account of their personal and individual qualifications. This cannot, I think, be too much insisted on or too frequently kept in view.
5. Regimental arrangements only.
6. None that I am aware of.
7. Ditto ditto.
8. All such matters should be left wholly to Regimental Commanders to arrange as they find best. Races, tribes and castes should not be attended to at all.
9. I have not a copy of the oath, it is well known.
10. Since its first formation.
11. The practice of administering such oaths is, it appears to me, very gravely erroneous ; it implies that this oath alone is what binds the soldier to his duty. Such swearing always tends to induce untruth, inasmuch as it creates the impression that when not bound by oath the soldier may be unfaithful.

## QUESTIONS,

## ANSWERS.

12.

All such matters should be left wholly to Regimental Commanders.

: 13 to 16.

All consideration of races, tribes, and castes should be omitted, and such circumstances should never be acknowledged as implying any degree of merit or demerit. Men should be enlisted in consideration of personal qualifications only, and entirely at the discretion of Regimental Commanders, who should be left to make their own arrangements for obtaining good recruits wherever they pleased.

17.

These arrangements should be left wholly to the Regimental Commanders. If each Regiment had fixed permanent Head Quarters an abundant supply of Recruits to fill vacancies would always be ready at hand, and no agency whatever would be required.

18.

None.

19.

No; the less the Native Indian Soldiers have to do with any Europeans, except gentlemen, the better.

20 to 23.

The proposal if acted on would, however carried out, ruin the Indian Army. The chief, the peculiar advantage of our Native Troops is their readiness, their independence of all those heavy Commissariat arrangements, Barrack accommodation, &c., which are necessary for European Troops in India. Under the proposed arrangement all would be rendered helpless. The solid strength of the European Regiment and the activity of the Native Corps would both be wanting while the higher classes of natives, whose presence is invaluable in our ranks, would be wholly excluded from the service.

24.

With cutting swords and short double barrel carbines.

25.

I think not.

26.

The dress should be a loose double breasted tunic of thick broad cloth with plenty of pockets in it. Cloth overalls. The head dress should be a helmet or Kilmarnock cap or the Native Indian pugree. For Summer wear the tunic should be of grey, or drab colored cotton cloth, with overalls the same, Accoutrements of black unvarnished leather.

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF  
ON THE FRONTIER.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Of nearly every race, tribe and caste in India and Central Asia, I believe. The Regiments of the Sind Irregular Horse are chiefly composed of Hindoostances, mostly Mussulmans, the agriculture and landholding classes of the districts around Delhie, Furruckabad, &c.

2 to 8.

None that I am aware of.

Every thing should be left to the discretion of the Regimental Commander.

9 to 11.

No oath is used that I am aware of. None has ever been used in the Sind Irregular Horse. I have a deep conviction that the use of any such oaths has most pernicious effect as explained in answers to former questions respecting other branches of the service.

12 to 16.

All such matters should be left wholly to the discretion of the Regimental Commanders. The practices of recognizing differences of tribes, castes, &c., as implying merit or demerit, or in any way effecting a man's position as a Soldier is most faulty. Men should be enlisted as Soldiers, and their merits estimated according to their power and willingness to perform their duties as Soldiers. Caste, &c., should never be alluded to or recognized in any way. If any man's peculiarities of caste, &c., be found to interfere with the performance of his duties as a Soldier, these peculiarities should be treated exactly as would be bodily effects or infirmities, and the man so defective or infirm should not be enlisted, or his services should be dispensed with as soon as such defects become apparent. Peculiarities of belief or of practice which interfere with Military duty should be considered and treated not as conferring privileges, but as signs of weakness just as would be physical disorders.

I have always acted thus with a large body of Native Indian Soldiers for some seventeen years past, and with the happiest effect. In this Corps all men's religions are respected, but none are allowed to be obtrusive, and an Officer might serve for many years in the Sind Horse without ever hearing even any mention of caste.

In these proceedings, I have always carried the public opinion of all classes of natives with me, depending on natural law, and on those feelings and attributes which are common to all mankind. I have never met with any opposition, but have on the contrary met with cordial



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

support from all classes, even when I positively prohibited all public displays, ceremonies, &c., on such occasions as the Mohurram and Dewallee.

17.

None ;—all such matters should be left wholly to Regimental Commanders.

18.

None.

19 to 23.

No ; these questions appear to me to be equivalent. Troop of Horse Artillery should not have a Lancaster Gun of ten tons weight or so attached to it.

24.

At the discretion of Regimental Commanders. In my opinion good English cutting swords and short double barrel Carbines are the best arms for all Native Indian Cavalry.

26.

This question seems to imply that all the Corps of the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Army are alike. But this is not the case. These Corps differ from each other in a great variety of particulars, and, in fact, they have only one peculiarity in common, which is, the horses being the property of the men.

The Sind Irregular Horse are certainly as well and efficiently dressed as the means allowed will permit, and their equipments have often been officially reported by various General Officers to be perfection.

But the pay of all our Irregular Cavalry is too low, and it would be true economy to increase that of the Sind Irregular Horse serving on the Frontier to 45 Rs. per man and Horse monthly, and that of Corps serving in the interior of India to 36 Rs. monthly for each private man and horse complete, with corresponding rates of pay for the higher grades. The style of dress and equipments should be left to the discretion of the Commanding Officers.

BRIGADIER GENERAL J. F. BRADFORD, COMMANDING  
MEERUT DIVISION.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 & 2.**

I am unable to enumerate all the tribes and castes of the Irregular Cavalry, including the Punjab Regiments, but there are Affghans, Punjabees, Sikhs, Hindostanee, Mahomedans, Ranghas, and Hindoos amongst these Troops, and they are chiefly drawn from the Punjaub, Rohilcund, the Dooab, and the Country west of Delhi.

**3.**

Doubtless low castes are excluded, Methars, Bhargees, Chumars, Buneahs and many others.

**4.**

I am not aware that any tribes or castes have been excluded or neglected that might be enlisted with advantage; it is understood that, neither Maharattas, or Rajpoots of Rajpootana, will enlist in our service, as they will not submit to discipline.

**6 to 8.**

No answers to Nos. 6, 7 & 8.

**9.**

The same as in the Regiments of the line.

**10.**

I am not sure, but I believe the oath has not been long used in the Irregular Cavalry.

**11.**

No, nor can I after what has occurred, conceive that any form of oath would be binding.

**12 & 13.**

There is this advantage in raising Corps from one particular part of the Country, and there only, that it would give the Civil Authorities greater power to check the enlisting of such Corps than they possess at present.

**14.**

Not homogeneous.

**15.**

Tribes or castes might be kept separate in Ressallahs, for the better arrangement of messing.

**16 to 18.**

In the Irregular Cavalry, Mahomedans predominate, except in the Punjab Corps, where Sikhs form the majority. It would be as well to have in each Regiment a couple of Ressallahs of Hindoos, as in the case of the Punjab Corps, a like number of Mahomedan Res-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

sallahs. Not that I have much faith, that this arrangement would prevent their combining against the State when inclined to do so.

**19 to 23.**

I do not recommend a Troop or Squadron forming a component part of a Corps of Irregular Cavalry; I cannot see any advantage to be gained by such a mixture.

**24.**

With Tulwar and Carbine.

**25.**

No reply.

**26.**

This seems to relate to Regular Cavalry. I am of opinion that if Regular Native Cavalry is kept up at all, it should be assimilated as much as possible to the European model; I do not therefore advocate any change of dress or equipment, beyond giving the Trooper a handy sword, fitted for a Native's use, which should be carried on a leathern Scabbard. The Sword should be made to resemble a Tulwar, and I believe can be made in England for less than in India.

---

BRIGADIER J. CHRISTIE, COMMANDING DINAPORE DIVISION.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1.**

Shaiks, Syeds, Moguls, Pathans, Rangurs, (Rajpoot Mussulmans,) Rohillas, Jats, Affghans, Rajpoots, Brahmins and Seikhs, a few.

**2.**

Hansie, Hissar, Delhi, Boolundshur, Meerut, Moradabad, Kurnaul, Barreilly, Agra, Bhurtpore, Furruckabad, Mynpoorie, Shahjehanpore, Putteallah, Loodiannah, and a few from about Jullundhur, and Hoseyarpore, and Cawnpore, and Lucknow, but only in a few Regiments.

**3.**

No; excepting very low caste men, who never ask to be entertained.

**4.**

It would be an advantage to a Regiment to have men from Rajpootana Proper, Bukaneer and Shaikwattie, and also Mahratta; but these men would not take service heretofore, as the pay was so very small, and consequently preferred the native service as there they have plenty of pickings besides their pay.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5. None ; the Omidwars come in numbers to their relations in the Regiment and as vacancies occur, are taken in.
6. None.
7. In my late Regiment, the 9th Irregular Cavalry, I always made a Recruit furnish two men in the Regiment to stand security for his respectability and good conduct before I entertained him.
8. An increase of pay and pension will bring a superior class of men into the ranks, as it is a man of good family must be very poor before he takes service on Rupees 7 a month, which is all a Bhargeer gets ; on the other hand, if he has got 2 or 300 Rupees, he finds it more profitable to trade with it, than purchasing an Assamee in a Regiment of Irregular Cavalry which are in most Regiments sold for 3 or even 400 each.
9. I don't remember.
10. The form was only introduced since 1856, after I had left the Irregular Cavalry.
11. Not having seen the oath, I cannot form an opinion.
12. No, a mixture is good.
13. Yes, without reference to district.
14. No.
15. Ressallahs of different tribes would be desirable, as you can always fit the one against the other in case of a row.
16. Equal as near as they can be procured, but Mussulmans will always preponderate.
17. The Commanding Officer alone.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

18.

Every man entertained, ought to be registered by the Local Authorities in the district from whence he comes, and security taken from the head man of the village, if possible.

19.

I do not consider this necessary.

20.

If it should be considered necessary, I would enlist specially for this purpose.

21.

In rear of the Regiments and in front of the European Officers' quarters.

22.

Most certainly, besides, in my opinion, a Regiment of Irregular Cavalry ought to be able to move at an hour's notice, and this they could not do, if they had to get Commissariat Stores, &c.

23.

With Sabres and Carbines, the same as the Native Troopers.

24.

With Tulwars and Carbines.

25.

No reply.

26.

No, I cannot; the dress and equipments of my old Regiment, the 9th Irregular Cavalry perfect, and I believe all the old Regiments are dressed much the same. In some Regiments of Irregular Cavalry, the dress of the *European* Officers is far too flash and expensive, I would recommend their being restricted to a plain soldier-like uniform, and as like their men's as possible.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL C. DAVIDSON,

*Resident Hyderabad Contingent Irregular Cavalry at Hyderabad.*

1.

All races, the only stipulation being that the soldier enlisted is "Ashraff," that is, born of a respectful father.

2.

Every district throughout India; principally from the Deccan, Rohilcund, Meywar and Delhi.

3.

None.

4.

No.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

On the first embodiment of the Nizam's Cavalry, now Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, we induced as many of the Chiefs in the Hyderabad service as possible to join our Standard with their followers. At present, we recruit almost entirely from the relations of the men residing with them in the lines. The supply is ample indeed, so much so, that in a very few days another Regiment from the "Oomedwars" (expectants) living on their relations could be raised. These men are all taught to ride from their earliest infancy, and are also made to have a more than usual pride in their horse and their sword.

6.

None.

7.

Only to ascertain the man is Ashraff, that one relative is in the service who is security for his good conduct, and that he can ride well and use his arms.

8.

None necessary.

9.

That laid down in the Articles of War.

10.

From the year 1856, when they were put under the Articles of War; before that, no oath was taken. They were governed by their own Military customs and tried by Panchayet.

11.

I think no oath is necessary; you cannot ensure a native's fidelity by administering one.

12.

Certainly not.

13.

Yes.

14.

This is much left to the Native Officers; there is often a complete "Bai Bunde," or clan in one troop, then again another is formed of different races and castes, and both have done excellent service.

15.

Mixed up together.

16.

One-third Hindoos and Seikhs, the rest from fighting classes of Mahomedans who have often violent antipathies to each other; thus you seldom find the Nagurs (converted Hindoos from Rajpootanah.)

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

the Meywattees, Shahjehanpore, Mhow and Delhi men fraternize except as being all Mahomedans.

17.

I have shown above—no agency is required

18.

None ;—their instrumentality is not required.

19.

I have given this subject now and for many years back much consideration, and I have come to the conclusion, a troop of Europeans should form a component part of each Corps of Irregular Cavalry. Without entering into the question further, I would beg to remark there is no doubt, a good Irregular Cavalry Corps is always desirous of emulating European Dragoons when in the field together, and are anxious to shew they can equal them in courage ; besides a well drilled troop of Europeans in each Irregular Corps, would tend to keep the Irregulars up to the mark in the way of smartness and prevent a laxity in discipline too common to Asiatic Soldiers.

20.

Should be selected from the European Cavalry Corps in the first instance. Time can alone tell whether it should be enlisted for and drafted altogether into the Irregular Cavalry Corps or form an integral part of the European Cavalry. I am inclined, to the latter, as conducive to a better state of discipline, and that the troop should be periodically relieved, but that the relief should occur at a minimum period of 5 years. Then again as being actually embodied in the Irregular Cavalry there would be altogether, and on all sides, more *esprit de corps*.

21.

Close at hand forming a portion of the lines of the Irregular Cavalry Corps.

22.

I do not see that it necessarily should do so ; of course an extra Commissariat Establishment will be necessary if no other European troops are cantoned at the same station.

23.

If forming a component part of the Irregular Cavalry Corps should be armed in a similar manner ; if not, should retain the arms of the Regiment of the European Cavalry to which they properly belong.

24.

Yes ; the front rank is now armed with spear, (lance) sword and one pistol, and the rear rank with carbine and sword. I think there should be only ten carbines to each troop ; the spear is a favorite

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

weapon with Irregular Cavalry, Horsemen, and sometimes they use it in a wonderful manner ; at all times among broken masses and in pursuit it is formidable.

The spears and swords of the Hyderabad Irregular Cavalry are excellent ; the fire arms generally bad. I would recommend the pistol to be all revolvers, and the carbines breach loading. I know it has been argued that we ought not to arm the native soldiers too well. I consider that our object should be to have a soldier as efficient as possible and to arm him badly is to do away with that efficiency ; besides furnishing him with, or allowing him to retain bad arms, implies a suspicion of his fidelity, which he will not be slow to understand, and it will be as well to banish such ideas from his mind.

It would put the Hyderabad Cavalry to a great expense if called upon to furnish themselves with these new fire-arms, I therefore think the Government should provide them ; it would be a handsome and graceful complement and reward for the men's late services in Central India, and would be appreciated by all ranks. It would be advantageous to Government as furnishing them with a body of Native Cavalry as war-like and in this manner as efficiently armed as any in India.

**25.**

No reply required.

**26.**

The dress and equipments should not be changed except so far as to suit the latter to the new fire-arms recommended in the preceding answer.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL R. H. GALL, 14TH KING'S LIGHT DRAGOONS.

**11.**

I would abolish the custom of administering oaths to recruits ; neither Mussulmans nor Hindoos would abstain from joining in a mutiny for their "oaths sake," and if the exaction of an oath does not do good, it does harm. The usual pretext for revolt in all armies has been the departure of their Government from the terms of an agreement, tacit or expressed, and the mutineer once made to believe, however falsely, that the Government has broken faith with him, easily persuades himself that he has received absolution.

**12.**

If the men enlisted for a Corps be of different religions and different castes, I think, it would be advisable to recruit each corps from a prescribed district, for there would always exist a certain want



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of sympathy between Regiments composed of men drawn from different Districts; this added to the estrangement produced between man and man, by differences of religion and castes, would lessen the probability of combinations for an unlawful object.

14.

No; let caste be no obstacle to enlistment in any corps.

15.

Mixed up together.

18.

A Register of the age, place of residence, parentage, caste, description, and date of enlistment of every recruit taken from a District, should be furnished by the Local Authorities to the Officer in charge of that District to be preserved in his Office.

A copy of the above should be forwarded with the recruit to the Head Quarters of the Corps in which he enlists, in the event of the man's desertion or absence without leave under suspicious circumstances, the District authorities would be warned—any enquiries that might be deemed necessary instituted by the Local Police. All casualties of soldiers should be notified to the head men of the villages from whence they had been taken as recruits through the Local Authorities.

19.

No, it would not be expedient to bring such a small body of Europeans into close proximity with Native Troopers. Familiarized with the weak points of the European Soldier's character and confiding in their numerical superiority, the natives might be disposed to take advantage of.

22.

I think not. The Commissariat arrangements for a single Troop or Squadron would be very simple and might be conducted by a Non-Commissioned Officer selected from the Squadron itself under the control of the Commissariat Officer of the District.

23 &amp; 24.

I would arm the Europeans with better fire-arms than those given to the Native Troopers. I have heard competent judges speak of the carbine brought out by Her Majesty's 8th Hussars in the highest terms provided it will stand wear, and on this subject there is a doubt; no better weapon appears to have been yet furnished to European Dragoons in India; it is however somewhat too heavy; a carbine should be light enough to be easily used with one hand. I would not give pistols to Dragoons or Irregular Cavalry; the present Dragoon Sabre if kept sharp is an excellent weapon, but I would substitute wooden scabbards for steel ones (the wood cased in leather.) At night the jingling

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of the steel scabbard betrays the position of a vedette as soon as he begins to patrol.

I would give Native Troopers a light carbine loading at the bore, but I would arm one Squadron in every Corps of Irregular Cavalry with spears, the shaft of bamboo, the common long hunting spear, called the boar spear. There is no weapon like this in pursuit.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE,  
PUNJAUB IRREGULAR CAVALRY.

1. Hindoostanees from round about Delhi (like the rest of the Irregular Cavalry,) Puthans of the Trans-Indus and Affghanistan Punjabee, Mohamedans, numerous Seikhs and a few Hill-men.
2. The Delhi Territory, Allighur, Boolandshuhur, Muzuffernugger, Rohilcund, the Cis and Trans-Indus, Affghanistan, the Punjaub generally, and the Cis-Sutlej.
3. See our answer No. 3, on the Recruiting and Composition of Infantry Corps in the Punjaub with letter No. 3, of 1st July 1858.
4. See answer No. 4, in the Punjaub Infantry Paper, with letter No. 3, of 1st July 1858.
5. See answer 5, in ditto.
6. See answer 6, in ditto.
7. See answer 7, in ditto.
8. See answer No. 8, in the Punjaub Infantry Paper, with letter No. 3, of 1st July 1858.
9. See answers Nos. 9 and 10, in ditto.
10. See No. 9.
11. See answer No. 11, in ditto.
- 12 & 13. See answers Nos. 14 to 15, of ditto.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The same principles are equally applicable to the Irregular Cavalry; and we have only to add here, that we do not put forward our views of counterpoising one race of the Natives with another as any panacea, for *all* the evils of the old Army. No *one* remedy, no *one* principle of reform or organization, will meet the race, and to put any one forward as a charm for ruling Native Troops would only be empirical. We want a thorough revision of all details and earnest attention to *all* the defects that have been revealed in the mutiny, amongst those defects unquestionably the worst, and the one which operated most fatally against us, was the brotherhood or homogeneity of the Bengal Army, and for that particular defect the remedy is counterpoise.

*First*,—the great counterpoise of European, and *secondly*, that of various Native races. Had the old Bengal Army had all the other remedies applied to it ten years ago, which we have recommended in these papers for the improvement of its discipline, staff, &c., &c., it would doubtless have been a better Army, but if its brotherhood had been left unbroken, unchecked by any adequate European force, and in the unsuspected possession of our Magazines, Posts and Artillery, it would still have broken bounds like water at this one weak point whenever its common prejudices were violently assailed.

14.

We would have one or two homogeneous as exceptions, for the sake of variety of system (See the question discussed in our Punjaub Infantry Paper, answer No. 16, with letter No. 3, of 1st July 1858.)

15.

Both systems. (See answer No. 17, of the above quoted paper.)

16.

As a rule for the Army at large, we are decidedly in favor of the Provincial system, advocated in answer No. 18 of the Bengal Infantry Paper, (with letter No. 3, of 1st July 1858), but with reference to the peculiar nature of the Punjaub Frontier service, we would advocate in the Punjaub Irregular Cavalry the following proportion of races :—

2 Mahomedans.

2 Seikhs.

2 Hindoostanees.

17.

No change in the present system seems required.

18.

All that is required is to enforce the existing Orders. (See answer No. 6, in the Infantry Paper for Bengal, with letter No. 3 of 1st July 1858.)

19.

No, certainly not ; nor of any other Cavalry Regiments in India. The tendency would be to make the Native Dragoons, so as to correspond with the Europeans, who would naturally become the model for the whole corps. It is one of the blessings of this crisis that it affords an opportunity of getting rid of the Regular Native Cavalry which we consider to have been a total misapplication of the European system, a branch of the old Army which was at once costly and inefficient, and it would be throwing away all past lessons now deliberately to adopt a plan which would only give us Native Dragoons again, but rob us of our Irregulars. The experiment as tried by Sir S. Cotton at Peshawur, was a very valuable one, for it made a few Europeans go a long way, at a dangerous time, but the Natives associated with them are thorough Dragoons than which nothing can be more foreign to the Asiatic genius.

20.

See No. 19.

21.

See No. 19.

22.

Yes.

23.

If Europeans must be associated in the Cavalry with Native Troopers, they should have the same weapons as other European Cavalry in India.

24.

Privates with sword and carbine ; Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers with sword and pistol. Picked Duffadars and Troopers at the discretion of the Commanding Officer might carry spears.

25.

No reply required.

26.

The Punjab Irregular Cavalry are very sensibly dressed and equipped in a Native "Chupeen" with "Kummerbund" and Turband "Pijamah" and boots; sword and carbines for Privates, and pistols and swords for Officers. This requires no alteration. The saddles, however, in some cases require changing, at present some of the men have got "Charjamahs," which are excessively hot and give the horses sore backs, a light "Kathee" admitting of a Native seat should in these instances be substituted. In the Irregular Cavalry generally, especially in Hindoostan, where rough and ready work is seldom seen, the tendency is to polish, and polish the Irregulars into Regulars. Few European Officers have the free spirit of the Irregular; and they

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

lighten every thing in the Regiment, discipline and clothes, year by year. There is one relic of olden times which it is to be hoped will now be positively forbidden by Government, the steel scabbard of the Regulars which blunts the sword, loads the horse, and by clatter and glitter betrays every movement.

---

CAPTAIN W. D. ABBOTT, COMMANDING 3RD CAVALRY, HYDERABAD  
CONTINGENT.

1.

The Cavalry Regiments are composed chiefly of Mahomedans. There is a small proportion of the better castes of Hindoos among them. In my own Regiment (the 3rd Cavalry,) the proportion of Hindoos, is very small, there being only thirty-two (32) Hindoos in the Regiment, including Commissioned, Non-Commissioned and men in the ranks. There are 546 Mahomedans and nearly all the native Officers are Mahomedans. There is rather a larger proportion of Hindoos, I believe, in the other three Regiments, but in them also, the great bulk of the Regiment are Mahomedans, Syuds, Pâthans, Moguls, Sheiks, and among the Hindoos, Brahmins, Rajpoots, Mahrattas, and a few Sheiks.

2.

From the Upper Districts in Hindoostan, the neighbourhood of Cawnpore, Delhie, Shahjehanpore, Lucknow, &c., a considerable number are Deccan men. The greater proportion, however, in this Regiment (and the remark applies nearly equally to the other Regiments,) are Hindoostan men. The exact proportion in this Regiment is 331 (Commissioned, Non-Commissioned and men in the Ranks,) north of the River Nerbudda, and 247 south of the Nerbudda, in the latter are included the sons of a great number of Hindoostan men, who have married, and had sons born to them in the Deccan.

3.

The practice of the service, in accordance with the spirit of the Regulations enjoined by the late Colonel John Sutherland, which for many years past have been a guide to us, (I speak from an experience of upwards of 20 years' service with this Cavalry), has certainly been to entertain the better caste men and to exclude those who were not a person of inferior caste, or regarding whose birth any unfavorable circumstances existed as to legitimacy or the particular employment or occupation in life his parents pursued) has certainly been looked to, and has appeared to me to have weight and importance in the eyes of the men. By this, I mean, that as in the great majority of cases, Silladars have the nomination of their own Bargheers they

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

in selecting them look to a man's respectable birth, and that the chances have been against a man who is not of respectable birth ("Ashraff") obtaining service, though physically fit; no particular restrictions have existed as to race, that is to say, Mahomedans of different sects and classes, Maharattas, Rajpoots, Sheiks, were all freely entertained, provided they were respectable and decently born, that is, of parents who had not been engaged in any menial capacity, &c.

4.

I am not aware of any.

5.

The service has been so popular hitherto, that no necessity has ever existed for sending parties out for the purpose of recruiting; such men in the service as have connections in Hindoostan often bring them down with them, when they return from visiting their homes on furlough. The same with regard to the Deccan men, they either bring their own connexions, "baibunds," who they consider likely to be approved of by the Officer Commanding the Regiment.

6.

None whatever before the Local Authorities of Districts.

7.

According to the Regulations of the service, Silladars are required "to give written security for the good conduct of the Bargheers they entertain," but my impression is that the Regulation is almost a dead letter.

8.

I cannot suggest any relatively to races, tribes or castes. The Seikhs are now so extensively employed; Government might not consider it advisable to introduce any large number of them into our Cavalry; at present there are very few more in the 1st Cavalry than any other Regiment, my impression of their Character (generally) is that they are *hardy and brave*, but mean, greedy and not trustworthy. There is a colony of Seikhs in the Deccan, at Nandair on the Godavery; but they are a very inferior class to the Punjab Seikhs. I had some 50 or 60 sent to me when I commanded the 1st Cavalry as Recruits, and could find very few fit for the service. Seikhs have a strong leaning towards Hindoos and hold together with them very much, and 2 Seikhs behaved with exemplary fidelity during the disaffection in the 1st Cavalry, in June 1857. There is one point in connection with recruiting which I would strongly urge on Government, and that is the re-introduction of the system of substitutes ("Khidmuleawar") which existed for a great number of years in the service, and was abolished by Lord Dalhousie on the re-organization of the contingent. It is the system which gives to the Commanding Officers the power to entertain men to

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

serve in the *ranks* as a temporary measure in place of those who are too young to serve, or those who are absent on leave. It is exercised in this manner ; suppose a man old and worn out, or who has fallen into ill health, or who from an accident or any other cause, wishes to retire, but is unwilling to do so, because the pension allowed by Government, is not sufficient for his wants. He has perhaps a son, but the son is too young to serve. The Commandant can entertain the son, allowing him to provide an efficient substitute to serve in his stead until he himself is of a proper age. The man retires, and has the satisfaction of feeling that his retirement is not altogether lost to him, as he has made way for his son, and the substitute is on all occasions willing of his own accord, to allot some portion of his pay (3 or 4 Rs. probably) to assist in the maintenance of the family. A man may suddenly die leaving a young family—one of the sons may be entertained, giving a substitute until he is fit to serve, and the substitute will enter into an arrangement with the family to allow 3 or 4 Rs. a month towards their subsistence. These men are often very desirous (on urgent private affairs) to obtain leave when it is not their turn, and the requirement of Government cannot well dispense with their services ; you can oblige good men by permitting them to take leave, providing a substitute, so that Government service does not suffer. I have shewn the manner in which the power is exercised. The advantages are these : in the first place, it is most popular among the men, and they would, I feel sure, consider its re-introduction as a *great* boon, and it would serve to attach them still more to the service, it is at the same time advantageous to Government. It has the effect of keeping a much larger number of young men attached (as it were) to the Regiment, and ready at any moment to take service. In fact, it almost keeps up the material for another Regiment. It enables a Commandant to satisfy himself *fully* of the qualification and character of a man before he is entertained permanently. It enables a Commandant to exercise his discretion in assisting the families of deserving men, by entertaining one of the boys who gives a substitute until he is fit to serve. It is regarded by the men as an especial mark of distinction in the event of a Native Officer dying, if the Commandant should at once entertain his son, (probably a boy) and allow him to provide a substitute until he is himself fit to serve. The time a man serves as a substitute is a *probationary* term, and he is perforce brought to exercise a greater control over himself, and an attention to his duties, than he could possibly be brought to do if he was permanently entertained, knowing that his eventual appointment to the service depends entirely on his good conduct. Thus attention to his duties and a desire to improve himself becomes the ground work of his service.

9.

Hitherto it has not been customary to swear in Recruits on their entering the Ranks, it has only on one occasion been done in this Regi-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ment, when Captain Mayne commanded the Regiment, during the late Major Orr's absence on Medical Certificate. The form of oath then administered was, I am informed, the same as that used in Infantry Regiments. No form is given in our Cavalry Regulation.

10.

This is answered in my reply given to the former question (No 9.)

11.

No.

12.

I do not consider this advisable.

13.

In my opinion without reference to districts.

14.

I do not consider this would be advisable.

15.

A Ressalah in our Cavalry means a whole Regiment, but I believe it is here intended to mean Squadron or Troop. I conclude the object in keeping each class, or caste, in separate bodies or Troops would be to play off one party against the other in the event of any disaffection arising, whatever tendency a particular class might have, (either Mahomedans, Hindoos, or Seikhs): it would be pretty generally felt whether they were all collected in one Troop or Squadron, or dispersed through the Regiment, it would be quite sufficient their being in the same Regiment, they would find no difficulty in organizing any plans or communicating them to each other. I do not think that one party would be a more effectual check on the other, from each party being kept in separate Troops, whereas on the other hand, supposing one party to be loyal and the other the reverse, much valuable assistance to a Commanding Officer and information might be afforded from the opportunities, the well disposed men would have, of discovering plans, and taking measures, to counteract them, and as I have before said, no difficulty would be experienced by either party in meeting, or communicating with each other. In my opinion the castes should be mixed up.

16.

I certainly think it would be advisable in raising *new* Regiments to have certain proportions of Mahomedans., Rajpoots, Seikhs, Maharrattas. But it would be difficult, and perhaps not advisable to introduce any alteration in our Regiments as they at present stand, and the gradual introduction of such a system would be difficult and a work of great time, because we allow Silladars the right of selecting their



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

own Bargheera, subject to the approval of the Commanding Officer, and I have already shewn that the greater proportion (indeed nearly the whole Regiment) are Mahomedans.

17.

My reply to question No. 5 shews that no particular agency is required to obtain recruits for this Cavalry.

18.

This is a subject I never considered and to which I do not feel myself competent to give a reply. No doubt, if such a system could be organized, that Recruits should be drawn from that particular class of persons, who have resided in certain villages or towns, for considerable periods or who are landholders and householders, and have been for many years past (as the case with many of our men) and that a recruit offering himself for service, or a man bringing his son, nephew, or other relation for his service should be called on to furnish the security of this particular class of people, for the fidelity of the recruit, it would be a great additional security for his good behaviour and would greatly extend the influence of Government over such districts.

19.

They would of course be invaluable in the Field; but I do not consider it advisable that a Troop or Squadron of Europeans should form a component part of a Regiment. But I cannot conceive a more efficient arrangement both for security in Cantonments and perfect efficiency in the Field, than if Government instead of making a Squadron of Europeans a component part of a Regiment were to attach to each Regiment 4 Horse Guns (2 nine Pounder and 2 Howitzers) with a sufficient number of Europeans to work them, on the same footing as Horse Artillery, that is gunners mounted, and Detachments. I cannot conceive a more efficient and valuable arrangement. With such an addition to my Regiment, I should feel the most perfect confidence under any circumstances in which I might be placed. In the Field the Detachments used at the proper moment as Cavalry, would fulfil all the advantages which could be hoped for if a Troop of European Cavalry formed a component part of the Regiment *without* being incorporated with the Regiment, which would for some reasons be certainly objectionable. The men of the Regiment and the Europeans though separated in a measure (in all that is essential) would become attached to each other from association in time of service, and would learn to respect and trust each other, while the objectionable results which might take place from their being in the same Regiment and which present themselves to my idea (as regards the dislike natives would have to the Europeans forming actually part of their Regiment, and residing in their Lines, the wound to their pride and *esprit de corps*, the umbrage they might take at thinking they were not trusted,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

would all be avoided should any discontent at any time exist likely to lead to the manifestation of mutinous spirit, the presence of such a body of Europeans with guns) would be an immediate and most effectual check on it, and on service I cannot *sufficiently* express the conviction I have of the important service such a body of Troops could render, the guns forming as it were part of the Regiment and under the order of the Commandant as if there were a Troop or Squadron of the Regiment. I know of no combination or arrangement by which so small a body of Europeans could be made so truly serviceable, or as an isolated body, so secure. I would beg most strongly to recommend it.

20.

Let Government raise them in any manner they think most advisable, but once raised, they should, I think, be permanently attached to the Regiment.

21.

The situation would depend so much on the nature of the ground and the plan of Cantonments, but I would have them separate from the Cavalry, but sufficiently near to be of immediate use if required, and the lines so laid out and arranged, as to be easily capable of defence.

22.

No, I do not think so. In my opinion the arrangements might easily be so made as to enable them to move almost as rapidly as our Cavalry do now; of course the Commissariat arrangements, could not be so complete on forced marches as when in Cantonments, but sufficiently so for all necessary purposes.

23.

The reply to this is contained in my answer to question No. 19.

24.

Yes. In carbines, pistols and swords. The carbine in use is an exceedingly defective weapon very limited in range and precision of aim uncertain and difficult. The double barrelled carbine in use in the Scinde horse is an infinitely superior weapon, and I most strongly recommend its introduction into our Cavalry. The pistol is the old horse pistol, a most inferior weapon and I most strongly recommend a double barrelled pistol in place of it. I have heard revolvers spoken of, but I am *decidedly* averse to their introduction, and I speak from considerable experience of the weapon. The bore is too *small*, the intricacy of a revolver would puzzle natives, and it would be dangerous to entrust them with them, the loading on horse back is very difficult, and the aim exceedingly difficult to acquire. The carbines and pistols should be of the same bore, a great number of our men's swords are extremely bad, a recruit endeavours to obtain his arms (which he is obliged to provide when he is entertained) at as low a cost as possible,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

if he has the choice of two swords, one at 10 and the other at 5 Rs., he will take the 5 Rs. one. The greater number of the swords in this regiment are mere rubbish, being considerably shorter than even an Infantry Regulation sword, and *quite unsuited* for Cavalry. It is extremely difficult to introduce improvements in these respects. The men object in every possible way, because it entails a little extra expense on them. The Commanding Officer succeeded in introducing in the 2nd Regiment Cavalry, English Light Cavalry sabres, and it has added greatly to the efficiency of the regiment, the men declare they never had such swords, and much prefer them (now that they have got them) to any others. With regard to my remarks on the subject of "arms" I am of opinion that the men could not certainly be called on to change their pistols and carbines, but Government might be willing (in consideration of the good services performed in the late campaign) to assist them, that is take the arms they now have and present them with the carbines and pistols, I recommend in lieu of them. The swords, I think, could be changed, the price of the English Cavalry sabres (such as they have in the 2nd Regiment) is not more than 10 or 12 Hyderabad Rupees. They are first rate weapons, and if every man sold the native sword he now has, he would be put to very little expense in the difference between the prices of the two and the degree of efficiency effected would, I consider, be very great. It is an error to suppose that the men generally prefer the native sword, a few, a very few; nay many would say they do to avoid paying a few extra rupees, nearly every Native Officer and those to whom money is of less importance, all of them use English sabres and the generality of swords in this Regiment (short native swords picked up in the bazar for 5 or 6 Rs.) are most inferior and useless weapons for Cavalry. The price of the "Scinde Horse Carbines" is I hear Co.'s Rs. 40. Our men's carbines cost them 29 or 30 Hy. Rs. If an order for pistols and carbines such as I recommend were given to a respectable gun-maker in England, so large a number would no doubt be obtained at a much lower rate about 250 carbines, and 250 pistols would be required for a Regiment.

25.

No reply required.

26.

The only alteration I would make in the equipment, would be to introduce a chain rein and head-stall. Every Cavalry Officer is aware of the immense importance, indeed the actual necessity for this on service. The cost would be small about 3 Rs. a man, I would not make any alteration in the bit of reins as they are at present, merely add a chain, head-stall and rein.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER W. HILL,

*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Irregular Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent.*

1. The Irregular Cavalry of the Hyderabad Contingent is composed chiefly of Moslems, such as Moguls, Pathans, Shaikhs, Synds, and a few Beloochees ; Hindoos form a very small portion of this Cavalry, and a very few Seikhs.
2. Many men are drawn from the Deccan, though there are many from Hindoostan, about Shahjehanpore, Delhie and Lucknow.
3. None have been excluded from entering the ranks of the Irregular Cavalry either by regulations or by practice.
4. The Hindoos have been much neglected in this Cavalry. In the 2nd Cavalry now at Bolaram, there are only 70 Hindoos in the whole Regiment of 500 sabres. The proportion of Hindoos is about the same in the other three Regiments of Cavalry.  
  
As the inhabitants of the Hyderabad country are chiefly Mahomedan, the proportion of Moslems in this Cavalry ought at once to be gradually diminished, and more Hindoos entertained, as the Mahomedan influence is by far too great to prevent combination of the worst kind. The Seikhs also have been much neglected ; as Commandants of Cavalry have not been partial to this race, but they should no longer be so sparingly enlisted.
5. No particular agency is employed for obtaining Recruits, there has always been an abundant supply of men ready for enlistment, so that no difficulty whatever has been experienced in recruiting.
6. No form is observed in enlisting recruits ; when a man offers himself for service, he is first examined by the Medical Officer of the Regiment, and if he is healthy, and is otherwise physically fit for the Cavalry, the Commanding Officer of the Regiment Registers his name as a Soldier.
7. No precaution is taken when enlisting men, further than the Commanding Officer of the Regiment satisfying himself that the Candidate is in every way fit for a Cavalry Soldier.
8. An alteration has already been made in our recruiting for the Cavalry Corps of the Hyderabad Contingent, by restricting enlistments

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

to men south of the Nerbudda, which affords an ample field for recruiting for the Cavalry. No other alteration is required.

9.

The oath is the same as that administered to the Native Army.

10.

Only since March 1856, when the Cavalry were brought under the Articles of War by the Orders of Government.

11.

I would recommend an addition to the present oath, as follows, viz., that the Troops of the Hyderabad Contingent are, if necessary, to be employed on general service in all the Provinces under British Rule, as well as beyond those limits, should the exigencies of the service require it.

They should be fully explained to every man in the Irregular Cavalry in future.

12.

There is no necessity for this, and they are not at present raised in any particular district.

13.

They should be recruited, as at present, from all parts of the Deccan, and the surrounding country, south of the Nerbudda.

14.

Certainly not.

15.

Most assuredly the Corps of Irregular Cavalry should be composed of a mixture of races, and castes, as being the best means of securing their fidelity. An instance of the advantage accruing from this, occurred in the mutiny of the first Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent at Aurungabad, last year. There were not more than 30 Seikhs in the Corps; and the two brothers, sons of a Seikh Jemadar in the Regiment were the first to give intimation to the Commanding Officer of the mutiny of the Corps, and all through it these brothers were exposed to much danger from the men of the Regiment in consequence of their fidelity. I am of opinion that it would be very beneficial if one or two Troops in each Cavalry Regiment were composed of the same tribe. In the 3rd Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, one Troop is entirely composed of Nagars. These Nagars are descendants of a Hindoo tribe called Marwars in the Punjaub, who were proselyted to the Mahomedan faith. This Troop with its Ressaldar and Native Officers of the same race, exercises a very wholesome influence in the Regiment.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**16.**

The Mahomedan race is the most numerous throughout His Highness the Nazim's dominions, and the Mahomedan influence in the Hyderabad country is consequently very great. I would recommend the proportion of this race in the Hyderabad Cavalry, should be much more limited than at present; and with the mixture of other races throughout the Regiments, the danger of a combination for evil will be greatly diminished.

**17.**

No agency whatever is required.

**18.**

None are required.

**19.**

I would not recommend it.

**20 to 23.**

As I do not recommend any portion of the Irregular Cavalry to have Europeans attached to it, I need not give replies to these four questions.

**24.**

At present the Irregular Cavalry is armed as follows:—

All Native Officers have swords and pistols, Troopers, one-half lance, sword and pistol; the other half carbine and sword. The spear is a weapon which the Hyderabad Cavalry have had a peculiar fancy for, ever since they were organized, about forty years ago, and there is no doubt that they have earned for themselves a great reputation in the Deccan, as the Cavalry are much feared for their prowess in the use of the spear. The fire arms, both carbines and pistols are very bad indeed, from long use, and they are quite worn out. I would recommend an improvement in their arms as follows:—

Every man should be armed with the spear and sword; with the exception of ten men per troop, who should have the breach loading carbines in lieu of the spear, and every man who is not armed with a carbine should have a Colt's revolver pistol.

The above would, I think, make the Hyderabad Cavalry as perfect as it is possible for Native Cavalry to be.

**25.**

No reply is required.

**26.**

I am of opinion that the present dress (bottle green Ulkalic) and equipments, are very suitable for the Irregular Cavalry, and I do not think they need any improvement.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

MAJOR W. A. ORR,

*Commanding 1st Company Artillery, and late Commanding  
Field Force Hyderabad Contingent, serving in  
Central India.*

1. Mahomedans,—Rajpoots and Seikhs, of whom the former form the great majority.
2. The Mahomedans, (Pathans) were formerly principally drawn from Hindoostan, the neighbourhood of Bareilly, Shahjehanpore, and the Districts around Delhi; but of late years their sons and relations, born within the Deccan, have been entertained and designated Deccan men. The Rajpoots are partly from Rajpootana and partly descendants of former settlers, towards the south and within the Deccan. The same remark applies to the Seikhs.
3. But the regulations and general practice of the service, excluded all men who were not considered "Bullamanus" or well born. Individuals or persons who had served as menials were also carefully excluded. The object being of course to keep up a high standard of feeling and self respect amongst the men. This exclusiveness has not of late years been so strictly adhered to, and many men have got into the service who would not formerly have been entertained.
4. No, I am aware of none, except perhaps Maharattas. There appears to have been either a prejudice against this particular class, or it may be that they themselves have a dislike to our service, but certainly from some unexplained cause very few Maharattas have ever found service in the Hyderabad Contingent. I may mention that on the first raising of the body of Cavalry now known as the Hyderabad, it was designated the "Pathan Horse," and none but individuals of that class and sect, were ever allowed to be entertained.
5. None whatever, but the name and reputation of the service. For every vacancy there are always a score of candidates ready to offer themselves, the sons and relations of men and Officers in the Corps. In a Silladary service like this, the right of appointing a Bargheer or rider, rests with the Silladar, his selection subject of course to the approval of the Commandant. This right of nomination is naturally held in much regard by Silladars, as affording the means of providing for their relations and friends, but it has of late years, I think, unfortunately been much interfered with by Commanding Officers and been consequently the cause of considerable discontent.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

6.

None whatever that I am aware of ; the name of himself and father, age, height and place of birth, being of course entered in the General Register Book of the Regiment into which the recruit is admitted.

7.

The recruit is obliged to furnish the security of a near relative, who must also be in the service, for his good conduct, and he is further required to furnish a certificate of the respectability as well as legitimacy of his birth, and a written agreement that he shall conform to all such rules and regulations as may then be existing, or may thereafter be established, for the discipline and good conduct of the service.

8.

I do not think any alterations are required. The Old Regulations are admirable on this point if strictly carried out in practice by Commandants.

9.

No oath is administered to the recruit on his entering the service. I have mentioned above what is required of the candidate before being entertained.

11.

I think it advisable that every man on being enlisted should be sworn in like recruits in all other branches of the service, and take the like oath.

12.

I do not see any reason for changing the present system of recruiting. It appears to me to work well, and the fact of the recruits being, as they are now, drawn from districts so widely separated and composed of different castes and classes, prevents any thing like a common bond of union and consequent risk of combination.

13.

This question is answered above.

14.

I certainly think not ; a mixture of races and castes must have the effect of keeping alive a feeling of emulation amongst the men, as well as affording a wider field of selection in recruiting.

15.

For the reasons stated above, I think the different Resselahs should be composed of men of all sects, creeds, and castes without any distinction.

16.

A good proportion of each Corps of the Hyderabad Cavalry, bearing in mind its original composition, should I think be Mahome-



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

dan, or Pathan, I should then give the preference to Rajpoots, Maharattas, or well born Hindoos, and lastly, fill up the Corps with Seikhs. Perhaps the following would be a good proportion.

2-5th. Mahomedan and Pathan.

2-5th. Rajpoots, Maharattas or other Hindoos.

1-5th. Seikhs.

17.

There could not, I think, have been a better mode of procuring recruits than the old plan of permitting men going on leave or furlough to furnish a substitute called "Kidmut Ewzee." By this means there was always a large body of well trained and well drilled young lads, all of them with fathers or relations in the Regiment attached to the different Corps, and as vacancies occurred, they afforded an ample field from which efficient recruits could be selected.

18.

I am not aware that any precautions are necessary under the existing mode of recruiting; should any change be made in this respect, it would then be requisite to take measures for guarding against the admission of improper persons.

19.

I would deprecate such being done; I consider any measure of this nature would tend to destroy the high spirit, and *esprit* which now happily distinguishes the Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent. But men and Officers would naturally consider that such European Force was associated with them for coercive purposes, and it would never be regarded with a real comrade feeling. A feeling of distrust and jealousy, would be created, which would undoubtedly have a pernicious effect on both the discipline of the Regiment and its efficiency in the field.

20.

In the event of its being determined that an European Force shall compose a portion of each Corps, I think it advisable that they should be enlisted and incorporated as an integral part of the Regiment. In no other way could the men be ever induced to feel themselves *identified* with the Corps, with its honor, its reputation and its good name.

21.

They should be separated entirely from the native portion of the lines. There would be many elements of discord between men so circumstanced, and I fear it would be vain to expect harmony between well born and high caste natives, and even the very best behaved of our European Soldiery, if brought in close contact.

22.

It would be impossible to answer this question without entering very largely into the nature and composition of the Cavalry service. No Commissariat is attached to Corps in the Contingent. Each Re-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

giment has its own Regimental Bazar, and in the event of the Corps taking the field, or going on service, it is dependant on its own Bazar alone, much of the efficiency of these Corps of Cavalry is owing to the admirable system of Silladars being compelled to keep up a Tattoo and Syce between every two horses. This system enables the men to move with great rapidity and with little inconvenience, for after even a forced march, the Tattoo is very nearly as soon up as the Corps, the men get their own little wants supplied, and the horses are groomed, fed, and attended to.

**23.**

I would strongly advise all European Troops being furnished with the best description of Arms procurable.

**24.**

I think of late years the spear, the fittest weapon I know in the hands of a native has been too much discarded. It has become the practice to introduce in lieu of the spear or lance, with sword and pistol, a sword and carbine alone. I would recommend the return to the general use of the spear, giving carbines only to a certain number of men per Troop and Squadron. I do not think after late events and the experience of the last year, that it would be advisable to give any Native Troops Arms of a better description than the common percussion pistol or carbine, a sword and lance.

**25.**

No reply required.

**26.**

The dress and equipment I consider quite perfect for Irregular Cavalry. It consists of a dark green cloth, Ulkalic or Tunic. Red Mundeel or Puggree, white Pantaloons and long Jack Boots, with black patent leather belts; altogether a most efficient and Soldier-like dress, and has the additional advantage of being much liked by the men themselves.

**A Copy word for word, from the paper "I gave in to Lord Canning  
(of which I kept a transcript) in July or August 1857.**

Our Regular Cavalry must be European. The light active men, and bold riders of light weight, that are employed in many of the trades of England; as example, Butcher's boys, Ostlers, Postillions and such like, would answer well for the small Indian horse.

These Regiments need not be more than 2 Squadrons each, or four Troops strong of 80 Sabres each. One Squadron of Natives of this country, well mixed in regard to religious creeds and castes might form a portion of each Regiment. *No Brahmins* amongst them.

*Mounted Hottentots* from the Cape would answer better, (to be eventually, when worn out) colonized in Assam.

*Arms.*—To be trained to use the Enfield Carbines (or Carbine that loads at the breech,) with ball at a canter and gallop, as I have trained the 2nd Irregular Cavalry to do, so that the men could break a bottle with a single bullet in full career at from 30 to 50 paces distance.

This would be a most formidable arm, as was shown in the instance of Captain Merrywether of the Sind horse on that Frontier when, with a small party of that Corps, he annihilated a tribe of plundering Jookranees by the use of his improved Carbine. The Troopers are also to have a Colt's revolver pistol, a *proved* cut and thrust sword, and they must be taught to fence; *for the point, and how to give it*, is a murderous mode of using the sword against Native Horsemen.

(Signed) J. B. HEARSEY,  
Major General.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K. C. B.,  
Colonel of the old 6th Bengal Light Cavalry.

BARRACKPORE, 3rd December 1858.

Our Cavalry, Regulars must be Europeans; composed of the light active men, and bold hard riders of light weights, that are employed in many of the trades, &c., in England; such as Butcher boys, Ostlers, Postillions, &c., and such like, these would answer well for the small Indian Horses.

10 *Regiments.*—These Regiments need not be more than two Squadrons or four Troops strong, of 80 Sabres each.

*European Officers.*

1 Colonel,  
 1 Lieutenant Colonel,  
 1 Major,  
 4 Captains,  
 4 Lieutenants,  
 4 Cornets,  
 1 Adjutant, a Subaltern,  
 1 Quarter Master, a Subaltern,

These two last in excess of the 4 Lieutenants and 4 Cornets, as they must always remain with the Head-Quarters of the Regiment, and cannot be detached with a Troop or Squadron on distant commands.

or any other part of India where  
 them.

*If Natives must be enrolled*, one Squadron of two Troops or 160 Sabres, might be attached as auxiliaries; to be officered as the European Squadrons. These Native Squadrons must be well mixed in regard to religious creeds. No Brahmins amongst them. Mostly Juths, Affghans, or Mooltanee Mahomedaris, Rajpoot, and Rangers. The best men for these auxiliary Squadrons would be Hottentots from the Cape. These Hottentots when worn out to form Military Colonies in Assam, waste lands capable of cultivation can be made over to

The Enfield Carbine, revolver, to load at the breech, and a Colt's revolver, a 5 barrelled pistol, a straight cut and thrust sword, basket hilt with ramrod back of the best steel, such as are turned out by Wilkinson; not cold iron, that the Native tulwars will cut through.

The men to be trained to use the revolving, breech loading Carbines at full gallop, and at a canter to fire at a bottle placed on the ground in front of a butt, with ball at 30 paces, passing it at that distance; until perfect in the use of that destructive arm.

In the same manner to practice with the Colt's revolver pistol at 15 paces from the bottle. These arms to be constructed as light as possible with reference to strength. All portions of the lock, or parts of the pistol or carbine when dismounted from the stock to be numbered 1, 2, 3, and so on. The same number is to be engraved on the lock plate and portions of the carbines and pistols. The screws also to be numbered on their heads, and the screw holes on the plate of the lock or elsewhere, so that the men may not destroy the worms of the screws or screw holes, by attempting to force the wrong screws into them, or by changing the screws. They must be taught by a Serjeant Armourer to take the locks and portions of their fire arms to pieces, to clean them and put them together without injuring them; *i e.*, set them up; this must be a most essential part of their drill. The bore of the carbine and pistol must be the same. The pouch for their ammunition to be made slide on a belt fastened round their waist (the cloak belt will answer,) so that the rider may not have to fumble behind his back for his ammunition.

The sword exercise most to be taught, is to *give the point with effect*, to guard the drawing cuts of the Natives at the wrist and sword arm, and at *the bridle, and bridle Arm*. The Natives do not know how to parry the point, or are very awkward at it.

When Major General Sleigh was Inspector of Cavalry in India in 1844-45, he looked at the Regiment I then commanded, the 2nd Irregular Horse at Neemuch, and expressed himself much pleased at my ball practice from matchlock, and capped carbines, at a gallop and at a hand canter. The men fired at a bottle on the ground in front of a butt; they broke

18 out of 30, at 30 yards distance. I had also practised my men to the use of their spears and swords on horseback in a hand canter and at a gallop, and in single combat. I always practised with them myself.

The use of the improved Carbine, with which the Sind horse were armed by Colonel Jacob was shewn in the instance of Captain Merrywether of that Corps, when, with a small party of his men, he annihilated a tribe of Jookranee, who were plundering the Sind Frontier, by the use of this formidable weapon; and also when a portion of that Regiment, under the command of Captain Malcolm at the battle of Goojerat in the Punjab, attacked the Affghan horse, they fired at career within 20 yards; almost all the boldest and leading Affghan chiefs and horsemen were shot: and then throwing their Carbines, which were fastened by a spring sling to their shoulder belts, they seized the swords, suspended to their wrists, and dashed into the midst of the Affghans and being supported by the 16th Lancers, drove them off the field with but little loss to themselves or to the Lancers.

The men thus armed made excellent skirmishers in jungles, and on hills, on foot, which is also a great consideration; they can make a forced march, and seize a pass or important position, and hold it until supported.

*Clothing.*—The clothing should be so loose that the men may have free use of their limbs.

No tight jackets—copy the Zouave horseman's dress of Algiers; it is well adapted to this country. A good fez and a white turban round it (the white color refracts the rays of the sun, dark colors absorb them,) is the best protective from a sunstroke, or the stroke of a Sabre. The fez or cap may be cotton, wadded *inside*, and have ventilator holes around it near the top to keep the head cool: all this is easily packed when required to be so, or if the men are allowed an extra turban or head dress, to take with them. The white turban can be occasionally washed.

*Trowsers.*—Shalwars or loose nether garments, to tuck into wide boots, or if tight, which I do not recommend, or tolerably loose pantaloons, these latter could have a steel chain down the stripe, made like the curb chain of a bit, but infinitely lighter. The officers of the Sind Horse have this also down the seam of their loose jackets and a steel protective for the wrist and steel chain shoulder straps—they look well and are useful as light defensive armour, and give important protection to the person.

Boots and Spurs such as have proved to have been the most useful—the boots must be loose and easily drawn on, and taken off; they should be light, such as men can move in on foot with agility whilst skirmishing in a jungly or hilly country, or in mountain passes or defiles, or when scaling walls or entrenchments.

*Horse Appointments—Saddle.*—The saddle to be of the very lightest construction with reference to due strength, and also in regard to not galling the horse's back. *The lighter it can be made the better*

Stirrup leathers, girths and surcingles the same. Stirrup Irons ought to be made as light as possible. Those in use now are heavy and clumsy articles, and ought to be reduced to  $\frac{1}{2}$ , nay, a  $\frac{1}{4}$ th of their weight. Head Stalls, Bridles and all the head gear, should be the same in due proportion. A small steel chain in minute circles might be sown on to the bridles to protect them from being cut. The Officers of the Sind horse have them so. Patterns could be had from Colonel Jacob.

*Bits.*—The Bit now in use is much too heavy. Bits can be made to look uniform, and still be severe for headstrong, or hard mouthed Horses. The liberty of the bit can be armed to act on the jaw and the mouth, as also the palate. I have seen exceedingly violent horses—run-away brutes, managed with a 4 ounce bit and silk-rope twisted head gear, which altogether would not weigh more than one pound.

When it is considered that fourteen pounds weight on a horse is deemed a *distance*, in racing, care should be taken to reduce the weight the horse is to carry as much as possible. A small chain sufficiently strong to tether a horse, and an iron peg rather long would be of use; but better still, a strong twisted cord could be made up into a running loop chain, and attached from the headstall to a ring in the pommel of the saddle; this would answer to tether to the iron peg, a ring to admit the cord should be at the head of the peg. This would be found very useful to tether a horse to, after a long march or pursuit, so that the Trooper may go and seek for forage for his horse, and cook food for himself.

*Horse Shoes.*—The shoes for horses and the nails for fastening them, should be made of the softest iron, and light; ten Troopers per Troop ought to be taught to shoe horses, and carry the necessary implements to do so with them; nay, it would be as well, if all the Troopers were taught to do so; a pair of shoes and nails should be carried by every Trooper in a spare Holster-pipe made for that purpose. The revolver Pistol should be carried on a slide on the waist belt, in a small holster-pipe—The revolver carbine across the back from the shoulder to the hip, and therefore it ought not to be long in the barrel; the lighter these arms are made with reference to due strength, the better—Carried on the person, if a man's horse is shot dead or disabled, or if the horse falls and the man is dismounted on the field or in the pursuit, he has his arms with him.

*Lancers.*—I would have a Troop of Lancers with each Regiment, that weapon is very destructive in pursuit, if the men are taught to use it properly. I have myself found it difficult to get near enough to use my sabre effectually, especially, if the Foot Soldier you wish to cut down, throws a cloth at your horses eyes.

A Lance, with a steel socket and three steel bars for a short distance down the side of the wood or bamboo of the Lance from the socket, would prevent the point being cut off as I have seen it done; but still, not to be too heavy so as to overbalance the point of the Lance, is most useful. The Lance in making should be well balanced, to make it handy.

The horse and man ought to be taught to act independently in single Combat, the man can then twist and turn his horse as he likes, and will be always able to have him in hand,—practice will make men perfect. The Teaching Horse and man for single Combat. Irregular Corps of Bengal Cavalry I commanded for ten years (the second,) were all taught to exercise their horses in small circles, and to twist and turn them in every way at a hand gallop or canter. This gives the man great confidence in single Combat.

*Horses.*—If the horse is compact, with good limbs, it is not of much consequence the animal being tall or high. I have seen a horse but little taller than a galloway, do double the work of a tall, leggy, country-bred, or tazzee horse.

In fact, horses of 14, and 14½ hands keep their flesh and condition better under work than larger horses if they are compact, well coupled, and with good sound limbs and hoofs or hooves.

The horses of India, country ones, are usually faulty in their hoofs, and turn them out; this being a common malformation of the pastern joint. These horses are always unsafe to their riders; they should not be admitted into the service, neither those with flat or contracted hoofs at the frog or heel into the cavalry; nor should any horses with suspicious marks of sores: for the disease named Bursattee, from shewing itself in the rainy season, when the scarred sore places break out afresh, is a pest; the disease is in the blood and is incurable.

The disease is named Bursattee from always appearing at the latter end of the hot weather and spreading during the rainy season, or Bursaut, or during the Choumassa or four months of that period of the year.

Many horses are ruined by the head and heel ropes being kept tight, and when those ropes are made of thin and tightly twisted rope. The horses often get their forelegs over the head ropes, and in struggling to get them back again, cut and injure the back sinew, or the back of the pastern between the heel and the hoof.

Then the rope (without it is well defended by a "Mozummeh," viz: a loop made of leather, strap-shaped, and lined with "Naurdeh," or felted wool, round the pastern of the hind legs). If the rope is not protected or fastened to the "Mozummeh," it cuts into and frets the Coronet causing a disease in it, by hardening the portion close to the hoof, and forming a callous or bony excrescence, which interfere with the action of the Coronet, nay, when the horse jerks up his hind quarters violently, if frightened or wishing to get loose, the peg is jerked out with violence, and the point of it runs into the muscles of the hind leg, or into the abdomen, causing serious wounds: besides, it strains the back joint, and is the cause of Bog Blood, and Bone Spavins.

Perhaps in England some mode of fastening horses in the Field might be found out, which would prevent these evils. An iron ring round a pole (well set into the ground) would do in Cantonments; but then four times the space would be required for each horse, or they would lash out at each other. On a march or in the Field, poles could not be carried.

The horses should have a large and thick, or well felt blanket each, to cover them in good weather, or in the cold season. Two such blankets in the rainy season, for the animals are out in the open at all times.

No Stables are allowed.

A Gurdunee or large horse cloth covering the neck ("i. e. gurdun,") and body to the tail, and fastened by a surcingle under the flanks is necessary for the hot weather, to save the animal from being worried to death by that pest in India "Flies," and also to prevent the hair being burnt off by the direct rays of the sun, and the scorching winds during the hot season.

(Signed) J. B. HEARSAY, *Major General,*  
*Colonel of the old 6th Bengal Cavalry.*

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Chiefly of Hindoostanees, Mahometans, and Hindoos, with a small number of Mahrattas, and men of the Madras Presidency. The castes are generally superior to those taken in the Native Infantry Regiments.

2.

Principally from Hindoostan, Oude and the Doab between the Jumna and Ganges.

3.

I am not aware that exclusion is practised, but the men of the Cavalry Regiments are, as above observed, of a higher caste. More Brahmins and Rajpoots than in our Native Infantry Regiments.

4.

I think not. The Cavalry Officers are anxious to enlist men of all castes and tribes, but the service is not popular with many of the races. Rajpoots of Rajpootana, &c., and the Hindoostanees are in much esteem in the Light Cavalry.

5.

The agency of Commanding Officers under the general rules of enlistment observed in this Presidency is alike for Artillery, Cavalry and Infantry.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

6.

The regulations on this subject will be found in Bombay, G. G. O., No 539, 5th July 1855 (Jameson's Code, Section XLVI., Article 214 *et. infra.*, page 182, 3rd Appendix,) but they do not apply to men enlisted beyond the Presidency limits.

7.

None ; the matter is left entirely to the Commanding Officer.

8.

It would, I think, be a wise precaution to prevent an undue proportion of any race, tribe or caste being enlisted, as is now the case in the Light Cavalry, but beyond the promulgation of certain rules on this point, the Commanding Officer should be free, and responsible for his enlistments.

9.

I, A. B., Private in the regiment, do swear, that I will not abandon these colours, but always defend them to the utmost of my power, and that wherever I am ordered to go, I will march there. I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good soldier and faithful servant of the Company ; and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me.

10.

To the best of my knowledge it has not been altered since Regiments of Light Cavalry were raised.

11.

No, I cannot. I hold it to be of no use, and I would abolish it altogether. No oath will bind a man who desires to break it.

12.

I think not. Our Cavalry Corps are enlisted for general service and go any where. In many districts in India, the Natives have a peculiar dislike to go far from their homes.

13.

Without reference to districts, I would, as far as possible, recruit the Cavalry Regiments, in the same manner as the Infantry, from all castes, tribes and races, guided only by fitness for service.

14.

Certainly not. I have replied to this in answer to question 13.

15.

All mixed together without reference to any thing but the man's fitness for the place he occupies in the Regiment.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

I do not see that any proportions can be prescribed. The general rule of the service should be to enlist fit men of all races, tribes and castes; undue preponderance being allowed to none. Commanding Officers should be held responsible that this be carried out.

17.

Every Commanding Officer should be held responsible for the proper enlistment of his Regiment, under the general rules above alluded to. No further agency is required.

18.

These have been adverted to in reply to Query 6.

The precautions appear good, and should be acted upon throughout India generally.

19.

By no means.

20.

Answered above.

21.

Answered above.

22.

Answered above.

23.

Answered above.

24.

With the old Dragoon curved sword, and breech loading Carbine.

25.

None that I know of. In this matter by tight clothing and pipe clay the Light Cavalry Regiments have been almost spoiled; but nothing should be said against this service after the splendid conduct in the Field of the 3rd Regiment under Major Forbes and his gallant Officers in Persia and Central India.

26.

In Kilmarnock Forage cap,—shell jacket *coming well down over the hips*, or short tunic, cloth overalls—clothes fitting loosely, that the man may freely use his arms and legs. Old pattern Dragoon sword, curved blade, and light breech loading carbine.

Shortly, I would observe that all Native Cavalry should be modelled after the Scinde Horse. As a service; the Native Regular Cavalry is a mistake, and should be abolished.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,

*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

Men from Hindoostan Proper, chiefly from Rohilcund and the neighbourhood of Delhie and Furruckabad—from the Mahrattas of the Deccan—the Rohillas of Hyderabad, (Deccan,) and indeed of most races, castes and tribes in India.

2.

Answered above.

3.

Not that I am aware of.

4.

Ditto.

5.

That of Commanding Officers, who, until lately, (since the mutinies) have been entirely unrestricted in this respect.

6.

None that I am aware of.

7.

Ditto.

8.

Partiality towards any particular race, tribe or caste should be avoided; but beyond this, Commanding Officers should act upon their own discretion.

9.

There is no oath used.

10.

There is no form.

11.

There is no oath.

12.

I think not. I advocate general enlistment from all districts and of all kinds of men, guided only by fitness to bear arms.

13.

Answered above.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

14.

All idea of caste should be excluded from the Army. A man enlists for a Soldier; and he should rest content to know that his Commanding Officer will at all times respect his prejudices, and never employ him in any degrading occupation. I have always found the best caste men the most easily managed.

15.

Composed of Resselas; every man being placed therein by his Commanding Officer in the position which it is supposed he is best qualified to fill.

16.

So that one should not predominate over the other. The greater the mixture the better; I think this should not be lost sight of, for a mass of people of one race, tribe, or caste, are very likely to be of one mind, especially in matters of caste.

17.

That of Commanding Officers alone.

18.

None whatever. The Commanding Officer should make his own arrangement.

19.

Certainly not. The less Europeans and Natives are mixed up together the better. The British Troops should be distinct Corps, the Native Troops also distinct.

20.

Answered above.

21.

Ditto.

22.

Ditto.

23.

Ditto.

24.

With the old pattern curved Dragoon Sword, and breech loading Carbine.

25.

The dress and equipments as at present are most complete, and exactly what they should be.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

COLONEL P.M. MELVILL.

*Secretary to Government, Bombay.**Bombay Light Cavalry.***1.**

The Bombay Light Cavalry contains a considerable proportion of Mussulmans; and fully three-fourths of the men are from Hindoostan.

**2.**

This will be seen in detail from the returns furnished.

**3 to 4.**

None that I am aware of.

**5 to 23.**

These questions are the same as have been put in the Infantry Sections of the queries: and the answers there given are equally applicable here.

**24.**

It is a question among Cavalry Officers whether the Lance is an efficient weapon for Native Light Cavalry. In the Bombay Army there is one Regiment of Lancers, which is highly reputed for service in the field; and there are two Regiments, armed with Swords and Pistols which have been equally distinguished in action.

**25.**

I am not prepared to specify any advantage in this respect peculiar to the Cavalry, and with regard to the Horse equipment there may have been positive disadvantage. But this is a point on which the opinion of experienced Cavalry Officers only can be of value.

**26.**

I am not prepared to propose any change in the present dress of the Trooper: improvements might certainly be made in the Horse appointments, and particularly in the form of the saddle. But on such points, Cavalry Officers should be the best judges.

---

 COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,
*Secretary to Government, Bombay.**Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1 to 2.**

Returns will be furnished.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 3 to 18.** The replies given to the same queries in previous sections, are applicable here.
- 19.** I do not understand in what manner European Troops or Squadrons could be introduced as component parts of Irregular Corps of Cavalry.
- 20 to 23.** As before.
- 24.** I am not aware that any change in the present mode of arming the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Army has been proposed: Swords, Carbines, and Pistols have been found the most efficient weapons for such Corps; but it may be a question, whether Lances might not be introduced with some advantage. It is a question, however, which it properly belongs to Cavalry Officers to determine.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON,  
*Officiating Quarter Master General of the Army.*

*Bengal Regular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 1 to 3.** No reply.
- 4.** No race, tribe or caste could be excluded.
- 5.** Commanding Officers make their own arrangements.
- 6.** The usual forms of registering the recruit's home and parentage, and having the register verified by the proper District Authorities.
- 7.** They are simply registered, care being taken that the register is correct.
- 8.** Simply admit all classes.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9. As presented by the Native Articles of War.
- 10 & 11. No reply.
12. No, I would raise them from all parts of India.
13. Yes.
14. No, not as a rule; but in many parts of India it might answer best to have entire Corps of one class, such as of Jats, Muzhesbee Sikhs, and some others.
15. I think the class Ressallahs would answer very well in some cases. In others, I would mix all races and castes, at the discretion of carefully selected Commanding Officers.
16. The portions might be as equal as possible in such Corps.
17. Commanding Officers.
18. The usual precautions of registering homes and parentage.
19. No; I think Europeans and Natives are better apart.
20. I would select them to form integral portions of such Corps.
21. There could be no difficulty in having them on one flank, either in Camp or Quarters.
22. It would of course require a Commissariat Establishment, which the Irregular Native Cavalry do not.
23. They might be armed with the same description of weapons, indeed they are so at present.
24. With spear and lance, and a few carbines per Troop or Ressallah.
26. The spear is now, I believe, held to be a better Cavalry weapon than the carbine.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

COLONEL W. F. BEATSON,  
*Commanding Beatson's Horse,  
Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

In the days of Skinner and Gardner when the Irregular Cavalry was in its glory, they were chiefly Mahomedans, with a few Rajpoots; but when the Irregular Cavalry was increased to a large extent, men of all castes were admitted; hence the degeneracy of that formerly glorious body of soldiers.

2.

Rohilcund used to be the great nursery for Irregular Horsemen; but I believe Goorcond and the Delhi Districts furnished a great number latterly. I have heard of one Regiment called "the Delhi Toilers" from being recruited of inferior men at Delhi.

3.

In the time of Skinner and Gardner, it would be the custom to take only high caste men; but when officers got credit for the number they enlisted in a short time, instead of for the kind of men, they took all kinds of people, which destroyed the high character of the Irregular Cavalry.

4.

High caste men only should be admitted into Irregular Cavalry; by neglect of which they have lost that chivalrous feeling which they had in the days of Skinner and Gardner, and such Commanders.

5.

I am not aware.

6.

I am not aware.

7.

The security of some man in the service as a Silladar, ought to be sufficient.

8.

Answered in No. 4.

9.

The same as in the Irregular Infantry, I believe.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

10.

I am not aware.

11.

I would do it away altogether, as having been proved useless.

12.

Each Brigade, for it will be seen that I propose they should all be Brigaded, ought to be over a district to which it always returns after foreign service, but I would not confine the recruiting to that district or refuse good men wherever they come from.

13.

Answered in No. 12.

14.

Men who are "Ashrof" should be taken, of whatever race.

15.

Be mixed together, keeping relations together as much as possible when their interests would be injured by separation; but to lay down a rule that men should be only Pathans in one Troop, Moguls in another, Rajpoots in a third, and Sikhs in a fourth, would be as invidious as having separate Companies of Catholics, Protestants, and Presbyterians, in an European Regiment.

16.

Answered in No. 14.

17.

Get together a few good men who have distinguished themselves as soldiers, and you will require no other agency to raise any number of Irregular Cavalry of the right sort.

18.

Their assistance is not required excepting to publish in their districts that an officer is at such a place recruiting for Irregular Cavalry, and that all men who are "Ashrof" and wish to take service, may go to him.

19.

I propose to have a Squadron of Light Dragoons, armed with swords and breech loading carbines; and half a Troop of European Horse Artillery two 6-pounders, and one 12-pounder Howitzer permanently attached to every Brigade of Irregular Cavalry. The Brigades to be two Regiments of 600 each: in like manner I would have a Squadron of Irregular Cavalry and half a Troop of Native Horse Artillery with every Brigade of European Cavalry; such Brigades

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

would be fit for any service, and would soon fraternise, the Natives becoming proud of their European comrades.

20.

Answered in No. 19.

21.

The Irregular Cavalry used always to be placed at some distance from the Regular Troops. I would return to that system. There are things in which Europeans and Natives never can be assimilated; it is better therefore that they should not live too near each other.

22.

Not in the least, if the Commissariat Officers were placed entirely under the Officer Commanding the Brigade to which they are attached.

23.

I would give them the same kind of arms, thus avoiding any thing like suspicion: by my arrangement, I render successful mutiny impossible, but I would not give cause for mutiny by shewing suspicion; each Squadron of Irregular Cavalry attached to European Brigades, I would form of one Troop of lancers and one of carbineers.

24.

Two Squadrons in each regiment with carbines, and one with spears.

25.

No reply required.

26.

The form of dress of the Hyderabad Cavalry is perfect; I would adopt that for the whole of the Irregular Cavalry, but each Brigade should have a different color.

---

LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.

*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay*

*Bombay Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

Men from Hindoostan Proper, from Rohilcund, and the neighbour-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

hood of Delhie and Furruckabad ; from the Mahrattas of the Deccan, the Rohillas of Hyderabad (Deccan) and indeed of most races, castes and tribes in India.

2. Answered above.
3. Not that I am aware of.
4. Ditto ditto.
5. That of Commanding Officers, who until lately (since the mutinies), have been entirely unrestricted in this respect.
6. None that I am aware of.
7. Ditto ditto.
8. I would recruit men from the localities where they were originally raised.
9. There is no oath used.
10. There is no form.
11. There is no oath.
12. I think in a prescribed district.
13. Answered above.
14. Yea.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15. Answered above.
16. Ditto ditto.
17. The Commanding Officer.
18. None whatever, the Commanding Officer should make his own arrangement.
19. Certainly not.
20. Answered above.
21. Ditto ditto.
22. Yes.
24. Carbines and tulwars.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Regular Cavalry.*

*Bombay Army.*

1. Chiefly of Hindoostances, Mahomedans and Hindoos, with a small number of Mahrattas and men of the Madras Presidency; the castes are generally superior to those taken in the Native Infantry Regiments.
2. Principally from Hindoostan, Oude, and the Doab between Jumna and Ganges.
3. I am not aware that exclusion is practiced, but the men of the cavalry Regiments are, as above observed, of a higher caste; more Brahmins and Rajpoots than in the Native Infantry Regiments.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

I think not. The Cavalry Officers are anxious to enlist men of all tribes, but the service is not popular with many of the races; Rajpoots of Rajpootana, &c., and the Hindoostanees are in much esteem in the Light Cavalry.

5.

The agency of Commanding Officers under the general rules of enlistment observed in this Presidency, alike for Artillery, Cavalry and Infantry.

6.

The regulation on this subject will be found in Bombay G. G. O. No. 539, 5th July 1855. Jameson's Code, Section XLVI, Article 214, *et infra*, page 182, 3rd Appendix; but they do not apply to men enlisted beyond Presidency limits.

7.

None; the matter is left entirely to the Commanding Officer.

8.

I do not see that any alteration is necessary except care being taken not to let any caste preponderate.

9.

I, private in the regiment do swear that I will not abandon these colors, but always defend them to the utmost of my power, and that wherever I am ordered to go I will march there; I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good soldier and faithful servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me.

10.

To the best of my knowledge it has not been altered since Regiments of light Cavalry were raised.

11.

No.

12.

I think not.

13.

Eligible men should be taken wherever they be found.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14. I would mix the castes as much as possible.
15. The tribes or castes should be mixed.
16. The Mahomedan castes should not preponderate, and I would exclude Brahmins entirely.
17. Every Commanding Officer should be held responsible for the proper enlistment of his Regiment under the general rules above alluded to, no further agency is required.
18. These have been adverted to in reply to query 6.  
The precautions appear good, and should be acted upon throughout India generally.
19. Certainly not.
20. Answered above.
21. Answered above.
22. Not necessarily.
23. All Cavalry should be armed alike with sabre and breech loading carbine.
24. As above.
25. The European dress is not suited to Native Cavalry.
26. In the same way as the Irregular Cavalry; I would give them a felt helmet and pugree, and a tunic.
-

CAPTAIN H. O. MAYNE,  
*Commanding Mayne's Horse.*

Having but little experience of the Bengal Army, I beg that the enclosed replies may be considered as applying to the old Nizam's, and present Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, as an off-shoot of the Bengal Army, in which I served for very many years.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Mussulmans,	{ Syuds, Shieks, Moguls, Pathans, Mewatis, Nagrees from Jhoongnee Kamikhanies.	} Principally from Rohil- cund and N. W. P.		Hindoos,	{ Rajpoots, (very few) Sikhs, from Deccan.
-------------	---	--	--	----------	--

2.

Oudh, Rohilcund, The Dooab between the Ganges and Jumna, The East of Bickarni, The Deccan.

3.

None by regulation; but in practice, Brahmins, Jats, Goojurs, Kuttris, Purbeahs, Boondelas, and Doondelas, and Mahrattas, have generally been excluded from the Nizam's Cavalry.

4.

Yes, the enlisted numbers of Rajpoots, Sikhs, Kamikhanis, Nagurs, and Jats are so small they might be increased with advantage, except that the Nagurs are not sufficiently populous.

5.

None. The popularity of the service, and the old system of Khidmutawazi lately, and unwisely abolished, kept so many trained Soldiers ever ready at Regimental Head Quarters, that all agency and recruiting parties were needless.

6.

None were ever used in the Nizam's Cavalry.

7.

The security of two Sillidars is taken, backed by the recommendation of the Troop Officer, for the good behaviour of the Recruit, and for any loss he may cause to Government. An "Ashrafut Nama," or certificate of respectability, and of the recruit's not having performed menial service was also taken.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

8.

The Khidmutawazi, or acting service system, sanctioned by Colonels J. Sutherland, Evan Davis, and James Blair, should again be introduced at the option of Commanding Officers. It is an old and most popular practice, and by it the Government are the great gainers, as thereby they have always at least a Squadron of trained and tried Soldiers *unpaid* present with each Corps, ready for any emergency. It creates *per se* the very best recruit depôt that could be devised and is *in re* a sort of limited enlistment act. The principal argument brought against it is that, recruits so situated are not under the Articles of War; but this may be easily obviated. I consider the Articles of War as utterly unsuited for the Native Army generally, and especially for Irregular Horse. The men place little estimation on them, and understand them less. Their introduction into the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, has not improved that service, whilst the old PUNCHAYET system was appreciated, and considered far more just, and it certainly never failed in ensuring very high discipline.

9.

Those laid down in the Articles of War, and previous to their introduction, none. No Native places any value on the oath, and the administering thereof will not debar him in the slightest degree from breaking it, if so inclined. Most Natives, if they will but express free opinions, confess, that *no consideration for an oath* ever prevents any of their brethren from the commission of a crime, and I believe it seldom or ever prevents either the European Officer or Soldier from the same.

10.

The Khidmutawazi system has been in vogue in the Nizam's Cavalry ever since its first organization.

11.

None, save its abolition.

12.

This and numbers 13, 14, and 15, are best replied to collectively. The high importance of preserving a balance of power in every Native Corps being now universally admitted, it is indispensable that they should be composed of equal numbers from the opposing classes of Mussulmans and Hindoos, each of which may be again divided into two tribes, who have little in common; you thus obtain four races in each Corps, and these should always be recruited from their own special districts, indeed if not carefully avoided, this will follow as a natural result.

The separate trooping of several races in one Corps produces a valuable spirit of emulation, and of honorable rivalry, which may be



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

turned to the very best account by a judicious Commandant, and by placing an amount of power in his hands, otherwise unattainable, it will ever enable him to perfect discipline.

**13 to 15.** Replied to in answer to No. 12.

**16.**

There are classes of Hindus and Mussulmans who have nothing in common, and a Corps should be composed of half of each race, again sub-divided, viz.

Right Wing	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{1st Squadron,} \\ \text{2d Squadron,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{1st Troop N. W. P. Mussulmans,} \\ \text{2d Troop ————— Rajpoots,} \\ \text{2d Troop Nagurs \& Khamikhanis,} \\ \text{3d do Sikhs.} \end{array} \right.$

Left wing ditto, by which arrangement whenever a Squadron or Wing may be detached, there will always be two opposing races.

**17.**

Replied to in No. 12. Commandants should be allowed to make their own arrangements.

**18.**

None are needed with good recruiting Officers—neither under the plan above suggested.

**19.**

Certainly not, as then the degradation of the Native Soldier would be rapid. He would soon become the servant and sycophant of the European; he would lose all self respect and spirit of emulation; he would have all the fatigue duties of the Corps to perform, and seldom be allowed the opportunity of gaining distinction, and whenever acting with the European, the latter would surely obtain the credit, and thus the Native Soldier would soon sink into insignificance, on finding that he was ever put in the back ground.

**21.**

No reply needed, after the view expressed in reply to No. 19.

**22.**

No reply needed &c., &c.

**23.**

Ditto, ditto.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24.

Front rank, excepting 3 file on the outward flanks of each squadron, with strong Hog spears, and swords. The rest with breech loading carbines and swords, Non-Commissioned Officers as the men, Native-Officers with swords, and over and under double barrelled pistols, which are far preferable, and more deadly than revolvers. These are always getting out of order, or the ball lost from the jerking of the horse. I have seen 100 instances in this campaign; the common revolver ball will not knock a man down, whereas one from a good sized pistol invariably does. The swords should be of different sizes and patterns, for what suits one man another is unable to use; some are proficient with the point, others are cunning at the cut. I have already noticed this subject at length, in a communication made to Colonel Durand on 23d July last, forwarding an article I wrote thereon in the Bombay Quarterly Review, No. III, for June 1855, entitled "Light Cavalry in India."

25.

No reply required.

26.

The existing dress and equipment of Irregular Cavalry are admirable and give great satisfaction; some few details might be improved which I have mentioned in the article above quoted.

# CAVALRY.

## 2.—RULES OF DISCIPLINE AND MILITARY CODE.

### QUESTIONS.

1. Can you suggest improvements in the Articles of War now in use in the Cavalry of
2. Should the Special Rules, regulating punishment in the Native Army, be retained, or should they be assimilated to the Rules which obtain in the British Army?
3. Does the system of Native Courts Martial work satisfactorily in the Cavalry of
4. What means are adopted to acquaint the Troopers of the Cavalry with the Military Code under which they serve and are governed?
5. What proportion of the Troopers of the Cavalry can read and comprehend the Articles of War in their own vernacular?

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief.*

### QUESTIONS.

### ANSWERS.

1. Answered under the head of "Infantry."
2. to 5. Ditto.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT.-GENL. SIR PATRICK GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief at Madras.*  
*Madras Cavalry.*

### QUESTIONS.

### ANSWERS.

- 1 to 5. See my replies to these same questions with respect to "Infantry;" they are equally applicable to Cavalry.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras.*  
*Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

I think they might be much simplified and the Catalogue of offences, which Commanding Officers, are empowered to deal with or without reference to superior authority, much increased.

2.

Retained; they were made specially for the Native Army and with regard to the prejudices, &c. &c., of Natives at the same time, the present would be a good opportunity to make any alterations which the times call for, as indicated in the reply to the immediately foregoing questions.

3.

I think that the principle of trial by Courts Martial very good, but I much doubt that the present system does work satisfactorily, and I think it very desirable that it should be more simplified at all events in Irregular Corps where as much as possible the Commanding Officer should be Supreme.

4.

The Articles of War can be read to them periodically upon parade as in Regular Regiments.

5.

I cannot tell, but in most Corps, I fancy a very small number.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,  
*Commanding Peshawar Division.*  
*Punjab Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Yes. The removal of all restrictions leaving to Courts in all cases their full powers, the adding to minor punishments (Article 112) 25 lashes and reduction of Non-Commissioned Officers, also granting Commanding Officers power to punish Native Commissioned Officers. An Article should be added subjecting men who, in time of peace being ordered on an ordinary working party, refuse to work or leave the party without leave, to the full penalties Courts Martial have the power to award.

2.

I think special Rules should be retained, but they should be much more stringent.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

No; Native Officers are ready enough to punish any disgraceful conduct, especially if it be against their own tenets, but they will not uphold discipline and will not punish breaches of it. I expect no real discipline to exist in the Native Army as long as Native Officers sit on Courts Martial, and until Commanding Officers have power to punish summarily Native Commissioned Officers, and to reduce Non-Commissioned to the ranks. In Corps, officered by European Officers, trials should be held by them only, and when there is a scarcity of Officers, 2 should be deemed a sufficient number to form a Court. In the case of a less number than 2, the Court Martial should be dispensed with, and on a summary of evidence the Commanding Officer should award punishment, possessing in that case the full powers of a Court Martial.

4.

The Articles of War are read on parade.

5.

About one in ten.

---

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, G. C. B.,  
*Commanding Oude Field Force.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

I think such alterations necessary in the Articles of War to render them serviceable in the Irregular Cavalry, that I would abolish them altogether, and substitute a few simple rules within the comprehension of all. They have never been used in the Guides, and in the Punjaub Irregular Force, the general principles only are acted upon. In the Irregular Cavalry, a few general rules should suffice, such as the penalties of "desertion," "disaffection," "insubordination," &c.

The service is highly popular, and now that the pay is likely to be put on a better footing, it will become more so. Men riding their own horses give pledges for conduct, and the fear of discharge has a beneficial effect even on the lowest. When a Sowar begins to require punishment, the best course is to get rid of him.

2.

See No. 1.

3.

The system of Courts Martial in Irregular Corps, works well in no respect.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. & 5.

Portions of the Articles of War are read to the men from time to time. Those best acquainted with the Articles are generally the scamps, "the Lawyers" who boast of their use for evading punishment.

---

BRIGADIER-GENL. JOHN JACOB, C. B.,

*Commander-in-Chief on the Frontier.*

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I have a strong opinion that there should be no Articles of War ; such a system of laws appears to me to be founded on principles radically false and mischievous. The practical effect of Articles of War on the mind of the Native Indian Soldier is to show him that we expect him to disobey ; that his normal state is disobedience. The only law to the Native Indian Soldier should be the order of his English Commanding Officer.

2.

I think there should be no such rules at all. Commanding Officers should have magisterial powers over their men ; but it is clear to me that any Commanding Officer who would retain in his Corps, a Native Indian Soldier, after subjecting him to corporal punishment, must be quite unfit to Command Native Indian Soldiers. Corporal punishment should always be followed by disgraceful dismissal, and should only be resorted to in cases of disgraceful crime, plundering, theft, violence to country folks and such like.

3.

The present system of Native Courts Martial appears to me to be very deeply erroneous in principle, such Courts imply that the Native Officers are entrusted with higher powers than their European Commander. The authority of the European Commander should be paramount over the Native Soldiers of his Regiment, and his orders should be the only laws recognized. Under such a rule the Native Courts Martial might often be very useful.

4.

The Articles of War are read out in the vernacular to the Regiment once a month.

5.

I cannot say.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,  
*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

No Articles of War have ever been in use in the Sinde Horse; how far they have been applied to the other Corps of Irregular Cavalry, I cannot precisely say.

2.

There should be no special rules at all; every thing should be left to the discretion of a selected Commander.

3.

Courts Martial are not resorted to at all in the Sinde Irregular Horse. They have been in use in other Irregular Corps, but the system works most unsatisfactorily.

4.

The practices in different Corps differ very greatly. No Code was ever in use in the Sinde Irregular Horse since I have commanded the Corps, except the Regimental orders, and no law thought of, except the will of the Commander.

---

BRIGADIER-GENERAL J. F. BRADFORD,  
*Commanding Meerut Division.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1. to 5.

I consider the Articles of War too complex, and very little understood by Native Troops; besides which, offenders not unfrequently escape punishment on mere technicalities. I would substitute therefore a simpler Code, and would abolish Native Courts Martial altogether.

---

BRIGADIER CHRISTIE,  
*Commanding at Dinapore.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Since the Irregular Cavalry have been subjected to the Articles of War, they have deteriorated very much, I would most earnestly recommend that the old *Punchyut* system be re-introduced, which was invariably found to answer so well.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

I would have nothing to say to the Special Rules regulating punishment in the *Regular* Native Army, or in the British Army either.

3.

Most certainly not. I recommend they should be abolished in the Irregular Cavalry, and trial by Puchyut introduced again.

4.

In my Regiment, I had the old Articles of War read, which concerned the men once a quarter.

5.

Very few indeed can read, but all understand them, when read and explained to them.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

See the corresponding answer in the Infantry paper which accompanied letter No. 4, of the 12th July 1858.

2.

Ditto.

3.

Ditto.

4.

Ditto.

5.

Perhaps 15 per Cent.

---

LIEUT.-COLONEL R. H. GALL,  
*14th King's Light Dragoons.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

I would subject Native Soldiers to all punishments which European Soldiers are liable to suffer for grave offences.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL C. DAVIDSON,  
*Resident at Hyderabad.*  
*Hyderabad Contingent Irregular Cavalry.*

1. I would recommend the simplification of the present Code free of its present restrictions, leaving the Court to award what they may deem a suitable punishment for the offence.
2. No.
3. Yes ; Circular instructions were issued to Officers Commanding Corps, on the Cavalry being made amenable to the Articles of War in 1856, requiring them to use the power with which they are invested to instruct the Court not to award corporal punishment or hard labor in irons for offences of a Military nature.
4. There are certain Articles read in conformity with the Articles of War, the men are generally perfectly indifferent and ignorant as to the legal application of the Code which is beyond a Native Soldier's comprehension.
5. One-fourth of a Corps who can read and write.

---

CAPTAIN W. D. ABBOTT,  
*Commanding 3rd Regiment Cavalry, Hyderabad Contingent.*  
*Hyderabad Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. I regret I am not able to do so.
2. I do not feel myself sufficiently well acquainted with the subject to offer an opinion.
3. It is preferable I consider to the system which formerly prevailed of "Punchyuts," but I do not think it is implicitly to be depended upon as the main stay and support of discipline, that is, that there is generally too great a tendency to be over-lenient.
4. The Articles of War are read to the men once in every three months.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

There are eighty-five (85) men in this Regiment who can read and write.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,  
*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

The Articles of War in use with the Irregular Cavalry of the Hyderabad Contingent are the same as those which are used for the Infantry. They might be improved with much advantage, by omitting many useless and unnecessary Articles; and I would recommend greater powers being given to Regimental Courts Martial, which would strengthen the authority of the Commanding Officer over his men.

Formerly there were Regimental Punchyuts in this Irregular Cavalry, and an appeal from a Regimental to a Divisional Punchyut was allowed. This mode of dealing with Military offences was abolished after the mutiny of the 3rd Cavalry in October 1855, by an order from the Governor General of India in Council, in a letter from Secretary to Government in the Military Department, dated 26th February 1856, directing that henceforward, "the Articles which, under the provision of Article 158, are to be read to the Troops every three months, may be read regularly to the Artillery, Cavalry and Infantry, of the Hyderabad Contingent to every recruit at the period of his attestation."

In my opinion it is a great improvement abolishing Punchyuts, and substituting trials by the Articles of War. There must always be too much Native influence with Punchyuts.

2.

The punishments in the Native Army are very different from those which obtain in the British Army; and they could not be assimilated.

3.

It works very well and satisfactorily.

4.

The Native Articles of War are translated into Hindoostanee and Nagree; and such Articles as are of general usage are read to the men, and explained by their Native Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

The men who enter the Irregular Cavalry branch are a better class than those generally entertained in the Infantry, and more intelligent. Fully half, if not more, of the Troopers can read and comprehend the Articles of War in their own vernacular.

---

MAJOR W. A. ORR,

*Commdg. 1st Company Artillery, and late Commdg. Field Force,  
Hyderabad Contingent, serving in Central India.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Cavalry of the Madras Army.*

1.

I think the present Articles of War work very well.

2.

I would advocate the present special rules for punishing crime being retained, any extension of these rules would undoubtedly unpopularize the service, and act disadvantageously as regards procuring the class of men hitherto obtained as recruits.

3.

I think it does, and that the men prefer it to the old practice of PUNCHYUTS. The present system renders them less liable to the caprices of ill-judging Commandants. Much abuse used to prevail under the PUNCHYUT system.

4.

The Articles of War are regularly read to the men on parade by the Mutsuddies of Troops, and in the event of any new orders or Regulations being published, they are at once read and explained to the men paraded for that purpose.

5.

In every Troop, numbering about 80 men, about 25 or 30 can read and comprehend the Articles of War in their own vernacular.

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

1.

No, I think Articles of War are of no use in the Native Army. A few plain regulations may be necessary, but the system in the Irregular branch of the service works better. A Panchayet does not require Articles of War.

2.

The assimilation will not answer. Under *selected* Officers in Regiments, the Native Officers will maintain discipline without the special rules, which stand between the men and those whom they should look up to in all things.

3.

Yes, it works well according to Regulation, and habit has become second nature, but I am convinced that the system spoils the Native Soldier who should look to his Commanding Officer in all things. Much could be written on this subject: a constant change of Commanders causes a want of confidence in the men, and the object of most European Officers is to get away from the regiments as soon as possible.

4.

The Articles of War are read to them periodically on parade.

5.

I should think about two-thirds can read and write; some well, some indifferently.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,

*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

Articles of War are not used in the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Presidency.

2.

The assimilation would not answer. Discipline is maintained in the Irregular Corps by Commanding Officers, who are Magistrates. Except in extreme cases, the cases are settled by Panchayets approved and confirmed by Commanding Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

In the Irregular Cavalry, the men are not tried by Courts Martial, except on special occasions.

4.

There is no Military Code for the guidance of the men of the Irregular Cavalry. The men enter the service on the understanding that they subject themselves to the custom of the regiment under the system of Punchayets, and the orders of their Commanding Officer.

5.

There are no Articles of War to read. I can form no idea of the number of men who can read and write, but the number must be considerable.

I may here remark that in this Presidency, there are three Corps of Irregular Cavalry, viz: The Poonah Horse, the Scind Horse, (three Regiments,) and the southern Mahratta Horse (two Regiments,) that the constitution of these Regiments is much the same; but the Mahratta Horse are largely recruited from the district, the name of which they bear. The Poonah and Sind Horse are mostly Hindoostanees, men from Rohilcund and the neighbourhood of Delhie; while in the former regiment are also many men from the Hyderabad, (Deccan) districts. In both these Corps there is also a fair sprinkling of Mahrattas.

The system in these three Corps is not the same; and it is difficult therefore to write of them conjointly.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,

*Secretary to Government of Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

1 to 5.

The answers given to the queries referring to the Infantry, apply throughout this section.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,  
*Secy. to the Govt. of Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1 & 2.

To these queries I can only give the same answers as I have given before.

3.

Irregular Corps in the Bombay Army, though subject to the Articles of War, are managed still by the system of Panchayet, or Courts of Arbitration, and not generally by that of Courts Martial.

4 & 5.

As before.

---

LIEUT. COLL. J. D. MACPHERSON.

*Officiating Quarter Master General of the Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bengal Regular Cavalry.*

1.

Commanding Officers should have powers as Joint Magistrates, and deal summarily with all minor offences.

2.

They may be retained, but Courts Martial should only be had recourse to in cases of grave crime.

3.

In no branch of the Army.

4.

They have the Articles of War read and explained to them.

5.

They can all comprehend them well enough.

COLONEL W. F. BEATSON,  
*Commanding Beatson's Horse.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bengal Irregular Cavalry.*

1. Do them away altogether, and let the men be tried by Punc hayets of their own Officers.
2. Answered above.
3. No.
4. I am not aware what was the custom in this respect in the Bengal Irregulars.
5. Very few, they ought to be men of the sword and not of the pen.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENL. SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Regular Cavalry.*

1. No.
2. I think the Rules may be retained.
3. It has generally done so, and is well understood.
4. The Articles of War are read to them periodically on parade.
5. I should think about two-thirds can read and write; some well, some indifferently.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENL. SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1. Articles of War are not used in the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay presidency.

2. Not applicable.

3. In Irregular Cavalry, the men are not tried by Courts Martial, except on special occasions.

4. There is no Military Code for the guidance of the men of the Irregular Cavalry.

The men enter the service on the understanding that they subject themselves to the custom of the Regiment under the system of Panchayets, and the order of their Commanding Officers.

5. There are no Articles of War to read. I can form no idea of the number of men who can read and write, but the number must be considerable.

I may here remark that, in this Presidency there are three Corps of Irregular Cavalry, the Poona Horse, the Scind, three Regiments, the Southern Mahratta Horse (2 Regiments). The constitution of these Regiments is much the same, but the Mahratta Horse are largely recruited from the district, the name of which they bear; the Poona and Scind Horse are mostly Hindoostanees, men from Rohilcund and the neighbourhood of Delhi, while in the former Regiment, are also many men from the Hyderabad (Deccan) District.

In both these Corps, there is also a fair sprinkling of Mahrattas.

The system in these three Corps is not the same, and it is difficult therefore to write of them conjointly.



CAPTAIN H. O. MAYNE,  
*Commanding Mayne's Horse.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

None, save their abolition. A set of simple regulations might be introduced, easily understood, and productive of a higher discipline than the Articles of War induce.

2.

Degrees of punishment for the Native Army should be indicated, rather than regulated, for at present, the law frequently fails to punish the guilty. Wherefore, punishment should be left greatly discretionary with those to whom power is delegated to inflict; all Natives are far better satisfied when punished by their Commanding Officers, than when by sentence of Court Martial.

3.

Most unsatisfactory; for let Officers work as they will, it is not possible to render the *English* principles of the Articles of War, either satisfactory or intelligible to the *Native* mind.

4.

Recruits are instructed in certain of the principle Articles of War, and certain portions of them are read at muster parades, as ordered in the regulations, all of which is regarded by the Native Soldier as a solemn and necessary farce, and whatever he is taught and hears, he feels not the slightest interest in remembering.

5.

Not above 10 per cent.



# CAVALRY.

---

## 3.—ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARDS.

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. In the Cavalry of what is the system of promotion; is it based on merit alone; on seniority alone; or on merit and seniority combined?
2. Are the Native Commissioned Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the Cavalry of the generally intelligent, useful and efficient?
3. Are their acquirements usually of a higher grade than those of the Troopers from among whom they have risen?
4. Is there any test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade? or on promotion from one Commissioned grade to another?
5. Does the intervention of the Native Commissioned Officer between the European Officer and his men weaken, or strengthen the position and influence of the European Officer? Does a full complement of the European militate against the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers?
6. Has it been found on occasions of mutiny that the Native Officers have evinced cordial fidelity, given timely information, or been useful in aiding their European Officers to check or quell mutiny? Have the Native Officers sided with the mutineers, or with the European Officers?
7. Should the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be continued or discontinued in the Cavalry of the
8. Is the substitution of a European Sergeant and Corporal to each troop of Corps of Cavalry in lieu of its Native Commissioned Officers advisable?
9. If the abolition of the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be advisable, and the prospect of distinction and emolument be thus closed to the Native Trooper, would a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions, claimable after special periods of service be a compensatory encouragement, and as efficacious as the Commissioned grades?

## QUESTIONS.

- 10.** Have retiring pensions, proved effectual in attaching the Native Trooper to the British Service and the British Rule?
- 11.** Should the system of pensions as now in force by Regulation be maintained? or modified? or prospectively abolished?
- 12.** What is the charge upon the finances of the \_\_\_\_\_ on account of Military pensions to the \_\_\_\_\_ Cavalry?
- 13.** Should the system of promotion generally by seniority to the grades of Native Commissioned Officers (if these are retained) be altered, and promotion for merit and efficiency be the Rule?
- 14.** Are Native Commissioned Officers generally fit to take part in the conduct of Courts-Martial?
- 15.** Are Native Commissioned Officers on a par with European Sergeants and Corporals, in professional intelligence and efficiency?
- 16.** What is the best organization for Native Corps of Regular Cavalry?
1. Should they be fully officered with Native Commissioned grades, as well as with European Officers, or
  2. Fully officered with European, but have no Native Commissioned grades, or
  3. Be officered like Corps of Irregular Cavalry, *viz.* with a full complement of Native Commissioned Officers, but with only three or four European Officers?
- 17.** Should any alteration be made in the mode of officering the Irregular Cavalry of \_\_\_\_\_
- 18.** Among the classes which enter the Regular and Irregular Cavalry of the Army, which is the most popular, the Regular or the Irregular? and what reasons are assigned by the Natives for the preference?
- 19.** If Irregular Corps of Cavalry have Native Commissioned Officers, and Regular Corps of Native Cavalry have no Native Commissioned Officers, but only good service pay and pensions as an incitement to good conduct and efficiency, will the high pay to the Troopers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the Regular Cavalry, be an equivalent to the absence of Commissioned grades, and draw as good recruits to the Regular, as the contrary system will draw to the Irregular Corps?

## QUESTIONS.

**20.** Is it advisable to keep up Regular Native Cavalry in the Army? Would the substitution of Irregular Cavalry be as efficient, and less costly?

**21.** Under the supposition that Irregular Cavalry should be the only Native Cavalry in the Army, should part be mounted by Government? or the whole placed on the usual footing of Irregular Cavalry in this respect?

**22.** What is the average cost to Government of the Horses on which the Troopers of the Regular Native Cavalry of the Army are mounted?

**23.** Whence are the horses obtained? and of what breeds are they?

**24.** Whence does the Irregular Cavalry of the Presidency draw its horses?

**25.** What is the average cost of the horses of the Irregular Cavalry of the Presidency?

**26.** Are the requirements of the mounted Branch of the Army, adequately met by the system pursued for obtaining horses?

**27.** Can you suggest any improvement in the system of obtaining horses, for the European Cavalry and Artillery of the Army of the Presidency?

**28.** Is it advisable that the Government Studs should be maintained, or should they be abolished, and Government rely on the markets of India, of foreign countries, and of British Colonies, for a supply of horses for the Army of India?

**29.** What is the pay of the Troopers of Irregular Cavalry in

**30.** Has that pay proved sufficient to enable a Corps to be well mounted and equipped, and thoroughly efficient in the Field, during a protracted Campaign?

**30b.** Have Corps of Irregular Cavalry of the Army been embarrassed by debt, or free from debt?

**31.** Should any alteration be made in the pay of the Irregular Cavalry of the

**32.** What is the system of the with respect to Assamees, and the market value of the Assamee? Are there restrictions upon the number which any Native Officer, or Capitalist of the Corps may hold? Do you advocate the existence in

QUESTIONS.

Corps of Irregular Horse of such large vested interests, or not? Are they favorable to the maintenance of the efficiency of a Corps in Horses and in equipments, and to the conduct of duty ?

- 33.** What is the pay of Mounted Police in
- 34.** What is the organization of the Mounted Police of
- 35.** Of what ~~reges~~, tribes, or castes is the Mounted Police of composed?
- 36.** How is the Mounted Police recruited, that is, what is the agency employed; the precautions taken before, or by the Local Authorities in entertaining men?
- 37.** Where districts are large and duty heavy, has the pay of the Mounted Police at Rupees per mensem been found adequate, and the Police proved well mounted and efficient?
- 38.** Is the difference between the pay of Horse Police, and that of Irregular Horse, such as to ensure the latter the superior mounting essential for his peculiar service?

---

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in Chief.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** Seniority, it is believed, was less regarded in the Irregular Cavalry than in other branches, but still carried weight in promotion.
- 2.** Generally more so perhaps than in other branches.
- 3.** Originally not, but they have had more training and to some extent were selected men.
- 4.** None laid down.
- 5.** Not required.
- 6.** Perhaps rather more than in the Regular branches.
- 7 to 9.** Not required.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10. No.

11. Answered under the head of "Infantry."

12. I have no means of knowing.

13. Commanding Officers should be left very much to their own judgment in making promotions in the Irregular Cavalry.

14. I should say only very moderately so.

15 & 16. Not required.

17. Each Troop should have a Ressaldar, a naib Ressaldar, and a Jemadar.

18. The Irregular with some classes, the Regular Cavalry with others, that is with those who do not possess and cannot purchase horses or have not relations in the Irregulars. There was no difficulty in obtaining Candidates for either.

19 & 20. Not required.

21. The whole should be on the usual footing of Irregular Cavalry, and none of the horses should be provided by Government.

22. I have no idea.

23. Principally stud bred.

24. From every part of the country where Corps may be stationed.

25. I do not know, but it varies much at different periods, and in different Provinces, perhaps varying from Rs. 100 to 250.

26. The Stud does not produce sufficient horses for the force of Dragoons and Artillery required for Bengal.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

27.

Arrangements should be contrived to procure horses from the Cape and Australia, also to purchase Arabs at Kurachee, and Cabul Horses at Peshawur. These four sources and the Stud would give sufficient horses, it is believed.

28.

I think it would be prudent that the Studs should be retained.

29.

Twenty rupees per month.

30.

It is insufficient and the men are consequently involved until they obtain promotion. It has been recommended that it should be raised to Rs. 25 per month

30b.

Some very much embarrassed.

31.

An increase of Rs. 5 per month to Sowars is desirable, and a small increase to the higher grades.

32.

It is believed that the system varies much. Native Officers are restricted in the number of their Bargeers, but possibly they may secretly evade the rule and have more Bargeers than they ought.

It seems objectionable that the Bargeer system should be at all extended.

33.

I do not know.

34.

I have no means of knowing.

35.

Ditto.

36.

Ditto.

37.

Ditto.

38.

There should be such a difference. If an Irregular Cavalry Trooper receives Rs. 25 per month, a Police sowar certainly should not have more than Rs. 22.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras,  
 Madras Army.*

**1 to 16.** Inclusive. See my replies to the foregoing questions with respect to "Infantry;" they are equally applicable to Native Cavalry.

**20.**

The substitution of Irregular for Regular Native Cavalry in the Madras Army would not detract from efficiency and would be far less costly. But a measure so sweeping is calculated to startle the minds of the existing Regular Cavalry, and to fill them with all kinds of fears and suspicions, and this is the invariable effect produced on Natives by any changes in their condition, even such as are to us manifestly and unmistakeably for their advantage.

With the sole exception of the 8th Regiment, the whole Regular Cavalry of the Madras Army have acquitted themselves, both in the field and in quarters loyally and creditably during the disturbances in Bengal, and I strongly recommend that so entire a change as converting them into Irregular Horse may not be attempted.

**21.**

To mount Irregular Cavalry either in part or in whole on Government Horses would entirely upset the present constitution of this branch, and in my opinion destroy their usefulness, their economy, and their instant readiness for immediate service without assistance from Commissariat or any other Department.

**22.**

Rupees five hundred and fifty (Rs. 550) each.

**23.**

Arabia, Persia, the Cape, Australia and some few are bred by the Silladars in the Mysore District, but they are of a very inferior description.

**26.**

The requirements during the past twelve months have been unusually heavy, and they have been marvellously well met.

**27.**

Australian and Cape Horses equal to the requirements of the European Cavalry and Artillery of the Madras Presidency should be ob-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

tained from those Colonies. The other breeds of Horses are deficient in the weight and substance, indispensable to thorough efficiency, for those Arms of the service.

28.

On this point, I recommend that reference should be had to a correspondence which passed (I think) in 1846-47, on the subject of procuring Horses for the public service from the Colonies. The correspondence will be found in the Office of the Adjutant General of the Bengal Army. The measure was strongly advocated by the Military Authorities of the day; considerable expense was incurred in sending selected Officers of experience to Australia to institute enquiry into the matter. If my memory does not deceive me, their report was highly favorable in every respect. But nothing came of it!

---

LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras,*  
*Irregular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Merit and seniority combined; seniority though greatly preponderating in the scale.

2.

No; I do not think they are conspicuously so, nor by any means so much more so than those of the Regular Army as is generally supposed. There is a like mixture of dull and bright in both.

3.

Not so in my opinion.

4.

The only test ordered I believe, but rarely attended to, is that a man should be able to read and write, *i. e.*, before he can be promoted from the ranks to be Non-Commissioned Officer. The examination in these points is easily slurred over if the man is naturally sharp and intelligent, and the Commanding Officer considers him likely to make a good Non-Commissioned Officer; for further promotions, there is no test.

5.

Most rarely I believe has any information been obtained from, or any warning been given by Native Officers on these occurrences. On the occurrence of an outbreak the generality, I think, do ostensibly

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

range themselves on the side of their Officers, but their influence either in preventing or quelling a revolt appears to be nil.

**7 to 9.** No answers.

**10.** See my reply to the same question in reference to the Native Infantry of the Madras Army.

**11.** I think there ought to be pensions for long and faithful service, and that it would not be wise to abolish them. The present system as to rates, &c., appears to satisfy the recipients; any alteration however might be made that recent occurrences suggest with respect to the Bengal Native Army.

**12.** I cannot say.

**13.** I think promotion by merit and efficiency should be the rule, Commanding Officers generally have a just regard to the claims of old Soldiers.

**14.** They are always prone to be swayed by party and private interests. They do not see offences in the same light as we do, and from this is often very hard to get them to award an adequate punishment for what we consider, and what our Articles of War lay down as serious offences.

**15 & 16.** No answer.

**17.** A Native Regiment should either be fully officered, *i. e.*, to admit of the management of Troops and Companies being entirely in the hands of European Officers, or if not, the present number of three Officers is ample for an Irregular Corps.

The 2nd in command in time of peace and present with the Headquarters of his Regiment has nothing to do, and the Adjutant little more, the Commanding Officer is all in all.

The permanent addition therefore of merely one or two more Officers is unnecessary, but on service, additional Officers ought to be appointed to do duty.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18.

I think when the service was first started, the Irregular Cavalry was the most generally popular. It was something new ; it opened a further large field for employment ; there was a much greater laxity of drill and discipline, and the pay was so good at all events in the Non-Commissioned and higher grades, even as regards the Privates. I think in a pecuniary point of view, a Native would far prefer receiving 20 Rupees to keep himself and his horse than 7 Rupees a month, and have a horse provided for him. There is sufficient proof of this in the anxiety of Bargheers in Irregular Cavalry Regiments to be made " Khoduspahs," i. e., owners of horses of their own ; still there is never any difficulty in obtaining Recruits for the Regulars amongst the families of men belonging to them, in the same way as the Irregulars get plenty of Recruits from their families and the Regular Sepoy generally considers himself superior to the Irregular.

19 &amp; 20. Erased.

21.

See my reply to the same question in reference to the Madras Cavalry.

22.

Rupees 800 each, I think, but I speak entirely from memory.

23.

The horses come from the various Government studs ; they are the produce of English and Arab sires out of country and stud bred mares. Australian, Cape and country horses have been purchased at odd times on emergencies. In 1843 and also in 1845, a number of Arabs came up from Madras and Bombay.

24.

Whenever it can, horses generally are to be purchased as required in the district in which the Corps is stationed. Some Commandants also send men annually to purchase at the Hurdwar or other great fairs.

25.

I should think from 160 to 180 Rupees.

26.

The Irregular Cavalry may be quite well left to themselves. I think that much greater care and attention than used to be observed, might be given to the system of breeding horses in the Government studs.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

27.

I think that Government ought to be able to breed first-rate horses at their own studs, and at much reduced prices.

28.

See my reply to the same question in reference to the Madras Cavalry.

29.

Twenty Rupees a month in our own old Provinces; beyond the Indus 30.

30.

If not put to constant needless expense for showy and costly uniforms, and various other things that Commanding Offices often oblige their men to get which are not in reality required, ordinarily 20 Rupees a month is sufficient. But on actual service, during a campaign, while the cost of every article of food for man and horse is enhanced, and there is so much extra wear and tear of all kinds, the pay of a Sowar should be increased to 25 Rupees a month I think.

30b.

Generally they are, I have always understood, more or less in debt. A Mahomedan of which class they are mostly composed, is, I suspect, seldom free from it. He generally spends all he receives. But 20 Rupees a month, as I have before said, is sufficient on ordinary occasions to keep a Sowar and his horse well and in addition of 5 Rupees a month when in the field would meet all extra expense.

31.

Answered in replies to 30 and 30b.

32.

I think the present system of allowing a certain number of Assamees to Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers is good, it imparts some respectability and standing to these men, and forms an inducement to them both themselves to enter and to bring Bargheers to the service.

I think the number apportioned to the Native Officer should certainly be defined and limited to admit of a certain proportion of the Sowars being "Khoduspahs." But if one Native can afford to purchase an Assameeship while another cannot, I should allow him to do so.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The average value of an Assameeship, I should suppose to be about 300 Rupees. They must have increased in value as the mounting, dress and equipment of the men has become more expensive.

I do not think they have any effect upon the efficiency of the Corps in horses and equipments or conduct of duty, one way or the other.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,  
*Commandant-in-Chief in the Frontier,*  
*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Merit and seniority combined.

2.

They are generally intelligent, useful and efficient as could be expected under the present construction of the service which is such that the so-called Native Officers are not really Officers at all.

3.

Generally so.

4.

No special examination is adopted that I am aware of. I have strong opinion that all such examinations are fallacious.

5.

This must depend wholly on the personal characters, &c., of the individuals.

The full complement of European Officers proper for a Native Indian Regiment is, in my opinion, 4. The fact of the Commanding Officers and Subalterns of Troops and Companies being European is absolutely inconsistent with efficiency in our Native Indian Army.

There can be no native Officers in reality, where the youngest Cornet or Ensign command every native of every rank.

6.

In the Bombay Army the Native Officers have been generally most faithful and actively useful.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

In my opinion the Captains and Subalterns of Troops should be Native Commissioned Officers.

8.

Most inadvisable; the practice would be found to be most mischievous. Native Soldiers should not be commanded by any Europeans but gentlemen.

9.

It is in my opinion impossible to form a really good, trustworthy and efficient Native Indian Army, unless higher rank and position than the service now offers to them be thrown open to the Native Soldiers. Instead of abolishing the Commissioned ranks of Natives, I would make the Native Officers in effect Captains and Subalterns; give them real command and impose on them real responsibility.

10.

The pensions must have had, and have actually had, considerable effect in attaching men to the service.

11.

But in this case as in all others throughout the Indian Service, the attempt to prevent the possibility of abuse has crushed all life out of the system, and under a better arrangement the effect of the same amount of public expenditure in pensions would assuredly have been ten-fold greater than it is under existing regulations.

The Pensioners of each Regiment should remain attached to that Regiment.

Every man after 20 years' service might be allowed a moderate pension, and after 30 years' service a more liberal allowance. The Commanding Officer, in consultation with his Medical and other Officers, should have power to transfer men to the Regimental Pension List after the prescribed period of service, and such pensions should be borne on a separate roll as pensioners of such a Regiment. It should be at all times discretionary with Regimental Commanding Officers to discharge any man without pension. The pensioners should be considered as belonging to the Regiment and no other than the Regimental authorities should have any thing to do with them. They should reside and receive their pension at Regimental Head Quarters only. There is no circumstance regarding the organization of our Native Indian Army, which I am clearly convinced of than this; of the advantages and even necessity of fixed permanent Regimental Head Quarters where pensioners and families can all reside in safety and comfort, and where an ample supply of the very best material for our ranks would be continually in readiness to our hands.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I have heard the proposed fixed Head Quarters for Regiments objected to, because some stations must be much more favored by climate and present generally far more local advantages than other. But in practice this objection is found absolutely groundless. Permanent residents adopt themselves to the peculiarities of any locality, and the ingenuity men are called upon to exercise in counteracting local disadvantages, and a kind of pride which all men take more or less in overcoming difficulties soon causes them even to prefer their own place of abode however little it may be favored by nature to any other whatever.

The feeling is universal and the facts are beyond doubt.

I have myself for 12 years past seen the Head Quarters of my own Corps established with perfect success in the most unfavorable locality which could probably be formed on earth, and many of our pensioners now prefer continuing to reside at Jacobabad on the Sind Frontier rather than returning to their homes in Hindostan; although some of these pensioners continuing at the Regimental Head Quarters are Brahmins and high caste Hindoos, while Sind is a thoroughly Mahomedan country. Each Regimental Head Quarters would in fact, under the system proposed by me, become a Military Colony, where the rising generation would be continually educated for service in our ranks. Many of the best recruits in the Sind Irregular Horse have been thus born and bred as it were in the service.

12.

I cannot say.

13.

All promotion should go by merit only of which the Commanding Officer should be the sole judge. A Commanding Officer should have full power to admit Natives at once as Native Officers, if he thought proper to do so.

14.

Generally in the Bombay Army they are so.

15.

The qualifications of individuals of these different classes are so extremely various that it is almost impossible to institute such comparisons with advantage.

The Native Officers of the Bombay Army, even under the present organization, are, I think, perhaps superior in mere intelligence to the generality of European Non-Commissioned Officers, but very inferior to them in force of character and moral power. The Asiatic and European characters are in fact in many respects complimentary to each other.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

Four European Officers to each Regiment, Troop Officers Natives only. European Officers appointed to Regiments by careful selection, and other details as laid down in the annexed printed scheme.

17.

A fourth Officer might be added as Quarter-Master, and Commanding Officers should have full power to discharge, dismiss, enlist and promote all ranks of Natives. Commanding Officers should be allowed the selection of their own European subordinates.

18.

The Irregular Service is certainly generally preferred chiefly for the reason that in it the Native Officers are really, and not only nominally, Officers. But the services, Regular and Irregular, cannot be compared in this way, for there is more difference between individual Irregular Corps than between many of those belonging to distinct branches of the service.

---

 PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

## PUNJAUB IRREGULAR FORCE.

1.

As in the Infantry, the promotion is given to the best men ; preference being shown to Seniority where possible. Here we must explain what should indeed have been added to the corresponding answer in the Infantry Paper, that an endeavour has been made, (though not so steadily persevered in as it might have been) to keep up a proportion of races among the Native Officers, and Non-Commissioned Officers, as well as among the men of a Corps, so that this consideration often decided a promotion.

2.

Certainly so.

3.

They are selected on that account.

4.

See corresponding answer in the Infantry Paper.

5.

No reply required.

6.

The only instance we can read of Mutiny among the Paunjub Irregular Cavalry was a partial one in the 2nd Paunjub Cavalry at

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Delhi. It was confined to the Hindoostanee section of the Corps ; and the 3 Hindootanee Native Officers were the ringleaders. The Sikh Native Officers of the same Squadron on this occasion warned the European Officers that something was wrong among the Hindoostanees ; though they had not been admitted to their counsel and could not say what was meditated. The mutineers made overtures to a Pathan, Native Officer of a Paunjub Infantry Regiment, who immediately gave information, and the ringleaders were hanged on the spot.

**7 to 9.**

No replies required to Nos. 7, 8 and 9.

**10.**

See corresponding answer in the Bengal Native Infantry Paper.

**11.**

Ditto.

**12.**

Ditto.

**13.**

Wherever existing it should be abolished ; and merit be the rule.

**14.**

See our corresponding answers in both the Paunjub and Bengal Native Infantry Papers.

**15 & 16.**

No replies required to Nos. 15 and 16.

**17.**

There are now three European Officers, and a fourth " doing duty," (not including the Medical Officer;) and this is the complement we would advocate.

**18.**

No reply required.

**19 & 20.**

No reply required to Nos. 19 and 20.

**21.**

None should be mounted by Government. Not only does a man take less interest in the Government horse ; but in critical times the Trooper, who rides a Government horse, has a direct inducement to desert ; the Trooper who rides his own has nothing to lose.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

22.

We believe about 700 Rupees.

23.

The Government Studs in India.

24.

The Troopers of both services prefer the Mares of Hindoostan, failing which they look for horses in the Punjab, and only take Northern horses in the last resort, because they cannot stand the heat or quick work, though they are admirable for Artillery.

25.

Hitherto not more than 125 Rupees (though "Chunda," or Horse Fund allowance 150 Rupees) for which the reasons will presently be shown.

26.

There is great scarcity of Horses, and yearly increasing.

27.

For Europeans of light weight and short height there is no horse like the Arab, for he stands heat and exposure and poor food in a wonderful manner. But Arabs are too small for such European Dragoons as have hitherto been in India; and to mount such men the only horses are—*1stly*, New South Wales, *2ndly*, Cape, *3dly*, Stud. For draught the Northern horses are excellent, but when taken to Hindoostan, they fall off in condition and are rejected. If the Artillery in the Punjab, from Peshawur to Umballa were limited to the Northern horses, it would greatly ease the demand upon the Government Stud, and other sources of supply for the Cavalry, and when in course of relief the Artillery went to Hindoostan, the horses should be mutually exchanged between the relieving and relieved Troops or Batteries so as to keep the Northern horses in a congenial climate. We would also suggest that all Stud Bred Colts should be gelded, and thus admit of mares being used with them in the ranks.

28.

We think it very advisable that the Studs should be maintained. No source of supply can be spared. But we should think that the Stud could be placed both on a better and cheaper footing. It is the general opinion that the Stud Colts are pampered, and that their constitutions are made delicate by high feeding; so that when hard work and poor food overtake them on a campaign they fall off and lose condition, and this seems proved by the very different result among the Fillies, which being rejected from the Government service, remain with

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

the Zemindars, get hard hoofs, tough constitutions, muscular legs, and good wind, and are at last bought cheap by sowars in the Irregular Cavalry, who prefer them to any other stamp of horse for their real serviceable qualities.

29.

Used to be 20 Rs., but is now 25 Rupees.

30.

The former rate of 20 Rupees had a long and fair trial, and was unquestionably insufficient, and more so the farther the corps were sent up Country. The extra five Rupees supply all that was wanted, and ought not to be increased. But we advocate the improvement of the pay of Native Officers Commissioned and Non-Commissioned with other modifications as detailed in subjoined Appendix A.

30b.

There was no debt in the Irregular Cavalry of the Punjab Force. Bankers were not allowed; and great attention was paid by the Officers to prevent debt. From time to time, advances were taken from Government for the purchase of horses when any unusual mortality had occurred. This saved the men greatly. In the Bengal Irregular Cavalry there was a Banker in every Regiment, and every Regiment was in debt from 30,000 to 60,000 Rupees. Corps have been known to owe a lakh of Rupees.

31.

See answer 30.

32.

In the Punjab Irregular Cavalry, the value of an Assamee is simply that of the horse Equipments, Arms, and Accoutrements, nothing more is allowed to be given or taken. In the Bengal Irregular Cavalry more than the value is, we believe, invariably given; but the amount is very various. The number of Assamees held by the Native Officers, Commissioned and Non-Commissioned, is the same in the Punjab and Bengal Irregular Cavalry as shown in the margin, but during the crisis of 1858, double the number was sanctioned in the Punjab for the sake of raising men. No capitalists out of the corps are allowed to hold Assamees. The objections to Bargeers or Assamees held by Native Officers, &c. &c. are numerous and substantial. They are more the private servants of their Silladar than the Government, and the Silladar constantly favors them in matters of duty for the sake of saving his horse while as constantly quarrelling and bickering on other points. The settlement of these dis-

3 Ressaider,	5-15
3 Ressaider,	5-15
1 Wurdee Major,	5- 5
6 Naib Ressaider,	2-12
6 Jemadars,	2-12
6 Kote Duffadars,	1- 6
48 Duffadars,	1-48
Total Bargeers	113

## APPENDIX A.

*Statement shewing the present Pay of the Irregular Native Cavalry in the Punjab Force and how it is proposed to increase it.*

Ranks.	Monthly Present	Pay Proposed.	Decrease.	Increase.	Remarks.
3 Ressaidars, ..... each	Rs. 150	1 at Rs. 300 1 at " 250 1 at " 200	..... ..... .....	150 100 50	Each by our proposal loses 5 Bargeers equal to 20 Rs. a month.
3 Ressaidars, ..... each	Rs. 80	1 at Rs. 150 1 at " 135 1 at " 120	..... ..... .....	70 55 40	Ditto.
6 Naib Ressaidars, ..... each	Rs. 50	None.	300 Rs.	..... ..... .....	These Officers are drones and should be got rid of.
6 Jemadars, ..... each	Rs. 45	2 at Rs. 80 2 at " 70 2 at " 60	..... ..... .....	70 50 30	Will lose 2 Bargeer # each, equal to 8 Rs. a month.
6 Kote Duffadars, ..... each	Rs. 35	Rs. 45	.....	60	Lose 1 Bargeer each.
48 Duffadars, ..... each	Rs. 28	Rs. 35	.....	336	Ditto.
Pay Duffadar's Staff Allowance,	Rs. 6	Rs. 6	.....	.....	
6 Nishan Burdars, ..... each	Rs. 28	Rs. 35	.....	42	
6 Trumpeters, ..... each	Rs. 25	Rs. 30	.....	30	
Staff Allowance of Trumpet Major,.....	5	10	.....	5	
Ditto for one assistant Trumpet Major,.....	None.	5	.....	5	
500 Sowars, ..... each	Rs. 25	Rs. 25	.....	.....	
Wordee Major, .....	105	150	.....	45	Will lose 5 Bargeers.
1 Nakeeb, .....	20	None.	20	.....	
1 Native Farrier, .....	None.	40	.....	40	
1 Moonshee, .....	30	40	.....	10	
Horse Allowance of two Native Doctors, ..... each	Rs. 6-8	15	.....	17	This is to be irrespective of an increase of pay which is strongly recommended.

**APPENDIX A.— ( Continued.)**

*Statement shewing the present Pay of the Irregular Native Cavalry in the Punjab Force and how it is proposed to increase it.*

Ranks.	Monthly Present.	Pay Proposed.	Decrease.	Increase.	Remarks.
6 Naulbunds, .....each	None.	Rs. 15	.....	90	A Sowar now does this duty.
2 Lascars, .....each	Rs. 5	1 at 5 1 at 7	.....	2	
1 Bazar Chowdrie, .....	11	11	.....	.....	
1 Mootsuddee, .....	5	5	.....	.....	
3 Weighmen, .....each	3	4	.....	3	
<b>Total,.....</b>	.....	.....	Rs. 320	Rs. 1,300	Amounts to an increase of Rs. 980.
		Yearly increase,	Rs.	10,760	

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

putes is very difficult and troublesome. The Bargeer on a Silladar's horse is not of the same use to Government as a Khooduspah\* and

\* One who owns the horse the aggregate of all the Bargeers is no less he rides.

than  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the whole Corps. The best Commandants in the Punjab Cavalry advocate the abolition of Bargeers, and on the whole we decidedly concur with them. The only advantage of the Bargeer system is that the Native Officers like it, to meet which, we would propose that the pay of each Native Officer be increased by way of compensation. We are quite certain that if Bargeers were abolished, desertions would be diminished, for the opportunity of acquiring a horse, arms and equipments, tempt numbers of this class to desert our service and join the enemy as a "Khooduspah."

33.

In the North-Western Provinces, we believe the pay of mounted Police varied from 18 to 20 Rupees, but has now raised to 25 Rupees. In the Punjab it was 20 Rupees, but Government has been asked to allow 24 Rupees.

34.

We do not know what the present organization of the North-Western Province mounted Po-

1 Bessaldar,		..	100
2 Jemadars,	60 Rupees	...	120
4 Duffadars,	30 "	..	120
4 Naib Duffadars,	25 "	..	100
1 Moonshee,		..	30
1 Trumpeter,		..	20
99 Sowars,		..	1980
			<hr/>
	Total Rupees,	..	2470

lice is. It used to consist of a few Sowars for each district strictly local. In the Punjab, each district has one or more Ressalahs of the constitution shown in the margin.

35.

In the North-Western Provinces we cannot say. In the Punjab the majority are Seikhs and Paunjaubee Mahomedans with a sprinkling of Hindoostanees from the South and Pathans from the North and some Belochees, &c.

36.

There are always more candidates for the mounted than for the foot Police, and the Captain had little trouble in filling up vacancies especially before the present War, when Military employment was very scarce among the people of the Punjab, in comparison with Hindoostanees.

37.

It was just enough for men and horse to exist on, but left no margin for any emergency or accident to either.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

38.

There was no difference before the late War, between the pay of the Horse Police-man and that of the Irregular Trooper. Both had 20 Rupees a month. This rate was found quite inadequate to the requirements of the Irregular Horse in the Punjab, and it has lately been raised by Government to 25 Rupees. The greatest difficulty was experienced previous to this increase in coaxing Punjabee Recruits to the Frontier.

---

MAJOR GENERAL S. COTTON,  
*Commanding Peshawar Division.*  
*Irregular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

It varies, according to the ideas of the Commandant, for the time being, and of the Government in case of Commissioned Officers. There is no rule that it shall be based on Seniority.

2.

A few are, a great number are the reverse; of the few that are, they are men that have had rapid promotion and are still in their prime. Of the others, they are generally illiterate and bigotted men, who have been permitted to rise by Seniority from good behaviour, or rather from having nothing recorded against them.

3.

Those who, on account of their acquirements and superior intelligence, have been rapidly pushed on, of course are: the others are often the reverse and have to depend for every information that requires to be written, on a Sowar.

4.

None.

6.

As far as I know the Native Officers generally lead the Mutineers or prompt them, pushing the men forward, and keeping in the back ground themselves.

7 to 9.

Not answered.

10.

Yes, I believe they have, although they do not appear to have influenced the conduct of the Native Army in the recent Mutiny.

11.

It should be modified with reference to the Irregular Cavalry, who should be put in precisely the same footing as the line, and to



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

prevent its being overcrowded, I would suggest greater care in the selection of Recruits who, after being 2 months in the service, should be inspected by a Medical Committee, and men who do not seem strong and healthy should be discharged; they should again be inspected minutely by the inspecting Officer, and he should discharge any he does not approve of; after this they should be subject to half-yearly inspections by a Medical Committee, till they have been five years in the service.

12.

I do not know.

13.

Most certainly merit and efficiency should only be the rule.

14.

No, not the best of them.

15 &amp; 16.

Not answered.

17 to 20.

Yes, I would make it allowable to fill up any third vacancy in the Commissioned grades, by a direct nomination thereto of a young intelligent man who had not served previously, his first three years of service being on probation.

21.

Government should, of course, give every assistance in its power; I would suggest that all Stud Horses, that are not required for the Artillery and Dragoons, should be offered to Officers Commanding Irregular Cavalry Corps, at their Chunda rate, and that all Corps should have this advantage alike.

22.

I do not know.

23.

I do not know.

24.

From Government Stud Districts, the large fairs, and the Afghan dealers of these; the mares from the Stud Districts are the best; the Afghan about the worst horses.

25.

About one hundred and eighty rupees.

26.

Scarcely.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**27.**

No.

**28.**

They should undoubtedly be maintained, they produce the best horses (mares) now in the Irregular Cavalry, and Government should either increase the number of the Stud, or, at any rate, have Stallions sent, in greater numbers than at present round all the Districts where there are no studs ; some were sent to the Sindh Saugor District about five years ago, and the Irregular Cavalry Corps in the Division have obtained excellent remounts from their produce.

**29.**

Twenty Rupees a month.

**30.**

Certainly not.

**30 b.**

They are all necessarily more or less in debt.

**31.**

It should, and fixed rates of Chunda, &c., be established, the lowest sum, that a really efficient Corps can be maintained on, is twenty-five Rupees per sower per month.

**32.**

In most Corps the value is fixed. In the 7th Irregular Cavalry, it is Rupees 200, which includes the horse only ; arms, clothing, &c., being valued and sold separately.

Ressaldars and Ressaids are allowed five Bargeers, Naik Ressaids and Jemadars two, Kote Duffadars and Duffadars one ; I would recommend that Ressaids and Ressaids be limited to two. The bargeer system has been abolished for years in the Bengal Irregular Cavalry, and with the greatest advantage. The few now retained are only to enable the Officers to be always mounted on parade in case of one horse being sick, &c.

The bargeer system is the worst possible, the owners of the Assamees looking on them as mere investment of Capital only, try to make the most profit out of them.

**33 to 38.**

Not answered.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

MAJOR GENERAL SIR HOPE GRANT, G. C. B.,

*Commanding Oude Irregular Force.*

1. I believe promotion in the Bengal Irregular Cavalry was based chiefly on seniority. In the original Corps all the Commissioned Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers are or were very aged men.

2. In the Punjaub Cavalry, where promotion is based on merit, the Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers are remarkable for their intelligence and efficiency.

3. The Native Officers in the Punjaub Cavalry were chiefly men of family and influence. The Non-Commissioned Officers selected from the ranks were certainly, as a rule, the best to be found.

4. I am aware of no test or examination being in force prior to promotion, nor do I think it would be advisable that there should be any.

5 to 9. No replies.

10. Retiring pensions have undoubtedly much attached the people to our service and rule.

The convulsion, from which we are now emerging, can hardly be said to prove the contrary. The swoop was so universal, the presence of Europeans so rare that they may well be pardoned for thinking the rule at an end.

11. The Pension system should undoubtedly be maintained, though the opportunity should not be lost to modify and amend it.

12. No reply.

13. Merit and efficiency should rule all promotion, without them there can be no reliance on the conduct of a Corps.

14. The Native Commissioned Officers on Courts Martial, invariably, are guided by the nod and inclination of the Superintending Officer, they know no higher justice than his wish.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**15 & 16.** No reply.

**17.**

I think the present system of Officers is good, two Subalterns should be attached to each Corps as in the Punjaub.

**18.**

The classes, which have hitherto entered the Regular and Irregular Branches are distinct. The latter attached a class for whom the Regular service has no attractions; men of some money, fond too of the position and importance which belonged to the Irregular Branch. Oude supplied 3rds of the Recruits for the Regular Cavalry, yet I have never seen an Oude man an Irregular.

**19 & 20.** No reply.

**21.**

The efficiency and tone of the Cavalry would be changed if Horses were supplied by Government, better that all should remain on the footing which has worked so well.

**22 & 23.** No reply.

**24.**

The Irregular Cavalry formerly drew their Horses from the Zemindars whose mares were visited by the Stud Stallions during the last few years. Afghanistan, and the countries beyond have contributed greatly to our wants. The fathers and brothers of many of the Sowars are large Zemindars who breed especially for the service particularly was this the case about Bareilly and Hurriannah.

**25.**

The average cost of horses has now reached rupees 175 ( I speak of a date prior to the mutiny) or even Rupees 200, there has been a gradual rise effected since the increase of the Irregular Branch.

**26.**

The requirements of the Irregular Cavalry were, with difficulty, met of late.

**27.**

I would castrate the Stallions passed into the service and take mares also. By having good mares in the country you would breed good horses, which now you have not the power of doing.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

28.

The Government Studs ought to be maintained, but a better system of breeding horses would be established. By introducing mares into the Cavalry Service the expense of mounting it would be very much diminished, and the State might then bear the expense of keeping up a certain number of brood mares. Without good brood mares in the country, you will never improve the stock of Horses, even though the Stallion is good. I would be inclined to purchase Arab Stallions when they could be obtained. It is a much handier class of horse than the European in this country.

The Cape Horse is good, but I don't think the Australian stands the country so well.

The Dunee breed of Horses in the Punjaub is most valuable. Our demand during the last 7 or 8 years has been so extensive that few remain. Central India again might be looked to with great advantage.

29.

The pay of the Troops prior to the Mutiny was 20 Rupees.

30.

The pay was insufficient; this has been felt by every one connected with Irregulars and was generally acknowledged. Corps were overwhelmed in debt, and would have been unable in many instances to take the field, but for the Banker. In any Corps the Sowar never saw his pay, the whole abstract passed into the hands of the Banker, who deducted his per centage, varying from 24 to 48 per cent., and doled out subsistence money to his patient.

30b.

See 30.

31.

Since March last it has been announced in the Punjaub that the Sowar's pay had been increased to Rupees 25. The Police generally, throughout the kingdom, have received the same notification: it has not been made known to the Irregulars generally, but we act on the supposition that it is the case.

32.

The Assamees system in the Irregular Cavalry differs in Corps; some maintain a fixed price, others again submit them to auction, but the whole question is in the Banker's hands. He sells up one man a bad or ruined debtor and buys for another whose race is yet to be run; but the system is false, any thing in excess of the value of the seller's Horse and appointments is clearly a sale of the position, a kind of

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

traffic which Government could never have intended to authorize. The Regulations lay down the number of Assamees to be held by Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers, and prohibits the possession of them by outsiders, but what with the smallness of the pay and the grasp of the Banker, virtually the majority are held out of the Corps. I would not tie down a Commandant too tightly about Bargheers, something should be left to discretion and circumstances; heretofore complaints have been made of the low character of the Bargheers, it should be remembered the pay (Rupees 7) with every thing to find was not sufficient to tempt a good man unless attached to or connected with an Officer, or one who had hopes of becoming eventually a Khodaspah. I think no man should be entitled to *claim* Bargheers; the fact of a man being a Duffadar should not give him a Bargheer, nor would I exclude a man of character and influence, although but a sower from the possession of an Assamee. Bargheers certainly attached men of position to the service by giving them the importance they love; they are not unfavourable to discipline, and if fairly paid would be desirable to some extent.

33.

No replies to Nos. 33, 34, 35, 36, and 37.

38.

I think it was a mistake making the pay of the Horse Police and the Irregular Cavalry the same, *viz.* Rupees 25 a month; but I think 25 Rupees are sufficient for an Irregular Horseman.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL J. JACOB, C. B.,

*Commandant-in-Chief on the Frontier.*

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

It is not possible to reply to these questions generally inasmuch as the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Army is not of homogeneous construction. Some Corps differ from others as much as Her Majesty's Life Guards do from Cossacks; and I would observe that this remark applies to the questions respecting Irregular Cavalry generally.

In the Sind Horse promotion by merit alone is the rule, and the Commandant is the sole judge of such merit.

2.

The Commissioned Officers of the Sind Irregular Horse are generally very good, and whether in command of Troops and Squadrons with a regiment in a body or in Command of Detachments on dis-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

tant out-posts are, in my opinion, quite equal in efficiency within their own sphere of action to the average of Captains and Subalterns of the Regular Regiments.

**3.**

Undoubtedly so, being chosen for merit only their acquirements and qualifications are necessarily the highest.

**4.**

In the Sind Irregular Horse no man is promoted from the ranks until he shall have passed an Examination in his Drill.

Before promotion to be pay-Duffadar, the candidate is required to pass a strict examination as to his knowledge of Accounts, Persian writing, &c. &c. No other special examination is used. But the first selection of a man from the ranks of the private soldiers is the most important move of all, for from that time he is necessarily more prominently brought to the notice of his Officers so that his whole service is one continuous examination; this is the state of things in the Sind Irregular Horse, the practice differs greatly in other Corps.

**5.**

No reply required.

**6.**

Nothing could have been more noble than the conduct of the men and Officers of every grade in the Sind Irregular Horse on the occasion of the late Mutiny and attempted rebellion on the said frontier. Reports on this subject in full have been made to Government in the Secret Dept. Never were native Indian Soldiers so tried and tempted; but not a man failed in his duty. There never has been the least symptoms of a tendency to any idea of the possibility of Mutiny in our own ranks. I speak of the Sind Irregular Horse only; regarding other Corps I am not so well informed.

**7 to 9.**

No replies required.

**10 to 12.**

The answers given in full to similar questions regarding the Light Cavalry, &c. apply with equal force here and to every part of the Army.

**13.**

Any system of promotion for any other reason than merit and efficiency is and must always be most mischievous.

**14.**

The Native Officers of the Sind Irregular Horse have not been accustomed to Courts Martial, but I have always found them quite as fit for any duty required of them as European Subalterns generally.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**15 & 16.** No replies required.

**17 & 18.** The answers given to similar questions respecting other branches of the service apply with equal force to the Irregular Cavalry.

**19.** No, assuredly not.

**20.** Under the term Irregular Cavalry, troops are classed together as of one description which in reality differ from each other as much as the Numantian Horsemen did from the troopers of Gustavus Adolphus. Really Irregular Cavalry, such as our Belooch Horse or some of the Russian Cossacks, are often most useful, are frequently invaluable in war. But we must have Regular Cavalry also, we could not carry on war without such an arm, and to the question as it stands it must be answered that we must keep up both Regular and Irregular Cavalry.

But the Sind Irregular Horse though classed with the Irregulars is in reality more Regular than of the Regulars themselves, and I apprehend that the question refers not to real regularity or irregularity of the Corps, but to peculiarity of organization. It is the practice now to style all Corps Irregular in which the horses and arms are the property of the men, and all Corps Regular in which the horses and arms belong to, and are maintained by, the State.

But this practice leads to numerous erroneous impressions, and under this classification Cromwell's Ironsides themselves would become Irregulars.

Now it is quite certain that if the European Officers were properly selected and left to rule their regiments as they found best, a perfectly Regular Native Indian Cavalry could be formed on the Silladar system ( that is the system of the men furnishing their own horses and arms ) which should be more efficient than any Cavalry now known in the East, whether European or Asiatic, and which should at the same time cost the State only two-thirds of the cost of the existing Native Light Cavalry of India.

**21.** The whole should be on the Silladar principle, and all arrangements and detail be left to the Regimental Commander.

**22.** Five hundred rupees each.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

23.

All parts of the world.

24.

From the districts in which each Corps may be serving.

The Sind Horse is chiefly supplied from Beloochistan and Herat.

25.

It is impossible to answer this question generally; it is like asking what is the average cost of horses in the world.

The cost of the Horses of the Sind Irregular Horse averages about 225 Rupees each.

26.

I believe not.

27 &amp; 28.

Yes, the present system absolutely excludes from our ranks a very great number of the very best horses in the world and introduces many of the worst. The powers of a horse are not to be estimated by measuring his height at the withers.

The breed of saddle horses in England has notoriously degenerated exactly in proportion as it has increased in height (*vide* among other authorities a little book lately published, entitled "on the Deterioration of our Saddle Horses.") If we look back to the English turf about a century ago, we see horses standing no higher than our ordinary Arabs at present, running such distances as four and six miles heats, with such weights as 12 stone on their backs, and doing this in such time as is now unapproachable. In 1722, flying Childers, with 9 stone 2lbs ran over the Bacon course at New Market, four miles, one furlong and one hundred and thirty-eight yards in seven minutes and thirty seconds.

In the same year he beat Lord Droghedas' Chaunter, ten stone each, six miles for a thousand guineas; when six years old (1721) he beat Almanzer and others over the round course at New Market, three miles, six furlongs and 93 yards in six minutes and forty seconds, weight 9 stone 2lbs. In fact, this short compact strong constitutioned horse, with 10 or even 12 stone on his back, could with ease have doubly or trebly distanced in four or five miles, the best horses now in England, even giving the latter two or three stone.

Flying Childers was got by the Derby Arabian out of Betty Seedeas, whose grandam was a Barb mare and whose sire was the

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Seedes Arabian, he was thus of nearly pure Arab and Barb blood, and was, what would now in England be called, a very small horse having been only 15 hands high.

Again twenty years later little Cartouch also of Arab stock, standing only 14 hands high, ran repeatedly four and six mile heats, carrying 12 stone, and at these weights and distances he beat every thing that could be brought against him.

The endurance of the horses of that day bred from Arabs was quite as remarkable as were their performances themselves; they remained running season after season, sound, fresh and always winning for six or seven years together, and one of them won 28 times.

The long-legged, feeble-bodied race horses of the present day are seldom able to run more than one public race, carrying 8 stone 7lbs for a mile and a half or two miles at most, after this effort they are generally unfit to stand further training, their legs having generally failed.

The introduction of the tall weak constitutioned modern English horse into the great Continental Studs of Europe, has ruined them as it has done the studs in India, and for some years past, it has been found necessary to have recourse to Arab Horses alone for breeding purposes; but meanwhile the native breeds in France and Germany have been ruined, and a new race of animals has to be created.

In India the introduction of the English horse has been fatal to our studs.

These establishments might, under proper management, have been invaluable to the Anglo-Indian Government; as it is, they have proved worse than a dead loss, for all the old native breed of horses in India have been ruined by them, as in Austria, Prussia and France.

The Indian breeding studs should undoubtedly be maintained, and those in the Bombay Presidency on a much larger scale than heretofore. But they should be established on entirely different principles from those now acted on.

Superintendents should be appointed, who possess some considerable knowledge of the physiology of horse breeding, as well as some practical knowledge of the details of the business. The Studs should be established in localities favorable to the health of the horse, and particularly where the monsoon rains are light. A number of the best and most healthy mares of any breed procurable (as Arab mares

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

are not to be had at any price) should be taken to commence with, and thereafter none but the best and purest Arab blood should ever be admitted into the breeding Stud. Agents should be sent into the interior of Arabia to buy the best horses procurable for stallions; but if this were found impracticable, sufficiently good horses for our purpose would, after a time, readily be found in the Bombay market.

Let none but Arab blood be admitted; let due attention be paid to the shape and particularly to the constitutional qualities of individual horses; let all be excluded from the breeding stock in whom any constitutional defect might be apparent; appoint properly qualified officers to superintend the business, and it is certain that our India studs would, in twenty years' time, produce an abundant supply of the best horses on Earth.

Meanwhile abolish all remount Committees; appoint properly qualified remount Agents at Bombay and Kurrachee; permit these remount Agents to buy up for the service all the Arab horses which they consider fit for Cavalry purposes, without any sort of attention to the height of the animals at the withers or any other particular measurement. If you can get a large and really well-shaped blood horse, so much the better, but large blood horses are very rare, and a horse of 14 hands high is often able to carry twenty stone with perfect ease, while one of inferior breed of 15 or 16 hands may not be able to carry half so much, half so far, or so fast.

The best horse I ever had was under 14 hands in height; he was of great depth and size of body, was equal to any weight, and was the best hunter of his day (1831 to 1835) in the Deccan, he carried me (eleven stone) 40 miles in three hours at a trot. I swam the Godaverry on him at Kopee Graum in the height of the monsoon, when the ferry boat had been carried away by the stream which was running so strong that no other boatmen could be persuaded again to attempt the passage, and though carried down a mile or more, the good horse took me accoutred in heavy hunting gear across the torrent as steadily and safely as if he had been going along the dry road. There was nothing that this horse could not do well; he worked hard for me for fifteen years, was never sick or sorry, he was as strong as an elephant as fast as an antelope, (I once ran one to death on him in the Deccan, a performance which at that time was thought beyond the powers of any horse) and as gentle and docile as a child; but such a horse would have been excluded from the ranks of our Cavalry, because he was two inches below the standard height.

From enquiries that I have made in Arabia, as well as in Bombay or elsewhere, I have every reason to believe that if the idea of a

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

standard height was done away with, and horses only selected on consideration of their ability to do the work required of them, nearly two thousand Arab horses annually could be supplied for our remounts more than are now purchased.

As it is, the Arab breeders are disgusted and will not bring their horses to market. I have heard them declare that we prefer bad horses to good ones, and low bred, tall, long-legged, useless creatures to compact powerful little blood Arabs, who would work the others into fits in a week, and there is much truth in the declaration.

**29.**

The pay is different in different regiments; that of the Sind Irregular horse is thirty rupees for horse and man complete.

**30. 30b & 31.**

This rate of pay is undoubtedly too low and should be increased. No debts are permitted in the Sind Irregular horse. I am informed that the Poona horse and other Corps suffer much inconvenience from debt. Two hundred men of the Poona horse were transferred to the Sind Irregular horse, and they brought with them debts, acknowledged by the Commanding Officer, to the amount of 40,000 Rupees.

**32.**

It differs much in different Corps. In the Sind Irregular horse the sale of Assamees is allowed, permission being obtained first in every instance from the Commanding Officer; the sales being by open and free auction to the highest bidder, no buying-in permitted; every case is specially considered. Any man wishing to buy a horse (Assamee) asks permission to do so at the orderly room. This system works well in all the Sind Irregular horse; but in this as in other things, "whatever is best administered is best," and all these arrangements should be left to Commanding Officers who will usually produce the best results when permitted to work after their own fashion.

**33.**

In Sind there are two distinct classes of mounted Police, the one organized like the Bengal Irregular Cavalry, receiving 20 Rs. a month per man and horse, and the other perfectly Irregular Beloochee Horse, receiving 15 Rupees per month per man and horse.

**35.**

The first class is chiefly composed of men of Hindoostan; the second class of the Beloochee tribes of Upper Sind.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

36.

By Volunteers; no agency is employed and no precautions are taken.

37.

The pay 20 and 15 Rupees respectively, is I think, sufficient.

38.

It does not appear to me that the difference between the pay of the Police and that of the Irregular Cavalry can in any way affect the supply of horses for the latter.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL J. F. BRADFORD, C. B.,  
*Commanding Meerut Division.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

No reply.

2.

Generally intelligent and efficient.

3.

No reply.

4.

Ditto.

5.

Ditto.

6.

Certainly not; as far as my knowledge goes, I believe it will be found that the Native Officers have in most cases sided with the Mutineers.

7 to 9.

No replies.

10.

Not generally, but in some instances no doubt retiring pensions have had effect.

11.

The system might be modified with advantage.

12.

No reply.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 13.** Promotion, in my opinion, should be based on seniority and merit combined.
- 14.** I would have no Native Courts Martial.
- 15 & 16.** No replies.
- 17.** I think not; the best plan is to select officers as at present.
- 18.** The Irregulars are most popular. I have never heard any reason assigned that I remember; but I have no doubt preference is given to them, from their being less trammelled with discipline, and less under the eye of the European Officer than the Regular Cavalry, and to the degree of respectability conferred by the ownership of a horse.
- 19 & 20.** No replies.
- 21.** They should, as at present, be mounted on their own horses, which is probably the best part of the system.
- 22 & 23.** The horses were chiefly supplied from Government Studs, and the average, for years 1854-55 and 1855-56, was 466 Rupees each.
- The accounts for the two last years will, I am told, give a lower average, but the Stud Officers are unable to furnish it, and refer me to Major Newbolt, Auditor of Accounts, in Calcutta.
- N. B.—Formerly the price of remounts was much higher.
- 24.** From the country generally.
- 25.** About 175 Rupees.
- 26 to 28.** The present requirements of the mounted Branch of the Army are not adequately met by the Government studs; but it should be remembered that the demand has lately increased in a very great degree for all sorts of Horses; and without indenting on Australia and the Cape, it would be impossible to meet these demands.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

For Horse Artillery in particular, the Colonial Cattle are well adapted, and I am of opinion that the Artillery generally should be supplied from this source ; but still I think it would not be advisable to trust altogether to distant Colonies and Foreign Countries for our supply of Horses. I am therefore favorable to maintaining the studs which have proved of great use in furnishing Remounts to all the mounted branches, including the Police Force. The Country breed, whatever it may have been, has greatly deteriorated and now supplies but few horses for Horse Artillery or Dragoons.

**29, 30, 30b. & 31.** The pay of the old Regiments was 20 Rupees per month, but I believe it has lately been raised to 25 Rupees. 20 Rupees a month was not sufficient, it should be 25 Rupees, and this ought to be sufficient to ensure men being properly mounted.

The men of the Irregular Cavalry are generally embarrassed by debt.

**32.**

I am not sufficiently acquainted with the Irregular Cavalry to answer the first part of this question, but I understand the restrictions have been very properly put upon the number of Bargeers allowed to Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned officers, and I believe the Bargeer system is not favorable to the efficiency of a corps, in horses or in any other way.

**33.**

25 Rupees a month.

**34 to 37.** No replies.

**38.**

I believe the pay is the same.

---

BRIGADIER J. CHRISTIE,

*Commanding Dinapore Division.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Bengal Army.*

**1.**

Merit ; but if both seniority and merit are combined, of course the better.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**2.**

Yes, if they are promoted as above ; and it is the Commanding Officer's own fault if any but efficient Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers are promoted. No man should be promoted to the grade of Kote Duffadar who is not fit to be promoted to a Commissioned Officer eventually.

**3.**

No reply.

**4.**

I never had any ; having been intimately acquainted with the qualifications of all my Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers.

**5.**

No reply.

**6.**

As a rule certainly ; in the late mutiny the Native Officers have not evinced that fidelity which might have been expected of them, nor have they given any information or aided in quelling the mutiny, and as many, if not more, have gone with the mutineers as have remained faithful.

**7 to 9.**

No reply.

**10.**

In former days I thought they had, but from the day of the outbreak they cast all retiring Pensions to the winds as well as Honors conferred for distinguished conduct in the Field. For the time they were perfectly demented, but I believe they bitterly repent it now.

**11.**

After the re-organization of the Irregular Cavalry, I would recommend the system of Pensions should be retained ; moreover, that the pensions of Irregular Cavalry should be increased to the same scale as the Regular Regiments, because they are no longer Local, but liable to move from station to station the same as the Regular Troops, and employed in all warlike operations to a great extent ; moreover, it is a notorious fact that they are far harder worked than the Regular Troops, and yet a Naick in the latter gets the same pension as a Jemadar in the Irregular Cavalry, viz., 7 Rupees per mensem.

**12.**

I have no means of answering this question.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**13.**

Promotion for merit and efficiency should be the rule decidedly.

**14.**

Perfectly efficient on Panchyats which I strongly recommend should be re-introduced, not so on Courts Martial.

**15 & 16.**

No reply.

**17.**

I consider, as only three Officers are allowed to Regiments of Irregular Cavalry, they ought to be the best procurable in the Army, and selected with great care, for every thing depends on them. They ought to be superior Horsemen, with great dash, and well up to their work in every respect.

**18.**

Decidedly the Irregulars, as it is considered more honorable to ride one's own horse, and are altogether a more respectable class of men than those that enter the Regular Regiments, small Zemindars, &c., Although the Regulars are better paid, still, the men who compose the Irregular Cavalry will not take service in the Regular Cavalry, disliking the constant parades, stable duty morning and evening, &c. I made a point of never interfering with the men with regard to their horses, provided they were in good condition and up to any amount of work.

**19 & 20.**

No reply required.

**21.**

All the Native Cavalry should be Irregular and ride their own horses; Government mounting them would be much more expensive; moreover, particularly on detached duties, the horses would not have that care taken of them, as if they were the men's own property. They would be nothing more than a Corps of Bargheers, and consequently lose that self-respect which they at present possess.

**22.**

I have heard it affirmed that the horses supplied from the Government Studs do not stand Government less than Rupees 800 a head, taking into consideration price of buildings, Stud Officers' importation of stallions from England, interest of money, &c. I have no means of ascertaining the price of Foreign horses imported by Government from the Cape and New South Wales lately.

**23.**

From the Government Studs, Cape of Good Hope, and New South Wales, and a few from Afghanistan; with exception of the latter, they are bred from English and Arab stock.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24.

From all parts of Hindoostan and Affghanistan, and from the rejected colts and fillies at the Government studs. I would recommend that all the latter description of cattle should be offered in the first instance to Regiments of Irregular Cavalry, previous to being disposed of to other parties by the Government Stud Officers or sent to Calcutta for sale. I have purchased many horses of this description from the Haupper stud which turned out particularly well.

25.

A good Irregular Cavalry Horse is not to be had under Rs. 200, but many are admitted at a lower figure, say Rs. 150.

26.

I believe they were adequately met from the Government Studs up to the time of the mutiny; since then Foreign Horses have been imported to a great extent from the Cape and New South Wales, and I myself purchased a large number in Calcutta for H. M's. Dragoons and Royal Artillery in September last.

27.

I would recommend that the Natives of this country should be again encouraged to breed horses as was the case in former days. When I entered the service, and for years afterwards, we were principally mounted from this source, and got excellent horses for the Cavalry for Rs. 400 and Rs. 450 for Cavalry and Dragoons. I would also strongly recommend that much more care should be taken at the Government Studs in the selection of mares for breeding purposes. This is the principal thing to be looked to, to ensure good stock, and I am sorry to add it has been little attended to in the breeding districts. The merest tattoo mares being given in many instances to the Government Stallions; in short any brute the Natives choose to bring to the naulbund in charge of the horse in the district. At the yearly purchasing of Colts by the Stud Officers, I would also suggest that more care should be taken in the selection, and that quality more than quantity should be more attended to than I have reason to believe has been the case for many years past. I would here also strongly urge that in selecting Officers for employment in the Studs, the greatest care should be taken, that none who are not in every respect fit for the situation from their knowledge of horses, &c., &c., shall be appointed. To my knowledge the very reverse has been the case in more instances than one.

28.

Government Studs should be maintained, for in the event of War, Foreign Horses might not be obtained.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

29.

Twenty Rupees per mensem.

30.

No, certainly not; it has been most inadequate.

30b.

Very much so, generally deeply indebted to the Regimental Banker.

31.

Decidedly, and I would recommend the following scale. I consider the Ressaldars and Resaidars are sufficiently paid; that the Naib Ressaldars be raised to Rupees 55 per mensem; Jemadars to Rupees 50; Kote Duffadars to Rupees 40; Duffadars to Rupees 35; Trumpeters and Nugarchies to Rupees 30, and Sowars to Rupees 27.

32.

The only persons who can hold Assamees in the Irregular Cavalry Regiments are the Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers. Ressaldars and Resaidars 5 each. Naib Ressaldar and Jemadar 2 each. Kote Duffadars and Duffadars 1 each. None beyond this is allowed. A man *not* in the Regiment, cannot hold an Assamee on any terms; should such however be discovered, the Assamee is at once forfeited and given to a deserving Bargheer. I still advocate Bargheers to the above extent being allowed, as they much add to the respectability of the Commissioned and Non-Commissioned grades, and I have never found any bad effects from it, under a Commanding Officer who is well up to his work.

33.

I cannot answer this question as far as the North-Western Provinces are concerned, but the "Behar Horse" in this district get Rupees 25 per mensem.

34 to 37. No replies

38.

The only Horse Police Corps that I am acquainted with, is the "Behar Horse" in this district; they draw Rupees 5 more per mensem than our Irregular Cavalry, and yet they are not half so well mounted as the 9th Madras Cavalry was when I left it; but the "Behar Horse" is a new Corps, and allowances must be made, to say nothing of the great difficulty of procuring suitable horses at the present time.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL C. DAVIDSON,  
*Resident, Hyderabad.*

*Hyderabad Contingent Irregular Cavalry.*

1. Promotion is based on merit in the first grade, but afterwards on merit and seniority combined.
2. , Very intelligent as a body, useful and efficient.
3. Not generally ; but in the ranks there are men of good vernacular education.
4. It is ascertained that they are acquainted with their duty.
5. No reply required.
6. On a late occasion when a part of a Cavalry Corps that has since done excellent service evinced symptoms of mutiny, it was at the instigation of some of the Native Officers ; the greater proportion remained faithful to their European Officers, and by their endeavours the men had returned and were actually in performance of their duty before a body of Europeans arrived to coerce and punish the principal offenders.
- 7 to 9. No replies required.
10. The Hyderabad Cavalry were not in the receipt of pension previous to 1855.
11. The system of pensions should be maintained, but the Code modified to place the Irregular Cavalry on something like an equality with the Infantry, and in proportion to their superior rate of pay.  
 The pension of a Subadar of Infantry, whose pay is Company's Rupees 41-5-2 (3rd Class) after 20 years' service amounts to Company's Rupees 20-10-7, while that of a Ressaïdar the corresponding Cavalry rank is Company's Rupees 7-0-0, he receiving a pay of Company's Rupees 150-0-0, the same relative disproportion exists in the other grades. The wound pensions are very inadequate, the gradation laid down in the classification of the injury received, is not in my opinion the test of the amount of pension which resolves itself to the Sowar

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

that being disabled in the service of the State and pensioned, he loses his maintenance and is unable to support his family; at the time the Cavalry were not entitled to pensions exceptional cases for wounds were always admitted and more adequate grants conferred.

**12.**

The amount of pensions is very trifling as the Cavalry have only participated in the grant since 1855.

**13.**

Promotion to the grade of Native Officers should be by selection for merit and efficiency without any regard to seniority.

**14.**

Yes.

**15 & 16.**

No replies required.

**17.**

No.

**18 to 23.**

No replies required.

**24.**

Generally from Bombay and the Deccan.

**25.**

Average price of remounts is Company's Rupees 400.

**26 to 28.**

No replies required.

**29.**

The new rate of pay for a Silladar is Company's Rupees 30 of which one-third goes to the Bargheer and two-thirds for the maintenance of the horse.

**30.**

The Hyderabad Cavalry are capitally mounted and thoroughly efficient, but a protracted campaign would ruin the Silladars on their present rate of pay.

**30b.**

The Hyderabad Cavalry are much embarrassed by debt.

**31.**

The pay of a Silladar in the Deccan should be Rupees 35 or 40 a month. The Native Government pay their Silladars from 40 to 55.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**32.**

The market value of an Assamee averages Rupees 1,200 to 1,400. No restrictions are made in the number of Assamees held by Native Officers and Silladars.

I consider that the fact of Native Officers or Silladars holding large Pajahs gives them a stake and ensures their loyalty and enables the proprietors to maintain their horses and equipments in a better state of efficiency than those who hold one or two horses. No Silladar should be an owner of less than 10 horses.

**33.**

There is no body of mounted Police as yet organized in the assigned district.

**34.**

Vide Answer to 33.

**35.**

Vide Answer to 33.

**36.**

Vide Answer to 33.

**37.**

Vide Answer to 33.

**38.**

Vide Answer to 33.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL R. H. GALL,

*14th King's Light Dragoons.*

*Bengal Army.*

**13.**

I would make efficiency proved by a test the *rule* of promotion giving the prior claim to seniority of course, but I would make merit displayed on the field of battle or on active service in the field, an exceptional ground for advancement, and in these cases dispense with all further proof of fitness.

**17.**

No Officer should be allowed to join an Irregular Corps until he had proved the possession of certain professional knowledge, and certain acquirements without which the duties of this branch of the service cannot be so efficiently performed as they ought to be, more than activity and zeal should be required of an Officer destined to the command

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of an Irregular Corps. On service, he is generally the first to come in contact with an enemy; he is the first upon whom the duty of reconnoitering a position devolves, as the general or other Officer Commanding a Field Force may be guided by the report of a reconnoissance, the information furnished by it should not only be most accurate but accompanied by a plan of the ground, position or external defences of the enemy, without which the clearest reports are imperfect, yet how very few Cavalry Officers, comparatively, have acquired the art of plan drawing or sketching ground.

21.

None mounted by Government.

22.

Between Rupees 6 and 700.

23.

Stud bred from the Government Studs, i e., half English or Arab, the dams being country mares.

Persians, and a few Arabs perhaps, from the Persian Gulf.

The want of breeding and size in the country mares is the cause of many defects in their produce, this remark only applies to the Haupper Stud horses.

28.

The Studs should be abolished, and the breed of horses for the Indian market encouraged in Persia, Arabia, Scinde, Turkistan and the British Colonies, India itself would supply a good number. The gift by Government or the loan of good Stallions to Zemindars who had bred eligible horses would encourage them to improve the breed.

32.

I would limit the number of Assamees held by any one man; a Native Officer who held a very large number and would, I suspect, possess an influence that might be used with effect against the Government.

---

CAPTAIN W. D. ABBOTT,

*Commanding 3rd Regiment Cavalry.*

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

1.

On merit and seniority combined.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2.

A good number are intelligent and efficient, but there are at the same time many who have been promoted for seniority alone, and who are *worse* than useless.

They are wanting in the intelligence and dash you require in a Native Officer, and are unable to influence and control their men or instruct them. The bad consequences of such promotions ( in the cases of Troop Officers) I have invariably found to be plainly visible in the state of their Troops.

3.

With a few exceptions, I think not, many of the Native Officers cannot read or write.

4.

Not any.

5.

No reply required.

9.

I can only speak from my experience of what occurred in the 1st Cavalry, and I am compelled to say that on that occasion the greater number of the leading Native Officers in the Regiment, that is taking the *two* senior grades, Troop Officers and *Jemadars*, (which is the next grade) did not evince cordiality or display any energy or attempt to crush the mutinous spirit at its outbreak ; I believe however that many, when they saw the serious consequences likely to result from the mutinous spirit which had then risen beyond their control, heartily repented of their folly. The Head Native Officer, the Havildar Major had not the slightest influence in his Regiment, but he was perfectly loyal. Of the five Troop Officers who were present at Arungabad, two were faithful and three were not. One had been left with his Troop in charge of the station at Nominabad, and behaved extremely well. Of the *Jemadars*, two were the principal leaders in the Infantry, 2 were immediately pensioned as useless and imbecile, 1 was shot, 2 was transported for life, and 1 imprisoned for 3 years. In short there were a few exceptions, but the Native Officers, as a body, behaved badly. Many were disaffected, and many proved themselves unequal to the crisis.

7 to 9.

No replies required.

10.

The system of pensions (which has been introduced during the last few years only) is, I think, appreciated by our men.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I have often spoken to the Native Officers on the subject, contrasting the system of pensions, with that which formerly obtained in this service, of giving a donation of six months' pay, and I have always found that they consider the pension system a great improvement, and a great boon.

11.

It should, in my opinion, be maintained.

12.

I have no means of ascertaining. The exact amount may be ascertained from the Pay Master at Secunderabad or the Military Secretary to the Resident.

13.

Promotion by merit and efficiency should, I think, be followed much more than has hitherto been the case. No Officer entrusted with the command of a Regiment would, I think, pass over the claims of a deserving old Soldier, if he were in any way fitted for promotion, which is essentially necessary. But promotion should be given to those whose intelligence, dash, the degree of respect they command from the men, and the degree of attachment they shew to the Government point them out as fit men to command others. I think the Commanding Officer's selection should be attended to.

14.

Generally yes, but in many instances certainly not. I do not think however that entire confidence can be placed in them, nor do I think the affirmation they make, is, even in a remote degree, as binding on them as the oath is on members of an European Court Martial.

15 &amp; 16.

No replies required.

17.

*I most strongly* advocate a greater number of Officers being attached to each Regiment. I think that *three* European Officers, independent of the Commanding Officer and Adjutant, are absolutely requisite in the Field, but I consider that they should not be allowed to interfere in any way in the command of the Troops which should be left as much as possible as heretofore, in the hands of the Troop Officers. I would never advocate a greater number of European Officer being attached to Regiments than that I have named.

18.

No reply required.

19 &amp; 20.

No replies required.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**21, 22 & 23.** No replies required.

**24.**

Almost entirely from Bombay.

Formerly a great number of Deccan Horses were entertained, but the practice has fallen into disuse for two reasons :—1st, that the Deccan Horses are fast dying out, and are not nearly so numerous as they were—2nd, that Commandants have found the great superiority of the Arab, and that its introduction into the Regiments has so greatly added to their efficiency without much (until lately) to the price of remounts that they have sought to introduce as many Arabs as possible into the Regiments. There is an unusual Fair (in December) for Deccan Horses at Malligaum, and formerly the Remount Agent at Bombay purchased yearly a number of *lots* for Government, he never could obtain a greater number than 200 or 250 suited for Government purposes, some of the men profess to have a *preference* for Deccan Horses and say they are easier trained to their paces and manage, but I believe this chiefly because they are obtained at rather lower prices, but in my opinion there is no *comparison* between the two, the Arab being far the better and *in the end* the cheaper horse.

**25.**

			Rs.
In the year 1854	in this Regiment average paid,	Hyderabad	423 10 0
„	1856	Ditto	„ 408 0 0

Since the last inspection in December 1856, up to the present time 370-7-0, this calculation is made up to the time of the return of the Regiment from Field Service.

**26, 27 & 28.** No replies required.

**29.**

A Trooper and horse drawn, the new scale Hyderabad Rs. 34-4-10, of this sum 12-6-4 is the personal pay of the Trooper, the remainder goes for the horse, on the old scale, man and horse draw 40 Hyderabad Rupees, of this 25 goes for the horse and 15 for the Trooper.

**30.**

During the late campaign, Government allowed an extra allowance of 5 Company's Rupees for each horse, which was divided in the same ratio, as the rates of pay above mentioned. I think this (unless under very peculiar circumstances) is sufficient.

**30b.**

The men formerly were very much embarrassed by debt. The men were very extravagant and lived much beyond their means.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Attention was directed to this by Lord Dalhousie, and a great improvement has been effected in this respect during the last four or five years.

**31.**

I do not consider any alteration necessary unless it be in the pay of the 2nd in command and Adjutant. The pay of the 2nd in command in the Cavalry is the same as the corresponding rank in the Infantry, 500 Company's Rupees to each.

There is an inconsistency in this, for the expenses of the one far exceed those of the other. The Adjutant of the Cavalry should, I think, draw "Cavalry pay" as the Medical Officer attached to the Cavalry does.

**32.**

The system with respect to the Assamees is to allow none but fighting men *in the service* to purchase them. Such persons are allowed to possess as many as they can purchase. There is no restrictions as to the number. The market value ranges from 12,000 to 15,000 Hyderabad Rupees. I have never myself known that any ill effect to the Government service resulted from allowing one man to possess a large number of "Assamees."

Our regulations allow us to punish a Silladar who has his Horses in bad condition or whose appointments are bad, by forfeiture of a portion of the Horse's pay, until these (points are redressed,) owners of large Pagahs are necessarily (generally speaking) men of money, they can therefore better afford to keep their Pagahs efficient, and if unfortunately it should be found necessary to punish neglect on their parts by forfeiture of pay, it does not come so heavy on them, as it would on a man who owned only one horse. It secures to us also a better class of men, who mostly speaking, rise to be (or entered the service in former days as) Native Officers.

**33 to 38.** Inclusive. No replies required.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,  
*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

**1.**

The system of promotion in the Irregular Cavalry is based entirely on merit, and qualifications for advancement.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**2.**

The Native Commissioned Officers of the Cavalry are very intelligent and superior men. They are chiefly men of good family and are very efficient.

**3.**

Their acquirements are generally of a higher order than those of the Troopers from among whom they have been selected.

Many of them possess a thorough knowledge of the history of their country. They are frequently employed upon detached Commands, and prove themselves quite capable of acting in responsible situations. Their reports when employed in this independent manner evince a thorough knowledge of their duties.

**4.**

No Commandants of Regiments have such a practical knowledge of their men from so frequently being employed with them in the Districts, that they become fully acquainted with those who are best qualified for promotion.

**5.**

No reply is required.

**6.**

They have not given information either through fear, or a disinclination to act against their own men.

The dismissal by order of the Governor General of the Native Officers of the 3rd Cavalry who were at Bolaram during the mutiny of that Corps in October 1855, is conclusive as to the participation of the Native Officers in that mutiny.

During the mutiny of the 1st Cavalry in July 1857, some of the Native Officers, who evinced a desire to side with their European Officers, were placed in confinement in their tents by their own men, and threatened with death if they attempted to escape. There was evidently an inclination on the part of some of the Native Officers to continue faithful, but the fear of their comrades appears to have deterred them from aiding their European Officers.

**7 to 9.**

No replies required.

**10.**

I think so decidedly.

**11.**

Most certainly maintained as at present, as being the best means of rewarding worn out and faithful soldiers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**12.**

I am unable to afford this information.

**13.**

This is replied to in (Paragraph 1) of this class.

**14.**

Yes, they are.

**15 & 16.**

No replies required.

**17.**

Experience has proved that the present mode of officering the Irregular Cavalry works very well; the only alteration I would recommend, would be, to have four instead of three European Officers as at present. It often happens that from sickness and other accidental causes there is but one European Officer for duty in a Regiment, and as detachments of Cavalry are often ordered into the Districts at the shortest notice, the addition of a fourth European Officer would, I think, be very advisable.

**18, 19, 21, 22 & 23.** No replies required.**24.**

Formerly the Cavalry were obliged to purchase all Arab Horses, but this was found to be so expensive to the men, that Deccan Horses have of late years been admitted into the ranks.

**25.**

400 Rupees Horses however have been so very scarce for the last year that much higher prices than this have been given. As much as 500 Rupees have recently been given for a Horse for the Cavalry at Bolaram.

**26, 27 & 28.** No replies required.**29.**

A Silladar's pay is 30 Company's Rupees, and a Bargheer's pay is 10 Company's Rupees per month.

**30.**

The Irregular Cavalry of this Contingent is very well mounted and equipped and thoroughly efficient in the Field through a protracted campaign, as the hard work and exposure they have so admirably sustained for the last fourteen months have proved.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**30b.**

Their pay however is not sufficient to prevent their becoming much embarrassed by debt : chiefly in consequence of the high prices they are obliged to pay for their horses.

It must be borne in mind also, that the Cavalry receive no assistance from Government beyond their bare pay, they are not entitled to batta ; they supply their own tents and transport for the same when in the field, which falls very heavily upon them when so constantly called upon for active service and escort duty as the Hyderabad Cavalry are ; they are obliged to keep one strong tattoo for every two horses, for carrying head and heel ropes, gram, forage, and a change of clothes for each Sowar. It is this system which renders this Cavalry so highly efficient, and enables them to move so rapidly. All Cavalry should be thus supplied with tattoos. These expenses leave a Silladar a comparatively small portion of pay for his own maintenance, the repairs of his arms and accoutrements and renewal of uniform. Another important thing to be considered is that if a horse dies, or is by accident rendered unfit for further duty the owner is at once compelled to resort to the money lender for the means of replacing it, for it is obvious from these various demands upon a Silladar's pay that he cannot possibly lay buy sufficient to meet such an emergency as the sudden call for the price of a horse.

**31.**

I would not recommend any increase to the pay, but I would suggest, that whenever the Cavalry are called out, of their own cantonments, they should receive batta ; and that Government should provide them with tents and carriage for the same. Also that the men should be permitted to purchase horses at a lower rate than at present.

While the system of purchasing such expensive horses obtains in this Cavalry, it is impossible for men to keep out of debt. Every Regiment is deeply involved, and were it not that each Cavalry Corps has its Native banker, from whom the men receive great assistance for the purchase of horses, in the way of loans for which they have to pay 12 per cent interest, the Regiments could not be kept in an efficient state.

The money thus borrowed only affords relief of a temporary nature, and involves the men in greater difficulties for the future and they rarely if ever get out of debt.

**32.**

There is no limit to the number of Assamees which may be held by one individual. The value of an Assamee varies from 800 to

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1,200 Rupees, 800 Rupees however is the usual price now paid for them. This Cavalry service has always been considered by the Natives, one of great honor; and many men of good family with private fortunes have entered it, which will account for the apparently very high prices paid for Assamees. The Cavalry service however, has of late years been not so much sought after as formerly; as their advantages in it, have been very much curtailed, and the same men do not enter the Cavalry now as formerly. I think it is advantageous to have men with large vested interests in the Cavalry, as it brings in men of better family. I think the present system of not restricting Assamees favorable to the maintenance of the efficiency of a Corps, in horses, and in equipments and to the conduct of duty. My reason for advocating capitalists in the Irregular Cavalry is, that the more horses a man possesses, the more able is he to lay by something monthly towards meeting the outlay for replacing a horse when necessary.

**33 to 38.** There are no mounted Police in the assigned Districts; but if they were raised, it would tend greatly to the safety of many towns and villages, which are now constantly pillaged by Rohillas before troops can reach the part, where their services are required.

---

MAJOR W. A. ORR,  
*Commanding 1st Company Artillery,  
 and late Commanding Field Force, Hyderabad Contingent,  
 serving in Central India.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Madras Army.*

1. The system of promotion is based on merit and seniority combined, but I think too much stress is laid on seniority.—I consider in a service like the Irregular Cavalry of India, to which is attached so few European Officers, that a wide field of selection should be given to Commandants, and that in making promotions, intelligence and efficiency should weigh more than length of service or standing.
2. Generally speaking they are, but I think as I have said above, that it would be advisable if the claim to promotion depended more upon the qualifications of the individual, than upon his length of service.
3. In general, the acquirements of the Commissioned Officers are of a higher order than the common run of Troopers, but as the possession

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of acquirements has not been made a *sine qua non* in making promotions, there are to be found uneducated men of course amongst the body of Officers.

4.

No particular examination or test is exacted by Regulations, but it is the practice of Commandants of Corps to subject all men before promotion to a certain test of their qualifications for advancement, I consider it very desirable that a previous examination should be established and enforced by regulation.

5.

No reply required.

6.

I think that in general it has been on occasions of mutinies or disturbances in Corps of the Hyderabad Cavalry, that the Native Officers have behaved well, and aided their European Officers as far as the peculiar circumstances of the case admitted. It is true that during the mutiny of the 1st Cavalry at Aurungabad last year, a number of its Native Officers were deeply implicated, but I think this may have arisen from the predisposing causes which led to the outbreak,—springing from a feeling of antagonism between two parties in the Regiment

7 to 9.

No replies required.

10.

It is only of late years, and since the re-organization of the Contingent in 1853, that pensions have been granted to the Cavalry branch of the service. Those sanctioned before that time were exceptional and special cases.

The present system of pension should, I think, be maintained, but the men of the Cavalry cannot help contrasting the small rate of pension granted to them, compared with the pay they draw, and that granted to the Artillery and Infantry with reference to the Pay drawn by those two branches.

12.

I have no possible means of ascertaining this point.

13.

I have already replied to this, in answer to query No. 2.

14.

They are quite fitted from their general intelligence to take part in the conduct of Courts Martial.

15 &amp; 16.

No replies required.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**17.**

No, I think not beyond the alterations I have mentioned in reply to query No. 2. The present system works well, and is popular with all classes of the men.

**18.**

No reply required.

**19 to 23.**

No replies required.

**24.**

Until a year or two ago the supply of horses for the Hyderabad Cavalry has been drawn from Bombay and confined almost entirely to Arabs, and Gulf Horses, but latterly a General Order by the Resident permits all horses being entertained, provided they pass the different tests and are approved by the Commandant.

**25.**

Formerly the average cost of an Arab was about (Hyderabad Rupees 400) four hundred, but of late years has risen to very nearly (Hyderabad Rupees, 450) four hundred and fifty, very good Deccan or country bred horses are procurable for a less sum, perhaps about (Hyderabad Rupees 300) three hundred, on an average, but they have not the enduring powers of Arabs, and are consequently more expensive in the end.

**26 to 28.**

No replies required.

**29.**

The old sherra or allowance granted for each horse was (Hyderabad Rupees 40,) forty, about Company's Rupees on the re-organization of the contingent, the sherra was reduced to (Company's Rupees 30,) thirty, with prospective effect, this is divided into three portions, two of which go to the Silladar, and one to the Rider or Bargheer.

**30.**

I do not think the present allowance (Company's Rupees 30,) thirty, sufficient to enable a Corps to be well mounted and equipped, and thoroughly efficient in the Field during a protracted campaign. None but a very good horse can stand the continued wear and tear demanded on active service from Irregular Cavalry, and the constant and harrassing nature of the duties exacted, and good horses are not procurable without a high price. It must also be borne in mind that the old rate of allowance or sherra per horse and rider was (Hyderabad Rupees 40) forty, without reference to the exchange on different kinds

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of currency. When any of the Corps go beyond the frontier on active service, the men are paid in the Company's currency and at the fixed exchange of 21 per cent. between the Hyderabad and Company's Rupee, whereas the market value between the two kinds of Rupees may be only 11 or 12 per cent. A clear loss of 9 or 10 per cent. is thus caused to the men. This was particularly felt by the Corps serving during the late campaign in Central India.

**30b.**

This depends very much upon the Commandant. I have known some Corps free of debt which on a change of Commanding Officer became much involved. A judicious, careful Commandant I think always keeps his Regiment free from debt.

**31.**

I think a return to the old sherra (Hyderabad Rupees 40,) forty, would be advisable. The difference to Government would be nothing in comparison to the means it would afford to improved efficiency in every way.

**32.**

The market value of the Assamee is unlimited, but varies according to circumstances. It may be considered at present to average between 12 and 1,500 Hyderabad Rupees. No restrictions exist as to the numbers which may be held by individuals in the Corps, a regulation is however in force that all Assamees sold shall be disposed of to fighting men and registered in their names. This, I think, a wise rule as preventing the purchase of Assamees by improper persons whose influence might be prejudicial in the Corps. The Silladar has however the right of bequeathing his Assamees to his widow or any other member of his family. I consider it advantageous encouraging the possession of large Pajahs, for by doing so, we got a better class of men to enter our service than would be the case if there was a limitation to the number of Assamees, they were permitted to hold. It is in every point of view desirable that the high tone of feeling in a service should be preserved. And this will be best done by giving encouragement to men of rank and birth, or members of old family entering it. The possession of a large stake would undoubtedly also have its own good effect in creating a desire for the stability of the existing Government. Nor have I observed that these large Pajahs are worse kept up and maintained, than the smaller ones, and this is a matter so completely under the control of the Commanding Officer that it will be entirely his own fault if any difference be ever permitted to exist.

**33 to 38.** No replies required.

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant Genl. Bombay Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

1. Seniority combined with merit ; the latter being a sine qua non.
2. Very much so indeed.
3. Being selected from among the Troopers, their acquirements are naturally higher.
4. I cannot answer this positively, not being intimately acquainted with the interior working of the system of promotion in the Cavalry. A Trooper's life is always one of test and examination, and he would not be promoted unless he was deserving.
5. It strengthens the influence of the European Officer, especially if the Troop Native Officers be men of character ; because notwithstanding their position, the British Officer is still the judge between them, the dispenser of justice, honor and reward. With a full complement of European Officers, the efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officer is overshadowed, and kept in the back ground.
6. Generally speaking, yes, very much so. In the 2nd Cavalry one Native Officer behaved ill and was tried. In the mutiny of the Bengal Troops at Nusserabad, the Native Officers of the 1st Lancers and all the men, with the exception of a few, sided with the British Officers, and after an ineffectual attempt to capture the Guns which were held by the mutineers, the regiment marched from the cantonment in perfect order, leaving families and all their property. Considering that two Regiments of Native Infantry and a Battery of Artillery mutinied on this occasion, the conduct of the 1st Cavalry was excellent, for the men are almost all Hindoostanees.
7. Continued.
8. Very unadvisable.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

9.

No good service pay or retiring pension could compensate for the abolition of the Native Commissioned Grades; such a measure would soon effectually abolish the Native Army, as enlistment would cease.

10.

Doubtless the pension list has proved a strong hold upon the army; I always believed the strongest, but recent events have shown that it has not been effectual.

11.

The pension list is a wise and just system. The present Regulations might perhaps be modified with advantage.

12.

Rupees, 89,982-14-0 per annum, or Rupees 7,498-9-2 per mensem as nearly as can be ascertained.

13.

Promotion for merit and efficiency is the rule under the Bombay Presidency, therefore alteration is not required.

14.

Yes, and they have done their duty well as Members of the Courts Martial during the present eventful period.

15.

I think so—and superior to the general average of Sergeants and Corporals.

16.

I have before stated that a number of European Officers are not required with Native Regiments, as they should be constituted. A Native Regiment should have a Commandant, a 2nd in Command, an Adjutant, and a Pay Master, Quarter Master, and Interpreter, all other Officers are superfluous; and there should be no idle British Officers. The pay of the Subadars and Jemadars should be increased. Commissions held out to the Native gentry as an inducement to them to enter the Army; and the Native Officers held responsible for their Troops in all situations, as the British Officers are now. With four selected English Officers, entrusted with much power, supported by selected Native Officers, and modifications of pay, rendered necessary by the altered conditions of the times, the Cavalry Regiments might be made very efficient; but as I have before remarked, Native Regular Cavalry is a mistake and should be abolished.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

17.

I would place all the Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Army on the model of the Sind Horse.

An intimate acquaintance with those Regiments for 18 years convinces me that they are as near perfection as possible.

18.

The classes are different. In the Regular Cavalry the men are mostly Hindoos from Oude. In the Irregular Cavalry, Mahomedans from Rohilcund and the neighbourhood of Delhi. The Regular Cavalry is not popular, and recruits are not easily obtained. The Irregular branch of the service is preferred because their Native Officers are Officers indeed, and there is more dash in the service altogether.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

I have reason to believe that the system observed in the Regular Army, is also carried out in the Irregular Corps *viz*: that merit, combined with seniority, leads to promotion.

2.

Very much so indeed, having so much actual command over their men and being selected for intelligence, they are naturally useful and efficient.

3.

Naturally so, as they are selected from among the Troopers.

4.

The practice I believe differs in the several Corps: I am aware that in the Sind Horse, examinations are made before advancement.

6.

In this respect, the conduct of the Irregular Cavalry has been a pattern; mutiny and sedition have been rife where the Sind and Southern Mahratta Horse have been serving, but the fidelity of the men has been unquestionable, and the Native Officers have nobly supported the Government and obeyed and sided with their officers on all occasions. The Poona Horse has not been so much in the way of these disturbances,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

but Detachments of the Corps have acted against the Rebels with alacrity and determination.

10.

The Pension list has much influence naturally in attaching men to the service; but I cannot say that this has effected the fidelity which has marked the Irregular Cavalry of this Presidency.

11.

The system should be maintained, but it requires modification.

12.

I cannot say.

13.

Alteration is not required, and promotion is obtained by merit and efficiency combined with seniority.

14.

They are perfectly fit to take any duty of this kind.

16.

There should be four Officers in each Regiment viz :

1. A commandant.
2. A 2nd in command.
3. Quarter-master and Pay-master.
4. Adjutant, with the usual Medical Staff.

18.

I imagine the Irregular Cavalry; for the reason that the Ressaldars, Naib Ressaldars &c., are indeed Native Officers. There is more dash in the service, and the men are less troubled with watering parades, unlimited stables, pipe clay, and Regulations, which are very hard upon the Regular Cavalry Troopers.

19.

The absence of Commissioned Officers cannot be compensated for by any amount of good service pay or pension. The service would no longer be sought after, and the Regiments soon cease to exist from want of Recruits.

20.

I would not keep up the Regular Native Cavalry. No body of men could be more regular or efficient than the Sind Horse. The

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

difference of cost I cannot state, but I imagine a Regiment of Regular Cavalry must be very costly: its superiority to the Irregulars is questionable and under existing regulations, a Corps of Sillidar Cavalry would make several marches before the "Regulars" could be provided with carriage. The substitution is very desirable.

21.

The whole should be placed on the footing of the Sind Horse.

22.

About Rupees 500 each.

23.

From the Remount agent—a few from Katta-awar and Kutch; also by Regimental purchase.

The breeds are Arab, Persian, Herattee, Katta-awar and a few Country breeds.

24.

Generally from the neighbourhood of its own Head Quarters. The Sind Horse from Herat, Beloochistan and the Punjab. The Poona Horse use the Bombay market, the Bheemthurree and other districts. The Southern Mahratta Horse mostly from the surrounding Country.

25.

No average can be given. The mutiny has caused an enormous rise in prices, and in the Deccan, the Poona and Southern Mahratta Irregular Horse have been placed in difficulties to mount themselves.

26.

Formerly fully so. The mutiny caused a difficulty at one time, and we have largely imported from the Cape and Australia. By judicious management at the colonies, at Bombay and Kurrachee, we should command any number of Horses of the best kinds.

27.

I think we should annually, at the proper season, import a certain number of Horses from the Cape and Australia. This would give vitality to the markets in those colonies, improve our mounted Corps, and make us somewhat independent of Indian, Persian and Arab dealers, who now have us at their mercy. We should have Remount Agents at the most suitable places, and these acting in concert would soon place the supply on a very satisfactory footing.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

28.

I doubt if studs will ever be profitable to Government. I think the dealers should be the stud keepers; but my knowledge of these matters is so slight, that my opinion can carry no weight with it.

29.

In the Sind Horse, rupees 30 per mensem for man and Horse; in the Poona and Southern Mahratta Horse, rupees 25.

30.

On the frontier of Sind, men and Horses are kept thoroughly efficient for rupees 30 a month. In the Deccan, rupees 25 a month are not sufficient; the men are in great distress, and the soëner this subject is enquired into, the better. All must depend upon where the campaign is, before the latter part of the question can be satisfactorily answered.

30b.

This subject has occupied much attention, and I believe the Irregular Cavalry is free from debt.

31.

I would advise a consideration of the question which is very pressing. Sind is now a cheap country; the Deccan very dear. I quite understand the difficulty of fluctnations of pay; but a horseman in the Deccan cannot support himself and horse efficiently on Rs 25 a month. The pay should be liberal to ensure efficiency, and to induce the landed proprietors to seek employment in the Corps.

32.

I believe there is a difference in the several corps; Assamees are sold by auction to the highest bidder under the sanction of the Commanding Officers; the number of the Assamees is restricted, and no man out of the Corps is allowed to hold one. I advocate a restriction in the number of Assamees to be held by any one individual; but in all these matters much must depend upon the Commanding Officer, who, if "selected," will not permit inefficiency either in horses or equipment, and the conduct of the duty.

33.

I cannot answer this question definitely, as I believe the pay varies in the several districts.

34.

I cannot answer this question, as the Police are purely Civil Corps.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

35.

I cannot answer this question.

36.

The Police are entirely under the civil authorities, and I have no information before me.

37.

I cannot answer this question.

38.

I do not know. But existing circumstances, caused by high rates, press so hard upon the Irregular Horse in the Deccan, that the men are in great difficulty to mount themselves properly.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,

*Secretary to Government of Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Light Cavalry.*

1 to 11.

Answered in the former Sections.

12.

Rupees 90,000 per annum, according to an approximate calculation.

13 to 16.

As before.

17.

I think not: the Irregular Corps are officered by section from every arm. Cavalry, Artillery and Infantry; and this is, I consider, the best possible system to ensure efficiency.

18.

Only Officers who have served with both Regular and Irregular Cavalry Corps can be supposed to be qualified satisfactorily to answer this question.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,  
*Secretary to Government Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

- 1 to 11.** Previous replies are applicable here.
- 12.** Fifteen thousand rupees per annum.
- 13 & 14.** As before.
- 17.** I have above said that I think not.
- 18.** I have replied to this before.
- 19.** I consider that good service pay and pension, cannot compensate to young and aspiring Soldiers for the want of commissioned grades to which they look forward as the early reward of good conduct; but the system of the Regular and Irregular Cavalry is so dissimilar that I doubt whether the recruiting for the one can, under any circumstances, interfere with the recruiting for the other.
- 20.** I do not advocate the abolition of the Regular Native Cavalry in the Bombay Army, because I conceive that the men of this branch have ever done their duty in Field and in Garrison, as efficiently as the Infantry; that the Native Regular Cavalry bears to the European Cavalry precisely the same relation that the Native Regular Infantry bears to the European Infantry; and that neither in the Cavalry nor in the Infantry can the place of Regular Corps be supplied by Irregular Corps as at present organized, without the sacrifice of much of the general efficiency of the Army. In giving this opinion, I refer to Irregular Cavalry Corps as now constituted on the Sillidar system; the essence of which is, that the men provide their own horses, arms, and equipments, such Corps are never so well mounted as the Regular Corps for which the horses are provided by the Government; for certain duties, Irregular Corps are very valuable, because they are more easily moved and require little or no Commissariat with them, but if good mounting be an element of efficiency, they can never be really so efficient as Cavalry, and for the whole

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

round of Cavalry duties, as the Regular Regiments ought to be; though clearly they are less costly, as the expense of a Regular Cavalry Regiment is estimated at  $5\frac{1}{2}$  lacs of rupees per annum, whilst that of an Irregular Regiment is not much more than  $3\frac{1}{2}$  lacs.

21.

If Irregular Cavalry were mounted upon Government horses, it would be difficult to distinguish them from Regular Corps, the leading and essential mark of difference between the two would then be removed.

22.

During the last year the cost of the Light Cavalry Horses has averaged 515 rupees each. The average of the preceding three years is only 440 rupees.

23.

The Bombay Army has been mounted hitherto from the Persian Gulf chiefly; some of the horses have usually been brought from Afghanistan through Kurrachee, and during the past year supplies have been obtained from the Cape, and from the Australian Colonies to meet the extraordinary demand. The Gulf horses are all Arabs or Persians, the Afghan horses, or northern horses as they are commonly termed in Bombay, are akin to the Persian. From the Colonies, the horses brought are of course of the Colonial breeds.

24.

From the resources of the country, wherever they may be stationed or be serving.

25.

The men of the Irregular Cavalry provide their own horses, and no return of the cost is ever made to the Government, though known to Commanding Officers. The Government rate of compensation for horses lost, when compensation is granted, is 125 rupees each; and it has been stated in recent correspondence that the men commonly pay about 200 rupees each for the horses in the ranks.

26.

I think they are.

27.

I have no suggestions to make on this head.

28.

There was formerly a Government Stud on this side of India, but it was abolished some years since as experience proved it to be

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

utterly useless, and an expense without any return to compensate for it.

It would be difficult, I conceive, to devise a more expensive and less efficient mode of mounting the Army of India, than that of a Government Stud or breeding establishment for horses.

**29.**

In the Sind Irregular horse the pay given is 30 rupees for each Sowar, that is, rider and horse fully equipped. In the other Corps, it is 25 rupees for each Sowar.

**30.**

The Irregular Cavalry Corps are usually well equipped, but indifferently mounted, particularly in the field and on protracted campaigns: this arises very much from their being dependant upon local resources for their remounts, and is probably an inherent defect in the system which no increase of pay, within reasonable bounds, would suffice to correct.

**30b.**

Old Corps, like the Poona horse, are greatly embarrassed; but the Corps more recently raised, like the Sind and the Southern Mahratta horse, wherein there has been a careful superintendence exercised over the interior economy of the Corps, are free from the embarrassment of debt.

**31.**

Lately there have been complaints in some of the Irregular Corps of the insufficiency of the pay allowed, though larger than that which is given in the Bengal Army; but on the closest calculation that can be made, it does not appear that the soldier of the Irregular Corps is worse off than the soldier of the Line; and such being the case, it would be highly inexpedient to raise the pay of the one, and not of the other.

**32.**

I understand the term Assamee to mean an individual place in the ranks of the Corps, represented by the horse. The market value of the horse, thus representing a place in the Corps, is irrespective of the value of the animal, and depends upon the demand for such places. I have no exact knowledge of this market value of the Assamee, but I believe it is very commonly taken at 4 or 500 rupees. The restrictions placed on the number of Assamees held by one man depend upon the judgment of the Commanding Officer, and the regimental regulations of each Corps.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

32.

It is, I believe, the opinion of our best officers that all Silladars should be effective, riding in the Corps; and that no Sillidar should have more or less than three Assamees: Native Officers may hold a larger number. I do not advocate the existence in Corps of Irregular Horse of large vested interests; and I regard them as a very insecure guarantee either for the maintenance of the efficiency of the horses and equipments, or for the proper conduct of its duties.

33. to 38.

I have no correct knowledge of the Mounted Police.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON,  
*Officiating Quarter Master General of the Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bengal Irregular Cavalry.*

1.

On merit chiefly, I believe.

2.

I think they are generally.

3.

Yes, I think they generally are.

4.

I believe not.

6.

Generally speaking they have behaved better than those of the Infantry and Artillery, but many of them have been ringleaders in the recent mutiny.

10.

Nothing has proved effectual, but they are well aware of the advantage of a provision for their old age as afforded by retiring pensions.

11.

This is a question of Finance. The pensions are highly valued, but at the same time, we can get almost any number of horsemen (as in the Police) without allowing pensions.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 13.** Merit and efficiency only.
- 14.** I think they are not generally fit.
- 17.** The Officers should be carefully selected.
- 18.** The Irregular is the better paid service of the two. The discipline is generally not so strict in minor details, and there are many little privileges such as a man taking his horse with him on furlough, &c. Again, in former days a Sowar could always obtain leave to visit his home on his furnishing a substitute. This privilege was however withdrawn, why, I know not, for it was not only much prized by the man, but a supply of ready made soldiers was always to be had from this class of substitutes. There was no occasion to enlist raw recruits, and Government was put to no extra expence by the practice.
- 21.** Irregular Cavalry will answer best.
- 23.** Chiefly Stud bred.
- 24.** From the North-Western Provinces, and the Punjaub. There are also some horses from Afghanistan, but they are not liked.
- 25.** From Rupees 200 to Rupees 250, I believe.
- 26.** A great scarcity of horses for Irregular Cavalry has always been a complaint.
- 27.** Let the Breeding Establishments in the Government studs be restored to the state they were in 30 years ago, when the Bengal stud Horse was highly prized throughout India.
- 28.** If the Government studs are improved, or restored to the state they were in, as above mentioned, they would supply all wants very efficiently; whether this would prove less or more expensive than the importation of horses from foreign countries, I have no means of saying.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 29.** Has recently been raised to Rupees 25 per mensem.
- 30.** Yes.
- 30 b.** They are seldom free from debt, more or less.
- 31.** It is, I think, sufficient.
- 32.** Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers alone are allowed to hold a given number of Assamees. The system works tolerably well, I believe, but I would still do away with it, and have every man a Khoodarpah.
- 33.** The same with the Irregular Cavalry I believe.
- 34.** I have no knowledge of the North-Western Provinces. In the Punjab they are organized into Ressalas much after the fashion of Irregular Cavalry.
- 35.** In the Punjab mounted police there are Mahomedans of both the Cis and Trans-Indus, Seiks, Khuttrees, and some Hindoos tanees.
- 36.** Captains of police manage the recruiting. The usual precaution taken is to ascertain a man's home and parentage, so as to know where he is most likely to be found if wanted at any time, and from any cause.
- 37.** The Punjab police are well mounted and very efficient.
- 38.** There is no difference in the pay, but the police get no pensions.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

COLONEL W. F. BEATSON.

*Commanding Beatson's Horse.*

*Bengal Irregular Cavalry.*

1. I am not aware what has been the custom, but it ought to be based generally on merit and seniority combined; that is, if the merit of two men is equal, the senior should be preferred; but distinguished conduct in action should take precedence of every thing else, and be instantly rewarded by promotion, the person so promoted remaining supernumerary of his rank till a vacancy occurs.
2. It is the fault of the Commanding Officer if they are not.
3. They ought to have shown themselves superior as soldiers before they were promoted, that is the only acquirement which should be considered in the Irregular Cavalry.
4. Not that I am aware of.
5. No reply required.
6. Apparently in the Bengal Army they have been as bad as the men.
- 7 to 9. No replies required.
10. Apparently not, in the Bengal Army.
11. I would grant pensions for length of faithful service, for wounds in action, and to the families of men killed in action, or who died on service.
12. I have no idea.
13. When the claims are equal the senior should be preferred, but merit should be the rule, and particularly gallantry in action.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 14.** No.
- 15 & 16.** No replies required.
- 17.** Men of family and influence, who can bring a number of men and horses, should, in raising new Regiments, be put in as Officers.
- 18.** The Irregular is the most popular, and their dislike of pipe clay the reason.
- 19 & 20.** No replies required.
- 21.** All the Native Cavalry should be Irregular. If Native Gentlemen with money can be found, they should be the Silladars; but the system of Government advancing money to buy horses, and thereby practically becoming the Silladars has been found to answer admirably in Beatson's Horse.
- 22.** I am not aware.
- 23.** There used to be a great number of northern horses; also southern, from the Deccan, and Kattywar; but our studs ruined the breeders.
- 24.** Wherever they can find them.
- 25.** I am not aware.
- 26.** No.
- 27.** Do away studs, and you will bring back the dealers with northern and southern horses, and others who were ruined by the stud system; you may also import horses from the Cape, Australia and Egypt; there are many good horses on the banks of the Nile which seem to have been overlooked altogether.
- 28.** Answered in No 27.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**29.**

Twenty rupees a month, a great deal too little; the Hyderabad Cavalry and Scinde Horse get 30, which is the least a Sowar ought to get. I recommend 40.

**30.**

No.

**30b.**

All in debt.

**31.**

Yes, all increased to 40 Rs. a month, which would be about half what the useless Regular Cavalry of Bengal cost.

**32.**

When you can get men of family and property to enter a Corps, I would give them any number of Assamees they can pay for; their interests are then the best security for their fidelity, and ensure their keeping proper men to look after their horses and equipments.

**33.**

I know nothing of the Mounted Police.

**34 to 37.**

Not answered.

**38.**

The pay of the Bengal Irregular Cavalry, 20 Rs., was notoriously too small; so if the police got less, they would have been worse mounted.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., & K. H.,

*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Bombay Regular Cavalry.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1.**

Seniority combined with merit, the latter being a *sine qua non*.

**2.**

They are intelligent, but I do not think the Native Officers a useful class of men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. Being selected from among the troopers, their acquirements are naturally higher.

4. I cannot answer this positively, not being intimately acquainted with the interior working of the system of promotion in the Cavalry.  
A trooper's life is always one of test and examination; and he would not be promoted unless he was deserving.

5. I am decidedly of opinion that every regiment should have its full complement of European Officers. I think the Native Officers unnecessary, though I am aware the position is looked forward to, with anxiety by the Natives.

6. I do not think they have given much information, but the Cavalry Regiments of the Bombay Army have behaved exceedingly loyally, more particularly the third Cavalry, under the most trying circumstances.

7. It is a very difficult question. I believe that discontinuing it would cause great discontent in the army.

8. I think this very unadvisable; some of the Native Commissioned Officers are men of high family and great respectability. European Non-Commissioned Officers would be useless in Native Regiments.

9. This would not satisfy the Natives.  
Even a graduated scale of pension would not satisfy, if it was not made equivalent to the retiring pay of a Native Officer.

10. Most undoubtedly.

11. I would maintain it.

12.

<i>Rupees.</i>	<i>Annas.</i>	<i>Pies.</i>
89, 982	14	3 Per annum or
<i>Rupees.</i>	<i>Annas.</i>	<i>Pies.</i>
7, 498	9	2 per mensem, as nearly as can be ascertained.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

13.

Promotion should be given according to merit and efficiency.

14.

Yes, and have done their duty well as members of the Courts-martial during the present eventful period.

15.

, They certainly are.

16.

The regiment should be fully officered with European Officers. I would have Native Serjeant Majors, and Non-Commissioned Officers.

17.

I think not; its organization is very good.

18.

The classes are different: in the Regular Cavalry, the men are mostly Hindoos from Oude; and in the Irregular Cavalry, Mahomedans from Rohilkund and the neighbourhood of Delhi. The Regular Cavalry is not popular, and recruits are not easily obtained. The Irregular branch of the service is preferred because their Native Officers are Officers indeed, and there is more dash in the service altogether.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I have reason to believe that the system observed in the Regular Army, is also carried out in the Irregular Corps, viz.: that merit combined with seniority leads to promotion.

2.

Very much so indeed. Having so much actual command over their men, and being selected for intelligence, they are naturally useful and efficient.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. Naturally so, as they are selected from among the Troopers.
4. The practice, I believe, differs in the several Corps. I am aware that in the Scinde Horse, Examinations are made before advancement.
10. The pension list has much influence naturally in attaching men to the service, but I cannot say that this has effected the fidelity which has marked the Irregular Cavalry of this Presidency.
11. The system should be maintained, but it requires modification.
12. I cannot say.
13. Promotion by merit in all cases.
14. They are perfectly fit to take any duty of this kind.
17. No.
18. A different class of men enlist for the Irregular service.  
I am not aware.
19. I am of opinion that the service is a separate and distinct service, and is so viewed by the natives.
20. The Regular Cavalry of the Bombay Army has done real good service in Persia and in the late mutinies. I should be sorry to see it disgraced.
21. The whole on the usual footing of Irregular Cavalry.
22. About Rupees 500 each.
23. From the Remount Agent, a few from Kattiawar and Kutch, also by regimental purchase.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The breeds are Arab, Persian, Heratee, Kattiawar and a few country bred.

**24.**

Generally from the neighbourhood of its own Head Quarters.

The Scinde Horse from Herat, Beloochistan and the Punjab. The Poona Horse use the Bombay market, the Bheenthuree and other districts. The Southern Mahratta Horse mostly from the surrounding country.

**25.**

No average can be given. The mutiny has caused an enormous rise in prices; and in the Deccan, the Poona and Southern Mahratta Horse have been placed in difficulties to mount themselves.

**26.**

Yes, except in cases of great emergency, as in the late mutinies.

**27.**

I think it would be highly advisable to have an agent at the Cape and Australia to have a regular annual supply of horses, which should leave the Cape in October in each year. Australian Horses are good, but the great distance is objectionable; experience has proved the superiority of Cape Horses, but for endurance and temper, Cape Geldings are the most valuable Horses that can be imported.

**28.**

I am not fully cognizant of the working of the Government Studs, but since their being abolished, the breed of horses in the Deccan has much deteriorated.

**29.**

In the Scinde Horse Rupees (30) thirty per mensem for man and horse.

In the Poona and southern Mahratta, Rupees (25) twenty-five.

**30.**

On the frontier of Scinde, men and horses are kept thoroughly efficient for Rupees (30) thirty a month.

In the Deccan Rupees (25) twenty five a month are not sufficient; the men are in great distress, and the sooner this subject is enquired into the better; all must depend upon where the Campaign is, before the latter part of the question can be satisfactorily answered.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**30 b.**

This subject has occupied much attention, and I believe the Irregular Cavalry is free from debt.

**31.**

I think Irregular Cavalry much under-paid, the price of horses having much increased.

**32.**

I believe there is a difference in the several Corps. Assamees are sold by auction to the highest bidder under the sanction of the Commanding Officer. The number of Assamees is restricted, and no man out of the Corps is allowed to hold one. I advocate a restriction in the number of Assamees to be held by any one individual, but in all these matters much must depend on the Commanding Officer, who, if "selected," will not permit inefficiency either in horses or equipment, and the conduct of duty.

**34.**

I am not aware.

**35 & 36.**

I am not acquainted with any of these points.

**37.**

Answered above.

**38.**

I do not know. But existing circumstances caused by high rates press so hard upon the Irregular Horse in the Deccan, that the men are in great difficulty to mount themselves properly.





CAPTAIN H. O. MAYNE,  
*Commanding Mayne's Horse.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Merit and seniority combined, but latterly seniority supported by a species of compulsion emanating from the Adjutant General's Office, has been allowed to give a *right* to promotion, much to the detriment of the Army.

2.

Yes, they are usually taken from ranks in life, far above (not in *caste*) those of the Native Officers of the Regular Army, and as they supply the place of European Troop Officers, they are generally very intelligent, useful, and efficient.

3.

Yes very superior; but the best Native Officers are those who have not risen from the ranks, but have been enlisted as Native Officers from the respectable and substantial Yeomen of the district. Such have far higher authority over their men, than when they have risen from among them.

4.

No special examination has hitherto been prescribed, but a man should be always in his ability, attainments and conduct, during the routine of his daily service. I agree that examinations in Cavalry duties should be made by Cavalry Commandants, more generally and specifically than they are at present.

5.

No reply required.

6.

I am only personally acquainted with the mutinies of three Corps, a part of the 1st Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent mutinying at Aurungabad, the Sikhs first produced a split in the Corps, and this gave the opportunity to four Native Officers to side with their European Officers, three of these afterwards evinced gallantry of the highest order, their fidelity not only saved the 1st. Cavalry but *the other* Corps at Aurungabad, and the *other stations* in the Nizam's Territory, but generally in the 1st. Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, the Native Officers were the ring-leaders of the mutiny.

On the mutiny of the 2nd Cavalry, Gwalior Contingent, only one Native Officer, Mir-Umjudetly showed fidelity, and it was so distinguished that Government have granted him the title of Sirdar Bahadour together with the 1st Class of "the Order of Merit," and other favors.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I feel convinced that this liberality on the part of the Governor General has had the deepest effect on the minds of the Natives, and that the resultant good will not be effaced during the next Century.

Native Commissioned Officers in our Regular Army should be discontinued, they are a useless race, and ever in the way of the European Officers.

7 to 9.

No replies required.

10.

Most assuredly not, and *no pensions* ever will do so, though higher pay may, by creating a greater present self interest. I recollect on pensions being first proposed in 1843 for the Nizam's Cavalry that the old Soldiers and best men were most averse to the plan.

11.

The pensions should be prospectively abolished, and the rates of pay increased as a counterpoise; pensions should only be granted to those who distinguished themselves by bravery, fidelity, conspicuous and extraordinary good conduct on the recommendation of Commandants, and under the special sanction of Government; in fact, enlarge the number of Members of the Order of Merit and Order of British India: long length of service and ordinary good conduct to be disallowed as claims, the parties having been already paid by Government for both.

12.

I have no means of ascertaining.

13.

Merit and efficiency should alone be the claims allowed for promotion, and the old system so popular among Natives of bringing in young men of good family, reputation and substance as Native Officers should be returned to.

14.

Seldom or ever. I have had immense practice in Courts Martial, especially during these mutinies, and have ever found it most difficult to ascertain the real sentiments of the Court, who if left helplessly and mercilessly to their own partiality, stupidity and indecision, more often arrive at a wrong than a right conclusion. They usually leave no means untried to ascertain the opinion of the European Superintending Officer, and the exceptions are rare in which he has not ultimately to put into their mouths the finding, sentence, and punishment. Indeed the *best* Officers after toiling assiduously for years in the hope of obtaining an independent expression of opinion, resign themselves hopelessly to instructing the Court.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**15 & 16.** No replies required.

**17.** Reply to No. 17 on opposite sheet.

**18.** Service in Irregular Horse is far more popular among the Military classes who enlist under British colors, than that of the Regular Cavalry.

The many reasons for this preference may be all brought under one head, the absence of that *English* rule and regulation which they consider unjust and vexatious; by *English rule*, I mean rule adapted to govern the English, such is totally unsuited to control the Native.

There is scarce a soldier in India who does not consider the simple word of his Officer as infinitely more trustworthy than all the Rules, Regulations, General Orders and Acts, which ever were published.

---

*Extract from Minute forwarded to Foreign Secretary to  
the Government of India.*

Goonah, 11th March 1858.

EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

13. The pay of the Commandant is a matter I refrain from entering on, but I need hardly mention that the fullest powers should be conferred on him, late events having proved its absolute necessity, hence it is *indispensable* that all promotion should remain in his hands and be notified to Government that they may be gazetted.

The 2nd in Command who will possess increased responsibilities in one of these Corps should receive at least Rupees (750) seven hundred and fifty a month consolidated. No Cavalry Officer will come upon less, for the simple reason that he is better off with his own Regiment. It has been apparent of late years that Cavalry Officers will not accept these situations on Rs. (500) five hundred salary, which is often less than the Adjutant, his junior Officer, draws.

The Adjutant's pay may be consolidated at Rupees (600) six hundred a month, the present plan of paying men of different services, at different rates, for doing precisely the same work is wrong in principle, and is a constant cause of confusion and reference to the Audit Office.

The probationary plan which the Government have lately adopted in various departments can not be too highly recommended here. Where Officers are so few, the very life of a Corps of Irregular Horse depends upon the peculiar aptitude of the Officers attached

to it, which practice alone will prove. Many a youngster of otherwise excellent qualifications, who might distinguish himself in other departments fails in this, wherefore a young Officer on probation might be attached to each Corps on Rupees (400) four hundred a month, and after trial if he does not possess, or is unlikely to gain, that capacity essential for this service, he may be allowed to go elsewhere, but if fitted, the great benefit ensues of having an Officer trained to the system and capable of at once taking up the next higher grade instead of being inefficient for months whilst learning his duty.

Assistant Surgeons with the Gwalior Contingent Cavalry draw Rupees (616) six hundred and sixteen, those with the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry draw Rupees (530) five hundred and thirty, therefore with the increased Medical charge a consolidated allowance of Rupees (550) five hundred and fifty may be considered but fair.

### NATIVE OFFICERS.

14. The system of having a Rissaldar or Rissaldar Major as the native staff of an Irregular Corps is far preferable to that of having a Junior Native Officer as Native Adjutant or Woordi Major.

The first plan puts the native chief in his proper position and in direct responsibility to the Commanding Officer, securing him both the obedience and respect of his Junior Officers and the men; the second creates a double Government, and two parties are often formed in the Corps in consequence. You cannot wholly deprive the senior Native Officer of the responsibility attached to him as such; on the contrary, on an emergency, he is one of the first called to account, but you partly take the power away from him by creating a junior official, whose constant aim will be to gain the highest influence in the regiment not only over him but over the other Native Officers who are his Seniors, to effect which, he is constantly resorting to measures which are productive of intrigue and bad feeling.

The Native Chief should be therefore a man of great respectability and well paid, and I have recommended a salary of Rupees (300) three hundred, being the same rate as is drawn in the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry.

15. The rank of *Rissaldar Major* is a misnomer, being a Latin conjoined to an Urdu term. The head of a Rissaldar or Corps should be a Rissaldar. The term Rissaldar is also wrong, it meaning a messenger, it is also disliked. I have therefore taken up the old and more suitable rank of *naick Rissaldar*, and named Rupees (150) one hundred and fifty, that being the salary in all Irregular Horse for a Troop Captain.

The pay of a Jemadar of the late Gwalior Contingent was first laid down at Rupees (70) seventy, it was then reduced to Rupees (45) forty-five, but as this is too small to enable him to support his position respectably, I recommend only a reduction of Rupees (10) ten, and that his pay be fixed at Rupees (60) sixty, as he has to provide himself with superior equipments and horse. The Duffadars are named for the usual allowance of Rupees (10) ten over the Sowars, or Rupees (35) thirty-five, each.

The Shutur Sowars Rupees (30) thirty each, these are the most useful adjuncts to Irregular Cavalry, or a force in the field: they carry orders, correspondence, pay, and

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

perform any other duty where great distance has to be performed with celerity, and where a horse would knock up; they can also be made most efficient in the field with Jacob's double rifles, they are no extra expense, one per Troop being simply substituted for a Sowar.

Although at first sight it may seem of small moment, yet it is highly important to introduce half-caste Trumpeters into these Corps; firstly, because they can never be led away by disaffection, the Corps without them will be deprived of one of its most essential adjuncts, indeed it becomes partially useless without Trumpeters; again, Mussulmans consider trumpet blowing as a menial service, and none but the worst will accept the berth, hence they are generally "Vauriens," so to ensure the other element being introduced, an extra sum of Rupees (5) five should be allowed, and the Trumpet Major, or Non-Commissioned Trumpeter should get Rupees (40) forty, and the Trumpeter Rupees (30) thirty.

**19 & 20.** No replies required.

**21.**

Irregular Horse should all be mounted on the Silladar system, and entirely by themselves.

If the Government interfere, they will not improve such matters and will only put itself to great cost; the mounting of Irregular Horse had far better be left to the energy and discretion of the Government appointment to command these Corps.

If better horses are required, increase the "shurra," and the improvement follows *per se* as a matter of course.

**22.**

I have no means of calculating.

**23.**

No means of ascertaining.

**24.**

The Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry are mounted mostly on Arab Horses from Bombay. On relinquishing command of the 3rd Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent in June 1857, the remounts for the last year were Arabs 85, Dekkan 14, Hindoostan 3, Velaiti 2.

**25.**

The average cost of Horses in the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, 3rd Regiment, for the year 1856 was Hyderabad Rupees (408) four hundred and eight, equal to about Company's Rupees (350) three hundred and fifty.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

26.

The system of mounting the H. C. Cavalry (one of free trade) answers admirably, and they are certainly the best horsed Irregulars in India. The horses in our Madras Cavalry are excellent, better could not be desired, and I have never heard of the Madras system failing to produce both full and good supplies of horses; that in Bombay is nearly similar and equally popular. I visited many of the Studs during my sojourn in the Bengal Presidency in 1848-49-50, and inspected the horses of every Cavalry Corps and horsed Artillery that I met with, they were certainly *far inferior* both to the Madras and Bombay cattle.

27.

A wider adoption of the system of the other Presidencies, and the transfer of the studs to the high and dry table lands of the Dekkan and Central India. The established localities in Bengal and the North Western Provinces fostered by all our care, European knowledge and Indian experience, have failed in producing a good hardy horse for Military purposes, and as it is very certain that such horses can be bred in India, we should naturally enquire in what localities this success was obtained. The old Mahratta horse, bred on the Bheema River, nearly approached the Arab in excellence, form, and endurance; whilst the good Kettiawar horse is handsome, more wirey, and more active than the Bengal Stud bred.

Remove the studs to climates favorable for horse breeding, and in a few years we shall have no more complaints about stud bred cattle.

28.

The Studs should not be abolished; but the localities changed, as above recommended. Government should not be subject to the fluctuations of any market, or have to rely on foreign countries, as a war might cut off, or seriously diminish, the supply.

29.

The pay of Troopers in the Hyderabad Cavalry, is old rate Hyderabad Rupees (40) forty, Company's Rupees (36-6) thirty six, six annas, new reduced rate Company's Rupees (30) thirty. The Government paid *each* trooper Rupees (5) five extra (so that some got Rupees (41) forty one) because their pay was insufficient to meet their expenses.

30.

The above rates, *with the extra pay*, did no more than pay the expenses of the men, when every thing is at war price, *as must be the case whenever an army takes the field.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**30 b.**

Scarcely ever; even with the H. C., shurra, it is difficult to prevent debt.

**31.**

Yes, it should be increased to Company's Rupees (30) thirty, for reasons given *on the opposite page*. Also because as the same rate of pay Rupees (25) twenty five is now granted to mounted Police as well as to Irregular Cavalry, the latter, which Government intend to be the superior arm of the two, will rapidly become the inferior. The services of the mounted police are confined to local districts, where they have the opportunity of establishing homes, they have to find less expensive horses, uniform, arms and accoutrements, than those required for Irregular Horse, their drill and discipline being less perfected, they gain that "Aram" so precious to every Native; they are also less liable to be called upon to engage in prolonged warfare, from all of which causes the mounted Police is becoming the favorable service; hence before many years, unless the pay of Irregular Horse is augmented they must be content with the refuse of the recruiting districts, whilst the Police have the pickings.

## EXTRACT OF A LETTER

FROM CAPTAIN H. O. MAYNE,

*Commanding Mayne's Horse,*

TO SIR R. HAMILTON, BART.,

*Agent Governor General for Central India.*

*Goonah, February 25th 1858.*

4. With regard to the Rupees (25) twenty five rate of pay sanctioned for the present, I beg most respectfully yet most earnestly that you will again submit to the Supreme Government the almost imperative necessity that exists for their sanctioning Rupees (30) thirty per man as first recommended.

5. Nearly 17 years' experience of Irregular Horse enables me to speak with certainty on this point, wherefore, I hope you will forward on my views, as I believe, that the arguments for granting the extra Rupees (5) five a month are of such paramount importance, as will divest the reasons against the measure of the value they would otherwise possess.

6. It is a significant fact that the two bodies of Irregular Horse, who stood the firmest in the late revolt were the Sind Horse and the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, both

receiving Rupees (30) thirty a month. Another of great note is that the cry of "Rupiya roz" a Rupee a day, lured away the great mass of Irregular Cavalry to Delhi, this rate being the "Ultima Shule" of their aspirations.

7. It has been recorded by the most eminent Irregular Cavalry Officers, Colonels John Sutherland, Evan Davis, James Blair, John Jacob, William Mayne and many others, whilst I know none who do not firmly hold the opinion, that the Irregular Cavalry Horseman cannot be efficiently maintained as a Cavalry Soldier for *Military* purposes on less than Rupees (30) thirty a month. Horse Police can be kept for Rs. (20,) but not the trooper for the field.

8. In my intimacy with the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, I have heard many acknowledge that the great secret of their holding together during the late mutinies, was to be found in the magnitude of the interests they had at stake viz. the Rupees (30) thirty pay, the system of large Pagahs or Studs, and the value of their Assamies or Commissions.

9. This will be better understood when I mention that the auction price of these Assamies averages from Rupees (1200) One thousand two hundred to (1500) One thousand five hundred each in the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry on Rupees (30) thirty, whilst in the Gwalior Contingent Cavalry on Company's Rs. (20) twenty, they fetch but Rupees (350) three hundred and fifty at most, and in the Bhopal Contingent (which was stationary) on Bhopal Rupees (20) twenty, the price was Bhopal Rupees (400) four hundred.

10. The rate at which the value of the Assamy with the higher rate of pay increases, is very remarkable. The Hyderabad man draws one third more pay than the Gwalior man, yet the value of the interest he has at stake is *quadrupled*, so that the Government by giving the Hyderabad rate, or (33) per cent above the Gwalior rate, create a corresponding security of (400) four hundred per cent, an absolute funded interest in the Government, and entirely dependent on its stability.

11. The partial mutiny of the 1st. Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, was commenced by men who had no personalty at stake, and they drew others into the whirl; the entire mutiny was averted by the men of property holding firm to save their substance, and causing disunion. The immense value of the small increase is surely sufficient to outweigh any financial reasons for withdrawing it.

12. Still more weightier influences however are obtained by the Rupees (30) thirty rate. That the efficiency in arms, uniforms and horses, can be largely augmented is very obvious, but with it a higher "morale" is gained, men on a lower rate than Rupees (30) thirty are forced into pecuniary transactions which though questionable, cannot be checked without harshness, if not injustice; whereas on the higher salary, a Commandant can forbid such at once. This principle has been long ago recognized by Government, with regard to subordinates in the Civil offices, it is equally applicable to the Irregular Trooper.



13. A better class of men are obtainable at the rate of a rupee a day—which makes it worth the while of the Yeomen, or Zemindars, to take service and appoint their kinsmen agents for their property or farms. By recruiting from this class another very important interest is attached to the Government and a firmer union created between it and the governed.

14. As an Officer of the Madras Army, I have ever been opposed to caste prejudices, and care not what a man be, so that he is good of his kind, for there is no doubt that the most respectable of each class make the best Soldiers whilst the disreputable make the worst, and though with these, we shall, please God, have no more mutiny, yet the knowledge that the spirit still existed would be very hateful.

15. Even rupees (30) thirty is often insufficient for the Irregular Horsemen in the service, for on the Sindh Horse going to Persia, with their transit expenses paid, their pay was raised temporarily to Rupees (35) thirty-five, and the same sum granted to the Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry during their present campaign in Contral India. I know that these latter could not support themselves and Horses, though many were drawing the old Nazim's Cavalry rate of rupees (36) thirty-six, plus rupees (5) five, making rupees (41) forty one, with food and forage at war prices (as they will always be on service) so if it was necessary to grant rupees (35) thirty-five in these cases, surely no further proof is wanting of rupees (25) twenty-five being insufficient.

16. I submit however the average expenses of men in the Hyderabad, and Gwalior Contingents, the correctness of which I can vouch for.

	Hyderabad Cavalry.		Gwalior Cavalry.	
<b>First outlay for a Silladar,—</b>				
Price of a Horse, .....	400	0	250	0
Uniform and accoutrements, .....	60	0	40	0
Arms, .....	50	0	47	0
Tattoo, .....	20	0	20	0
House, .....	30	0	30	0
<b>Total, .....</b>	<b>560</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>387</b>	<b>0</b>
<b>Monthly expenses,—</b>				
Grain and forage for horse and tattoo,.....	10	0	9	0
Syce 4, other servants 2,.....	6	0	5	0
Fund, .....	2	0	2	0
Food and Clothing, .....	7	0	6	0
Interest on original outlay, .....	5	0	3	12
<b>Total, .....</b>	<b>30</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>25</b>	<b>12</b>

These monthly expenses may be reduced 4 or 5 rupees a month by great parsimony to enable the debtor to pay off the money borrowed. He may possibly raise half the sum amongst his relations, and then it will take either man 4 years and more if he is unfortunate, to clear himself of a necessary debt. The expence of renewing horses, and accoutrements, is not included in the above.

17. The only men who can profit by the service are those with money or property, and here is another reason for men of this stamp being sought for, as with debt comes inefficiency.

18. The Governor General may be induced to extend the rupees (30) thirty rate to the levies I am now raising, on the same plea that this sum was originally granted to the Nizam's Cavalry, and Sind horse, viz., the distance of the men from their own homes, as they will have to come from the Punjaub, Rohilcund, the South East border of Bikuneer, and the western parts of Rajpootana, the good men of which can only be tempted away by the higher rate, and also from the consideration that, as the Cavalry in Central India will always be amongst Native States more or less disorganized, and have to keep the surrounding districts under control, a superior and more effective body of Cavalry for Military purposes, such as the Sindh Horse or Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, is absolutely necessary for operations and unvarying success.

19. The rupees (25) twenty-five "shurra" is sufficient for men who are in the midst of their own homes as in the North Western Provinces, (where the duties will soon become those of mere routine) and the Punjaub, where commerce flourishes, grain abounds, and the horse market is well filled, but here in Central India we are deprived of all these advantages and need some compensation.

20. I earnestly beg that if the Supreme Government are willing to grant the rupees (30) thirty, it may be notified to me at once, as the fact will make a great difference with the "material" of the new levies, which when once entertained takes many years to eradicate.

21. Still at the same time, should it be out of the power of Government to accede to it, the Governor General may depend upon my using my best efforts to carry out his wishes, both in the letter and the spirit, and raise the most efficient force that can be produced at the rate he orders.

---

#### EXTRACT OF MINUTE.

*Goona, 17th March 1858.*

10. With regard to the rate of pay for the men, I have already fully entered into the advisability of granting the rupees (30) thirty, "shurra" in my communication as per margin No. 53, 25th February 1858. A rupee a day to arm, equip, and support a trooper and his horse, is certainly not an over charge.

A European Dragoon costs rupees (95) ninety-five a month, whilst our Regular Cavalry men cost rupees (75) seventy five each, including all expenses, the Government doing the work themselves at the least possible cost; surely a contract then taken at less than one-third of the first, and equal to two-fifths of the latter, must be considered the reverse of over paid.

11. It will be seen that in the Corps thus constituted, paid establishments such as Lascars, Bhisties, Native Farriers &c., whose services the men benefitted by are done away with, as also are the expenses of Regimental Native Staff and allowances for match and repair of arms, the increased rate being in lieu of these and including all extra expenses.

12. If the Government will grant rupees (30) thirty "shurra," the batta question is entirely done away with, for the men neither expect batta or is it desirable to give it them. Enlisted for general service on this rate, they will go willingly any where without fear of being ruined by debt from going on service.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**32.**

- A. Replied to in minute affixed to No. 31.
- B. Ditto ditto no restrictions exist in the Irregular Cavalry, and my new levies of Horse modelled thereon.
- C. I do, and they are the only temptation the Yeomen and landed proprietors possess, to enter on service.
- D. Assuredly they are for reasons given in minute affixed to No. 31.

**33.**

Central India from 15 to 20 rupees generally.  
Scindhia's Phulhalie Rs. 20.  
Holkar's Hali, Rs. 18.

(Signed,) H. O. MAYNE, CAPTAIN,  
*Commanding Mayne's Horse.*



# CAVALRY.

---

## 4.—EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. Within your experience, have the powers of Commandants of Corps of Cavalry in the \_\_\_\_\_ been increased or diminished?
2. During the above period have the powers of Officers Commanding Troops of the \_\_\_\_\_ Native Cavalry of the \_\_\_\_\_ been increased or diminished?
3. What has been the result upon the discipline of the \_\_\_\_\_ Cavalry of \_\_\_\_\_ of the increase or diminution of the powers and influence of Commanding Officers of Corps?
4. What is the result of the increase or diminution of the powers and influence of Officers in charge of Troops?
5. Upon what does the discipline of a Corps upon service mainly depend, especially of a Native Corps? Upon the distant authority of Head Quarters? Or upon the authority and influence of Officers in charge of Troops, and in Command of Corps of Regular or Irregular Cavalry?
6. Should the powers of Commanding Officers and of Troop Officers be increased or diminished?
7. What other measure can you suggest for the improvement of discipline?
8. Is the influence of the European Officer among Native Troops greatest in time of Peace, or in time of war?

QUESTIONS.

- 9.** What conclusions do you draw as to the course to be pursued with Native Troops in times of Peace? with regard to the strength at which Regiments should be maintained, occupation to be found them, and the like?
- 10.** Has the strength of the \_\_\_\_\_ been so great in times of Peace, that it might have been in part employed otherwise, than on mere Military duties?
- 11.** Would it have been practicable to employ the \_\_\_\_\_ Cavalry of \_\_\_\_\_ otherwise, without injury to its horses and discipline?
- 12.** If Native Regular Cavalry be kept up, with a full complement of European Officers, would you attach Cavalry Cadets at once to Native Corps, or for a time to Dragoon Corps?
- 13.** If a few European Officers are assigned to Native Corps of Cavalry, whether Regular or Irregular, how would you select and train them?
- 14.** Is the efficiency of the Corps of Regular Cavalry in the \_\_\_\_\_ affected by the number of Officers taken away from their Corps, for Staff employment?
- 15.** Speaking from your own experience, has any difference been observable in the course of mutinies in the conduct of Corps, (whether Regular or Irregular Cavalry, whose complement of European Officers was short or full?
- 16.** In the event of Irregular Cavalry being the only Native Cavalry maintained in the Indian Armies, how should the Officers of the Regular Native Cavalry be employed? With European Dragoon Corps raised for service in India, or with the Irregular Cavalry substituted for the Regular?
- 17.** Of what strength should the Corps of European Dragoons raised for service in India be? that is, the aggregate force of European Dragoons being fixed, should it be divided into Corps of 400 Sabres, or Corps of 800 Sabres, or of any other number, with a view to effectively meeting the requirements of the service?
- 18.** If Corps of the strength of 400 Sabres were preferred, would the same number of European Officers, as are now attached to Corps of Native Regular Cavalry suffice? and could the Officers be thus rendered available?

## QUESTIONS.

**19.** Is the system of formation in double Ranks as well suited to European Cavalry in India, as the system advocated by many British and Foreign Officers of experience, viz. that Cavalry should form and manœuvre in single Rank? Please to state at length the grounds upon which your opinion is based.

**20.** Assuming the single rank system to be desirable in India, of what strength should each Corps be?

**21.** Would it be practicable and advisable to attach to each European Corps of Cavalry a body of Native Irregular Horse?

**22.** If so, what proportion should the Native body bear to the European Dragoons of the Corps? How should it be armed? How mounted? How Officered?

---

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 1.** They have been practically diminished.
- 2.** Not required.
- 3.** Those who ought to know best say that the result has been unfavorable.
- 4.** Not required.
- 5.** Answered already under the head of Infantry.
- 6.** The powers of the Commanding Officers should be increased; the Troop Commanders and Natives, but they should have powers entrusted to them nearly akin to those of European Officers of Companies.
- 7.** Those suggested already for the Infantry.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**8. to 12.** Not required.

**13.** The original selection of Officers to do duty with Irregular Cavalry should depend upon a man being a good Horseman and linguist and showing a taste for the branch. He should be with the Irregular Cavalry for a year on probation before he was finally appointed; not one Officer in ten is really suited for Irregular Cavalry.

**14.** Not required.

**15.** Answered under the head of Infantry.

**16. to 20.** Not required.

**21.** It is doubtful whether this should be done, opinions vary, and probably efficiency would be as well obtained by having separate Cavalry Corps, but there is no reason why both systems should not prevail.

**22.** If Native Cavalry form part of the same Regiment as Dragoons, the Natives should not exceed 2-5ths of the whole. They should be on the Irregular system armed as in either cases, and have at least one selected European Officer for each Squadron.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Fort St. George.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Madras Army.*

**1 to 16.** See my replies to the sixteen foregoing questions Head "Infantry No. 4 European Officers." They are quite as applicable to Cavalry.

**17.** Presuming that the strength of Regiments of Dragoons of the Royal Army has been fixed with reference to considerations of thorough efficiency, experience and mature deliberation, it appears to me that Corps of European Dragoons, raised for service in India, ought to be composed of the same number of Sabres. At the same time I will state, though with diffidence, that my individual opinion is, that



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

a Regiment of 500 Privates with the regulated proportion of Non-Commissioned Officers, and consisting of eight Troops, is the best and most handy organization.

18.

The existing establishment of Officers for a Regiment of Native Light Cavalry will suffice for a Regiment of European Dragoons, of the strength indicated in my reply to the preceding question, if none are withdrawn for staff or other detached employment. But if the present system is preserved in denuding Corps of the Line of their best Officers and creating a craving to get away in those who remain, I hold that it will be impracticable to maintain Regiments in a state of thorough efficiency.

19.

A single rank admits of shewing a more extended front, every sword comes into play also, and these are obvious advantages. But a single rank *looks* weak and loose, and I think is so in reality as well as in appearance.

The double rank on the other hand has weight, solidity, and compactness, and I think that order of formation adds materially to the confidence of the Soldier; likewise, on these grounds, I base my opinion in favor of the double rank system of formation. At any time a single rank can be formed if occasion requires, but let the double rank be the rule.

20.

Trusting that the single rank system never will be introduced, it is unnecessary for me to reply to this question.

21.

Of course it would be practicable, but in my opinion most undesirable, and in every way objectionable to attach a body of Native Troops permanently to any European Corps.

22.

Requires no answer referring to my reply to the preceding question. I consider my replies on these points with respect to Infantry equally applicable to Cavalry.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR, P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Fort St. George.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Irregular Cavalry, Bengal Army.*

1.

Since the Irregular Cavalry have been brought under direct military authority and subjected to the general Regulations of the service,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

the powers of Commanding Officers have certainly been much diminished, and of late years the tendency has been to diminish more and more.

2.

If by discipline is meant the perfect subordination of the men to their Commanding Officer, I think that taking out of his hands the almost absolute authority he formerly exercised, has been very injurious.

5.

Certainly upon the authority, influence, and example of the Officers who serve with, and belong to them, more especially the Commanding Officer.

6.

The powers of Commanding Officers should be increased; as I have before said, they should be almost absolute. The powers of Officers of Troops in Corps of Irregular Cavalry where there are no European Troop Officers, should be regulated entirely at the discretion of the Commandant of the Regiment.

7.

Abstain from over-drilling and the efforts to convert Corps of Irregular Cavalry into Regiments of Regular Cavalry, and return to the old custom of encouraging them to practice their Native exercises and feats of Horsemanship and arms.

13.

See my replies to questions 13 and 14, Head "Infantry" 4 European Officers.

14.

No answer.

15.

See my reply to question 16, Head "Infantry," 4 European Officers.

16 to 20.

No answers.

These questions have already been answered in reference to Regular Cavalry and Infantry, and the same replies are, I consider, equally applicable here.

---

## QUESTION.

## ANSWERS.

## PUNJAB COMMITTEE.

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

1. Diminished even more than in the Infantry ; formerly offences against discipline in the Corps were tried by a Panchayet or Jury of Native Officers, under the guidance of the Commandant, but this popular and effective institution has been abolished. Commandants have been prohibited from punishing or reducing Non-Commissioned except by the forms of Court Martial. Discharge of men has been put a stop to. The Commandant has not even the power to order any man in his Regiment to give an extra allowance of grain to a horse out of condition. All minor punishment must be dealt out according to Regulations. In fact every thing has been laid down by Procrustion rule, and the Irregular Cavalry has long been a misnomer.
2. No reply required.
3. To reduce the efficiency of the Regiments and to render them dangerous to the State.
4. No reply required.
5. The discipline mainly depends on the character and ability of the European and Native Officers present. But especially on that of the Commanding Officer ; at the same time we consider that the careful and judicious supervision of a superior authority is essentially necessary, and that such authority so exercised, must do good and cannot do harm ; we allude here to the supervision of Officers Commanding Brigades and Divisions, beyond which there should be no interference except in extreme cases.
6. See our reply to a similar query in former paper (No. 6 of Infantry, No. 4 on European Officers.)
7. See our reply to query No. 7 of Infantry paper No. 4.
8. to 12. No replies required.
13. After going through the course prescribed, the European Officers should in the first instance be selected for their probable aptitude for this branch of the service, be appointed to do duty on probation,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

and subsequently if successful, be promoted from grade to grade in accordance with their merit.

**14.**

No reply required.

**15.**

No difference observable; the character and general qualities of the European Officers have however certainly had some influence. These qualities have also had an effect on the character of a Mutiny in the first instance. Thus the men of some Corps took the lead in Mutinies, those of others were seduced, or overawed into Mutiny. In some Corps the Sepoys murdered their own Officers, in others they warned them to escape and so on.

**16.**

No reply required.

**17. & 18.**

No replies required.

**19. & 20.**

No replies required.

**21.**

No, certainly not advisable; it would be really reviving in a new phase the old system of Regular native Cavalry which was so costly and so useless.

**22.**

We do not think the scheme advisable, but if carried out, we would advocate two Dragoon Squadrons to one Native. In this case they should be mounted, Officered, and armed like the Europeans. We do not see how there could be two systems working smoothly in the same Regiment.

---

## SUPPLEMENTARY GENERAL REMARKS ON THE SUBJECT OF IRREGULAR CAVALRY.

We will now enumerate a few other points which seem to require attention.

If General Jacob's plan for an employed and un-employed list be adopted, it would provide for all these four points, otherwise they will require attention.

1. It sometimes happens that a Subaltern Commands an Irregular Cavalry Corps, and often that a Junior Captain does so. To prevent his being commanded by the Senior Captain of a Company of Infantry, he should have official rank of Field Officer.

2. In the same way the 2nd in Command should take precedence of Captain of Infantry.

3. A 2nd in Command should not have less than Rupees 600 a month.

4. The Officers of Irregular Cavalry should draw the same rate of pay, whether they come from the Cavalry or Infantry branch of the service, and when on leave of absence or sick leave should be liable to the same deductions as Officers of the other branches and no more. At present the Officers of Irregular Cavalry are at a disadvantage.

5. We have recommended the abolition of "Bargeers." If this be decided on, Native Officers (whose 2nd horse was mustered as a Bargheer's) should be obliged to keep up a 2nd charger, for which the proposed extra pay is a compensation.

6. If "Naib Rissaldars" be abolished, it could be best done by absorption, and in the interval, they should be put on the pay of a Junior Rissaldar.

7. The new rates of pay for the Cavalry should cover all charges, wherever the men are sent to. Extra batta should be abolished for foreign service, though it would rest with Government, as a special case to compensate the men for famine prices in an enemy's country.

8. Ordinary batta should be defined for all ranks so as to determine furlough pay and donation batta.

9. Half pay to be remitted to all ranks on furlough regularly and the balance paid on return to the Regiment. At present a man receives no pay while on leave (though he takes his horse with him) and gets it all paid to him when he rejoins. The consequence is, that he runs in debt.

10. Compensation for horses to be raised to Rupees 150, and to be granted whenever a man fairly loses his horse in action. Under the present regulations, if a wounded

man is dismounted and loses his horse, but is not killed himself, he gets no compensation for his horse. The Commanding Officers should judge, whether the horse was lost unavoidably or wilfully or by negligence.

11. The penalty of dismissal\* for a man who is dismounted more than three months is too severe; oftentimes, the Commandant is in fault.

12. The Irregular Cavalry should take precedence of all Infantry both as Regiments and individuals.

13. A hospital and hospital establishment, the same as other Corps, and hospital tent and carriage should be allowed.

14. Government tents should be allowed for the standard and rear guards, and carriage for them on the march.

15. The Carbines and Pistols should have the same bore, (No. 24 seems the best.)

16. A forge allowance of Rupees 60 per mensem should be allowed for each Corps for the repairs of arms.

17. General Chamberlain thinks that the pay of the Mounted Police should not approximate so closely to that of the Irregular Cavalry as has been proposed in the Punjab,† the popularity of the Police service being likely to place the Military Branch at a disadvantage as to recruits. But Sir John Lawrence and Lieutenant Colonel Edwardes do not concur in this, for the following reasons. The Army and Police together, does not furnish employment for all the candidates, and both branches can be as select in picking recruits as is necessary. Therefore, no difference of pay seems required to give the Cavalry the best stamp of recruits, and both can be paid with reference only to the duties they have to perform, and the expenses they are put to. The duties of the Police are constant and responsible. They are always riding about on some errand or another, consequently there is great wear and tear of horses and accoutrements, far more so than in the Cavalry as a class. The Punjab Cavalry it must be admitted has had great mortality in horses from unhealthiness of particular stations, but this is exceptional. Again, great temptation is placed in the way of the men of the Police, and it is practically necessary, both to diminish their necessities, and to increase the stake they have to lose. The case is however different with the Native Officers of Police, who are not worked or tempted in proportion, and we have accordingly proposed far higher rates of pay for the Native Officers of the Irregular Cavalry.

18. Lastly, we wish to draw attention to the disproportionate pensions given to the Irregular Cavalry. (See our remarks on this subject in reference to the Irregular Infantry, answer 12 of the Infantry Paper, No. 3 Organization, Promotions and Rewards.)

---

\* See page 61, Sect. 39, Military Regulations.

† Irregular Cavalry, 25 Rs., Mounted Police, 24 Rs.

## SUPPLEMENTARY GENERAL REMARKS ON VARIOUS BRANCHES OF THE SERVICE.

1. At present there are two Honorary distinctions available for Native Soldiers. *Firstly.*—The Order of British India which is limited as to number, and is given only for long and faithful and honorable services. *Secondly.*—The Order of Merit which is to afford personal reward for personal bravery, irrespective of rank or grade or length of service.

There is here no Order as a reward for General Merit, and the consequence is, the Order of Merit, though devised for valour alone, is given frequently for general service. This is inappropriate, and either the Order of British India should be thrown open to all Merit, or else there should be a 3rd Order for valour alone.

2. Formerly there were in the Bengal Presidency, 12 Companies of Sappers and Miners, all Natives. The result in the rebellion was that all their scientific instruction was turned against us. In future there should be no Native Sappers and Miners, but 6 Companies of European Sappers and Miners, and any Native required to relieve the European of manual labour should only be Pioneers and never be instructed in Sapper work.

3. Men in the European Cavalry not found able to ride, should be transferrable to the Artillery or Infantry, which now they are not.

4. The heavy saddles and appointments of the European Cavalry should be done away with, and the lightest possible substituted, otherwise it would be of little use to get light weight men.

5. Also wooden Scabbards which keep swords sharp should be substituted for steel, which blunt them.

6. In the instruction of all Cavalry, but especially European, more attention should be paid to independent horsemanship and the use of arms, so that each Trooper may be self contained, and not dependent on the formation of rank. Native Troopers are very much more at home in the use of horse and arms than our Dragoons, who in every particular weight of men, weight of accoutrements, drill and regulation, require to be lighter and freer to be of real use in India. It is no uncommon thing for a Trooper to be unable to get his horse to leave the ranks when called by his Officer to the front.

7. The pay and audit Regulations require revision. At present they are too voluminous and confusing though much simplified from what they were some years ago.

8. The system of retrenchments as now practised in the Pay Department is productive of great public and private inconvenience, and is universally complained of. Pay is arbitrarily retrenched from abstracts, and then explanation or further information or vouchers are called for. The opposite course should be pursued (as is believed to be the case in other Presidencies) explanation, or support of charges should be called for,

with notice, that if not furnished in a certain time (say 3 months) the sum must be retrenched.

9. At the present time it may not be irrelevant to draw attention to the evil of allowing greatly differing scales of pay for similar ranks and Officers in separate Provinces, every new increase is in its way a revolution which spreads to the neighbouring provinces and services and carries with it discontent among large bodies of men: within the last few months the rate of 25 Rupees a month for Police Sowars has been originated in the North-Western Provinces, and increased rates for Native Officers of Military Police in Oudh, at the very time that large numbers of Punjab Troops and Levies were serving in those parts. These questions of pay are too wide to be dealt with piecemeal and it is very desirable that they should be harmonized by the Supreme Government on more general considerations; pay like most other things is a relative quality and men may be well satisfied with allowances till they see others get more.

10. In concluding the papers on the re-organization of the Native Army in India in which the injurious effects of over centralization have been unreservedly pointed out, and the restoration of greater authority to Commanding Officers warmly advocated, we desire to acknowledge a full consciousness of the opposite dangers which arise from abuse of discretionary power. Of the two evils if one must be chosen, we would accept the latter, in general reliance on the character and sense of duty of our countrymen, and in face of the paramount necessity of our position as conquerors in India. But we believe that a reasonable and middle course is to be found, in substituting for the distant, minute and weakening interference of Army Head Quarters, the supervision of selected local Brigadiers and Generals of Division. If care be taken that these important appointments be given to those who can most efficiently fulfil the duties, and not allowed to sink again into sinecures and rewards for mere length of service, a constant and vigorous control would at all times be kept over the Commandants of Regiments and we should neither hear of Corps being driven into mutiny by harshness, nor allowed to be driven into it by pampering and weakness. A mercenary Army is a keen and effective weapon, but it is only safe in a tight and determined grasp. By the system which we have in view and have endeavoured to describe, while the Commanding Officer would possess real authority in his Regiment, the Brigadier in his Cantonment and the General in his Division, there would still remain ample scope for the large and comprehensive control of the Commander-in-Chief, a control which divested of all detail, would have leisure to take in the general arrangements, enunciate great principles, and insure unity of system in the Army.

(Signed) JOHN LAWRENCE,  
*Chief Commissioner.*

(Signed) N. CHAMBERLAIN,  
*Brigadier General.*

(Signed) H. B. EDWARDES,  
*Lieutenant Colonel.*



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

MAJOR GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commanding Oude Field Force.*  
*Bengal Army.*

1. The powers of Commanding Officers of Corps have diminished of late years.
2. No reply.
3. Discipline should tend to strengthen the power and influence of Commandants; it has been the tight building of rules and regulations at variance with the constitution of the service which has weakened them.
4. No reply.
5. The discipline of an Irregular Corps mainly depends on the character of the Commandant; to be effective it should be so; possessed of the authority necessary for his position, a good Commandant will have sufficient influence with the Officers Commanding Troops and Squadrons to ensure a proper tone and the discharge of duty.
6. See 1, 3 and 5.
7. To improve the discipline and establish a certain uniformity of system in the Irregular Cavalry, I would put the body under one head. There should be an Inspector General under whom there should be Inspectors or Brigadiers of Districts or Divisions. The powers of Commandants should be increased, but subject to the check and supervision of the Inspector General.  
  
 Banks should be prohibited in Regiments on the 1st. embodiment of Corps, debts for arms and various appointments must be incurred. Government should here help the sowar, after a certain fixed period any man found in debt should be discharged. The great object of every Commandant should be to preserve his men from debt; on Rupees 20 per month this was impossible; on Rupees 25 it should be made a *sine qua non* of service. This is not the place to discuss the general rules which should guide the service.
- 8 to 12. No replies.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS

13.

I would send no Officer on entering the service direct to an Irregular Corps. He should do duty for two years at least with a Corps of the line, Infantry or Cavalry, after that he should be appointed to do duty, and thus become initiated. If an indifferent horseman, or otherwise incapable, the Commandant should have the power of getting rid of him.

14.

No reply.

15.

The only Corps which can be said to have been staunch, to have perilled life and limb for us, with a valor and heroism unknown in our previous wars have been the Irregular Corps with a few Officers. In almost all the instances these Officers have been changed by death and casualties. Yet the discipline and Loyalty of the Regiment have remained. In the few Corps of the line which have refrained from mutiny, their conduct has been chiefly attributed to the great influence exercised by one or two Native Officers. In no case have I heard it attributable to the presence of more or less European Officers.

16 to 18.

No replies.

19 &amp; 20.

No replies.

21 &amp; 22.

It would be very practicable, and I think advisable, to attach to each European Corps of Cavalry a Squadron of Irregular Horse armed, equipped, mounted in all respects like other Irregular Horse. They might be relieved from time to time or permanently posted to the Corps. I incline to the latter. The Squadron should have its own European Officer, familiar with the men and their customs, and all the orders of the Commanding Officer should be issued through him. It is not necessary to dwell on the duties which they could perform, and the exposure which the Europeans would thus be spared. They would also be of the greatest aid in procuring supplies and information during service.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,

*Commanding Peshawar Division,*

*Bengal Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

They have been greatly diminished.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

The result of the diminution of power in Commandants has been to impair discipline.

5.

The discipline of a Corps on service, as every where else, depends entirely upon the knowledge the men have of their immediate Commander's will and ability to punish breaches of discipline. That authority which is distant, a Native always thinks he can evade, and he holds it in no dread or awe.

6.

They should be greatly increased.

7.

To increase the number of European Officers three more should at least be attached to each Regiment, who should however in no way remove any responsibility from the Native Troop Officers but assist in a general supervision, and in the conduct of Detachments; on parade they should take the place of Squadron Leaders. They should be selected from those who, by their intelligence and horsemanship, are most fit and should be sent to a Light Cavalry Corps to pass their Drill should they not belong to that branch.

15.

I have had no experience to speak from, and I consider the power of European Officers to have been so much reduced, that it can have no reference to the question, whether it be answered in the affirmative or negative. The Native Soldier had ceased to look upon his Officer with awe and respect, power being the only thing a Native does respect.

21.

*Vide* reply to Query No. 19, section 1.

22.

One Squadron to a Regiment mounted and armed as all other Irregular Cavalry. Officered as recommended in answer to No. 4 section 1, as far as the Troops go, and to be considered a component part of the Regiment to which it is attached.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,

*Commandant-in-Chief on the Scinde Frontier.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1 to 4.

The system of centralization of subjecting the minds of all Regimental Officers to blind and unyielding regulation, has greatly diminished their Commanding powers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The habitual non-exercise of their own reason and discretion must have and undoubtedly has greatly lessened that individual force of character by which alone the Asiatic Soldiers can be efficiently commanded by European Officers. Similar questions to those have been replied to in full under other heads; those answers equally apply here, and it seems unnecessary to repeat at length what has been before recorded.

5.

The real effective discipline and useful Military power of a Corps of Asiatic Soldiers in our service depend wholly on the personal character and influence of its English Officers. The useful power of the Asiatic Soldiers depends entirely on what the English Gentleman has instilled into him.

If no virtue has gone out from the English Officer, none will be found in the Sepoy.

6.

I have answered these questions in full above, and it seems unnecessary to repeat the replies here.

7.

The scheme for the reorganization of the Indian Army proposed by me would, I am convinced, be found practically to provide for every want and to remedy every defect. It would be difficult and troublesome to carry into effect at first, by reason of the strong prejudices formed under the present faulty system, but there would be constant and continually increasing tendency towards perfect arrangement, and before long the soundest possible state would be arrived at, which nothing could afterwards shake or disorder. The discipline would depend on internal attraction instead of our external pressure; there would be a continual tendency in all the parts of the Army to aggregate the more firmly instead of to fly to pieces.

8 &amp; 9.

No answers required.

10.

Certainly not in the Bombay Presidency.

11.

I know not on what duties it is here proposed that the Cavalry should be employed. The Irregular Cavalry of the Bombay Army are already continually employed on every species of duty on which Cavalry could be employed at all.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

12.

It is a most excellent arrangement to cause all Officers on first joining the Army to serve for a year or two with an European Regiment if such Regiment be well commanded, but the advantage of the arrangement depends wholly on the character, conduct, internal good order and discipline of the European Corps to which the young Officers may be attached.

13.

A few known good Officers should be selected at first for merit alone to command Regiments. These Commandants should be permitted to select their own subordinates, and thus a school for the training of future Commanders would at once be formed.

A young Officer or two might be occasionally or generally attached to do duty with a Regiment, and would thus have an opportunity of qualifying himself for permanent appointment in the Cavalry Corps. All these matters are fully provided for in my scheme for the reorganization of the Army.

14.

The Regular Cavalry is so well paid and is so favorite a service, that there is very little inducement to any Officer to accept any appointment elsewhere; the efficiency of a Cavalry Corps is therefore never injured by the number of Officers withdrawn from it for Staff employment.

15.

There has been no open mutiny in the Cavalry of the Bombay Army, Regular or Irregular, but I am aware that a large number of men of our Regular Cavalry were disaffected and inclined not to support their Officers.

The number of European Officers actually present with Corps does not appear to me to have caused any effect in the fidelity or otherwise of the Sepoys; but the construction, the organization, of a Corps on the principle of having the Captains and Subalterns of Troops, European Officers in the one case and Native Officers in the other, produces a most powerful effect on the fidelity of the Native Soldiers.

It is not the mere number of European Officers which affects this question, but it is certain that Native Indian Soldiers are always more powerful, more obedient, and more faithful under a few well selected Officers, than under a great number taken at hazard without regard to character or qualification.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

With the European Dragoons. No Native Indian Troops can ever be properly organized, can ever be made perfectly trustworthy, unless the European Officers be appointed to them by judicious selection, and then allowed full powers over their men.

Most of the Officers formed in the old regular school may probably be found unfit to command Natives on sounder principles than those to which they have been accustomed.

17.

The best strength for a Cavalry Regiment is, in my opinion, 800 men of all ranks.

18.

Four hundred is in my opinion too few for a Cavalry Regiment, and the principle of adjusting the organization of the Army, so to provide for a temporary and accidental circumstance, seems to me to be very faulty.

19.

I have often used the single rank formation on particular occasions in war and as an exercise, and I think it sometimes very convenient and often more powerful in attack than the two rank close formation, especially when the numbers are small.

20.

The most essential thing to the success of Cavalry attacks is the having good and ready supports and reserves, the separating the two ranks from each other gives more support and reserves; disorder in the leading rank being then quite consistent with perfect order in the one following it.

The single rank formation may be, I certainly am of opinion that it is more convenient and often more powerful, but it is so solely because the second rank removed to a certain distance in rear, forms a better support for the front than when close up to it.

But these formations do not appear to me to affect in the slightest degree, the question of the number of men it is best to have in a Regiment.

It signifies nothing in a tactical point of view what the strength of the Regiment of Cavalry may be, for under arms, the integer of the Cavalry line is the Squadron as the Battalion is of the Infantry; you may have as many Squadrons as you please in a Regiment.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

But 800 men form a very convenient number for a regimental Command, and of this strength I should recommend all Cavalry Regiments, Native and European to be, whatever tactical formations might be adopted.

21.

It would certainly be practicable to do so, but I do doubt if it would be advisable. It would, I think, be much better to form the Native Irregular Horse into a separate regiment and to Brigade such regiment, when thought proper, with the European Dragoons.

22.

Equal numbers should be best, I think. The men should be armed, mounted and organized, as described for Irregular Cavalry generally. Officers for these, as for all other Troops of the Indian Army, should be carefully selected in consideration of qualifications and merit only from the general list of the Army; but I am very doubtful as to the propriety or advantage of the proposed arrangement; it might answer exceedingly well when the Officers of the European and Native Troops thoroughly understood the Asiatic Soldiers and treated them accordingly.

When the Native Soldier feels that he is understood and justly appreciated by Officers whom he also respects, there is nothing which he will not readily do or submit to. But under other conditions a little misunderstanding might lead to fatal mischief.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL J. F. BRADFORD, C. B.,

*Commanding Meerut Division.*

*Bengal Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commandants have been diminished.

2.

No reply.

3.

I cannot say that I have observed any difference as to discipline; but the discipline of the Irregular Cavalry have never been very strict.

4.

No reply.

5.

The discipline of a Native Corps depends upon the authority of the Commanding Officer, and the way in which he exercises his power.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6.

I think a Commanding Officer's powers should be increased, but in the exercise of his authority he should be subject to the supervision of the General Officer under whom he serves.

7.

This depends upon what the system of the Native Army is to be.

8 to 12.

No replies.

13.

I would select them as hitherto for the Irregulars, but for Regulars I deprecate the system of only a few Officers being attached to a Regiment, as it is useless trying to carry on the Regular system, without a full body of Officers.

14.

No reply.

15.

None that I have heard of, for I was not in the country at the time of the mutinies, but I do not think the number of Officers had any thing to do with the matter.

16 to 20.

No replies.

21 & 22.

I would not advocate Irregulars being so attached, as I can see no benefit likely to result from it.

They may always on service be so attached, if thought advisable, to the extent of one Corps of Irregular Horse to two Dragoon Regiments.

It would be a different question if Regular Native Cavalry are to be kept up, as in that case the best plan would be to let them form part of each of the European Regiments to the extent of one-half, and supposing regiments to be composed of 4 Squadrons, each alternate Squadron might be *Native*, dressed, armed and equipped, the same as the European part of the Corps; the discipline the same, and the number of Officers the same. This would of course require the abolition of Native Officers; but to ensure good men entering such a mixed Corps, the pay should be *good*, and it would be necessary to hold out a prospect of promotion to Commissioned Grades, (after a certain length of service as Havildars) in the Irregular Cavalry or the Police Force.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER CHRISTIE,  
*Commanding at Dinapore,*  
*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Most injuriously diminished.
2. No reply.
3. In former days the men looked up to the Commanding Officer, and did every thing in their power to please him. Now matters are greatly changed, knowing that all power has been taken out of the hands of Commanding Officers.
4. No reply.
5. On the influence and authority of the Officer Commanding, whether it be a Regular or Irregular Corps, and that of Troop Officers.
6. Most decidedly increased.
7. As recommended in No. 6, increased power to Commanding Officers.
- 8 to 12. No replies.
13. I would select indiscriminately from both Cavalry and Infantry, taking only those who were good Horsemen, and otherwise qualified for the mounted branch of the service for Regular Cavalry; I would attach them for a certain time to European Dragoon Regiments or until they become thoroughly acquainted with their duties. The system in the Irregular Cavalry being so different, I would post them at once to Irregular Cavalry corps, where, under a good Commanding Officer, they would soon be up to their work.
14. No reply.
15. Not the least in this wretched mutiny; there was no difference, in either case they have equally fallen away from their allegiance.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**16. to 18.** No replies.

**19. & 20.** No replies.

**21.** I think it would be quite practicable and advisable too, to attach to each European Regiment of Cavalry a body of Irregular Cavalry.

**22.** One Squadron of Irregular to each European Regiment of Cavalry to be armed with Tulwars and Carbines, mounted on their own horses and officered by selection from the Cavalry and Infantry indiscriminately.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL C. DAVIDSON,  
*Resident at Hyderabad.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

**1.** Has been much decreased in the last 20 years. When I entered the Nizam's Contingent in 1836, the Commandant was supreme in his Corps.

**2.** No reply required.

**3.** The discipline has been much injured by the diminution of the authority and powers of the Commandant, and allowing the men to look to other sources for rewards and promotion.

**4 & 5.** No replies required.

**6.** Increased. A Commandant's power in an Irregular Cavalry Corps cannot be too great, if he has any fault of temper, want of activity and energy he should be removed, but his authority, except subject to supervision, should be really supreme.

**7 to 12.** No replies required.

**13.** I would select the best riders and most intelligent and active Officers I could obtain from the Cavalry and Infantry of the Indian Armies, and train them to the Irregular Cavalry work with those Corps.

**14.** No reply required.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

15.

All the Cavalry Corps of the Hyderabad Contingent were complete in their complement of European Officers during the late mutinies. I do not consider a full or incomplete complement of Officers has ever had any thing to do with mutinies ; they are generally brought about by impulses and an inherent restlessness and desire of change and plunder, common to every Native Soldier in India.

17 to 22.

No replies required.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL R. H. GALL,  
14th King's Light Dragoons.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Bengal Army.*

5.

I believe the discipline of a Corps on service to depend mainly upon the authority of its immediate Commanding Officer, of a Native Corps *especially*, on the understanding that the decisions of a Commanding Officer are final, and that he is the source of professional honor and advancement.

The distant authority of Head Quarters involves references and appeals, and there is no right so liable to be abused by a Native of India as that of appeal in the Native Army ; it becomes dangerous when it is exercised by ill disposed men, as the means of augmenting their own influence and weakening their Commanding Officer's position in the eyes of their more ignorant comrades ; by Natives further there is no power more respected than that of exercising liberality and executing justice, whether in the form of reward or punishment with promptitude and on the spot. In European Cavalry Corps the power of investigating certain cases and inflicting punishment or releasing a prisoner should be conceded to Troop Officers. For instance, an Officer in charge of a Troop may hear that one of his best and steadiest men has been imprisoned in the Guard room ; on enquiry into the circumstances of the case he may find that the man was not to blame or has committed an offence of no great magnitude. Surely the Officer might now award some minor punishment or release the prisoner, who would otherwise remain all night in imprisonment and be brought before the Commanding Officer on the following morning. The best Soldiers are proud of saying " I never appeared in the Orderly Room as a prisoner."

These remarks do not apply to a Cavalry Depôt, where Officers are mostly young and inexperienced.

**13.**

I would select them from amongst young Officers who should be induced to qualify expressly for Cavalry appointments, proving their eligibility by an examination passed before competent Judges.

After passing the examination, they might undergo a short course of instruction at the European Cavalry Depôt or the Head Quarters of any European Cavalry Regiment.

It is still a common error to suppose that scientific acquirements are only useful to Officers of Artillery and the Engineers.

A large amount of information which now never reaches Government, might be furnished by Officers of Irregular Cavalry possessing moderate professional attainments combined with a good colloquial knowledge of the language.

**21 & 22.**

It is practicable in the proportion of 250 Irregular Sowars to 500 European Dragoons, the former armed, equipped like other Irregulars and attached as auxiliaries, cantoned near, parading and serving in the field with the Europeans whom they would accompany every where. The association would be attended by certain inconveniences, but it could not be dangerous, as in the case of a Troop of Europeans attached to a Regiment of Irregular Horse. The Officers might be drawn from complete Regiments of Irregular Cavalry or selected from those who had qualified for Cavalry.

I would assign a larger proportion of Officers to Irregular Corps than they now have. Some Native Officers are very intelligent, but on service, in my opinion, they do not supply the place of a European one.

---

**BRIGADIER W. HILL,**

*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

**QUESTIONS.****ANSWERS.**

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

**1.**

I have not observed any increase or diminution of power of Commandants of Cavalry Corps. They have Local Regulations for the discipline of their Regiments which are adhered to by Commanding Officers.

**2.**

No reply required.

**3.**

The powers and influence exercised by Commanding Officers in their Regiments cannot be said to be detrimental to discipline for that has been maintained, being based upon the Local Regulations for the Hyderabad Cavalry, and the result has not been unfavorable to discipline.

**4. & 5.** No replies required.

**6.**

There is no necessity to increase the powers of Commanding Officers, beyond what they now possess.

The following extract from the Local Regulations for the Cavalry of the Hyderabad Contingent will show that the Native Officers are the Troop Officers of the Corps. "Internal discipline, even to the punishment of slight Military offences to be left as much as possible to the Ressaiddars, Ressaiddars and Duffadars ; and the internal management of the troop should be left to the Native Officers as much as possible, otherwise the men will not look up to them, nor respect them, neither will the troop be kept in order."

It will be seen from the above, that the principle has been to encourage as much as possible the influence of Native Officers over their men. To a certain extent this influence is very necessary for the maintenance of discipline ; but having very carefully observed this mode of carrying on discipline in the Irregular Cavalry both in this Contingent, and at Gwalior, I am of opinion, that Native influence ought not to predominate to such an extent, as almost to exclude that of the subordinate European Officers which it now in a great measure does.

The subordinate European Officers often feel that this operates to their disadvantage.

I have already recommended that there should be a fourth European Officer appointed to each Cavalry Regiment.

For the better disciplining of these Regiments, as well as to promote the increase of European influence over the men, I would suggest that each wing of a Regiment should have a European Officer to exercise a supervision over the Native Troop Officers, and receive their reports for transmission to the Commandant. This would strengthen the mutual interests of the European subordinate Officers and their men, by bringing them more immediately in contact with each other, and I think could not fail to have a most beneficial effect.

The increased influence which would thus devolve upon the European subordinate Officers of Cavalry, would also increase their responsibilities; and in times of difficulty and danger, they would be much better able to support the authority of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, than it is in their power to do, under the present system.

**7 to 12.** No replies required.

13.

From the experience I have had of the high spirit and bearing of the particular class of men who chiefly compose the Irregular Cavalry, I do not think too much care can be taken, in the selection of the European Officers for this peculiar branch of the service.

They should ride very well and be men of much physical strength to enable them to undergo the arduous and fatiguing marches, which the Native Cavalry are constantly called upon to perform.

I would recommend that for the future all Officers, before being permanently appointed to the Irregular Cavalry, should be sent on probation to the Regiment for which they are intended, and reported upon by the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, to Brigadier, or Inspecting Officer, as the case may be, upon whose final report of the qualifications of the probationer, the Governor General would decide upon his fitness for the appointment.

14.

No replies required.

15.

I have not observed any difference in this respect.

16 to 22.

No replies required.

---

MAJOR W. A. ORR.

*Commanding 1st Company Artillery, and late Commanding Field Force,  
Hyderabad Contingent. Serving in Central India.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

1.

I do not think within my experience that the powers of Commandants have been unnecessarily diminished.

2.

No reply required.

3.

I cannot see that any change in this respect has taken place. The same system has obtained in the service since I first entered it.

4 & 5.

No replies required.

6.

Without doubt, the more the hands of the Commanding Officer is strengthened, the greater will be his power and influence in the Corps. In fact the men ought to be taught to look up to him entirely, and consider his authority supreme in all things. And such it ought to be, subject to certain restrictions.

**7 to 12.**

No replies required.

**13.**

The selection of efficient European Officers for Irregular Cavalry, is a matter of very great importance, but it is one so well understood, that it would be needless my entering on it now.

The number of Officers (3) attached to Corps of Irregular Horse is quite sufficient for ordinary cantonment duties, but I consider it very advisable that this number should be increased on the Corps taking the Field, where the presence and leading of European Officers is absolutely necessary. I would recommend on Corps of Irregular Cavalry going on service, that at least two Officers extra should be attached to it. I am of opinion that a proper regard is not paid in the Hyderabad Cavalry to the Drill and training of Officers on first joining. No regular system is laid down or enforced of tuition in their new duties.

They are allowed to pick up such knowledge in any way, and it should not be permitted to depend on the individual himself, whether he attains or not to a proper degree of efficiency in the practice of Drill and manœuvre established for Light Cavalry.

**14.**

No reply required.

**15.**

I do not think it has ever been found that the fact of there being a more or less number of European Officers with a Regiment, has had any effect on its conduct during a mutiny or disturbance in the Corps.

**16 to 22.**

No replies required.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Regular Cavalry.*

1. In the Regular Cavalry the power of Commanding Officers has been much diminished.

Commanders of Irregular Cavalry being Magistrates, their awards do not often come under cognizance at Army Head Quarters, and I think they remain much the same.

2. Troop Officers have much the same power as formerly.

3. In the Regular Cavalry, as in the Infantry, the system of centralization has done harm by teaching the soldier to look beyond his Commanding Officer. I know that this system is full of mischief, but to carry out what is necessary would involve a total change of the organization of our Regiments, and I do not know that my opinion is required. I think that I am to answer only the questions as they are set down, as concisely as possible.

4. The result is that endless references are made to Head Quarters, to General Officers and Brigadiers, which the Commanding Officer should have full authority to decide. A selected Officer well knows the extent to which he should exert his authority, and when to make a reference. A thorough reform is wanted in these matters.

5. Upon the character and conduct of the Officers of a regiment. Every thing must depend upon this. Under well selected Officers and a good system, a Native Corps can be made to do anything. Nothing can be expected from that in force at present, where every Officer is striving his utmost to obtain employment elsewhere and a number of the English gentlemen are doing what should be the duty of Native Officers.

6. I would much increase the power of Commanding Officers, and leave them to delegate to those under them such authority as might be considered expedient.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

Magisterial powers should be granted to Commanding Officers; they should have much power to punish and reward; to promote, enlist and discharge. The promotion and dismissal of the Native Officers being subject to the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief. Appeal in all cases being opened to Brigadiers and General Officers in Command.

8.

No Military bodies should be employed in any but the duty of Soldiers. In times of peace the Soldiers should be trained to war.

9.

I do not know that other duty can be required of soldiers. To divert them from their legitimate work is to employ an expensive material in a very unprofitable manner. The Poona Horse has been much injured by performing police duty.

10.

Cavalry Cadets are much better doing duty with Native Corps.

With the English Regiments they would imbibe prejudices against the Natives which are not easily eradicated.

11.

There is no difficulty in making a selection from such a service as the Indian Army; peculiar fitness and merit should guide the selection, and Commanding Officers should choose their subordinates.

One or two Officers should be selected to do duty with these Corps and be thus trained for permanent appointment.

12.

There are but few Officers of the Regular Cavalry Corps on the staff.

The superiority of their pay and allowances prevent the inducement for any ex-regimental employment but that of a superior character.

13.

There has been no mutiny in our Regular Cavalry Regiments.

A few disaffected men were in the 2nd Cavalry, but their designs were exposed by men of the regiment.

The 2nd Cavalry was strong in Officers, but I have no idea that mere numbers have any thing to do with the fidelity or discipline of a Corps. Quality and not number is what is required.

14.

With European Dragoons raised for service in India.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**15.**

In my opinion, 500 Dragoons are as many as any one man can command properly in action ; that number would make a very efficient regiment.

**16.**

The Officers of the present three regiments could be drafted to two Dragoon Corps which should be raised for service under this Presidency.

All in excess of a Captain and two Subalterns per Troop being absorbed as casualties occur. In this, I do not allude to the Field Officers, the number of which should be as in the Royal Regiments in India.

**17.**

I have not the experience on which to give an opinion on this point, but I think the single rank formation preferable as being less liable to disorder, and the great principle of "supports" in Cavalry tactics being so much easier attainable.

**18.**

As I have said before of 500 men : as this number leaves a good body of Cavalry counting for guards and sick.

**19.**

The organization of the two should be quite distinct, as must be that of Europeans and Natives.

European and Native Regiments work well together in Brigade, but I would not advocate Irregular Horse being attached to European Dragoons.

The connection will never answer.

**20.**

Answered above.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,  
*Secy. to Government, Bombay.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

**1 to 15.**

The replies given to former queries may be applied to these.

**16.**

In such an event, I conceive it cannot be of much importance to the general question in what manner the officers thus rendered supernumerary may be disposed of; at the same time, I consider it would not be expedient to Officer the Irregular Corps entirely from the superseded Regular regiments.

**17.**

The present establishment of European Dragoon Regiments serving in India, viz, four squadrons, or eight Troops, is found to be a convenient and efficient strength for every purpose that can be contemplated.

**18.**

It would probably be found better to assign the Officers of two Native Regular Cavalry Regiments, to one of European Dragoons, supposing the strength of the latter to be about 800 sabres.

**19.**

This is a question for Cavalry Officers to decide.

**20.**

I am not aware on what principle the established strength of the regiment is to be regulated by the system of formation manœuvre.

**21 & 22.**

Whether practicable or not, I cannot think it advisable to mingle in one Corps the European and Native elements of the Army, and I fail to perceive the particular advantages to be expected from the combination of Irregular Native Horse with European Cavalry.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON,  
*Officiating Quarter Master General of the Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bengal Irregular Cavalry.*

1. It has been diminished.
3. Unfavourable.
5. On the Officers immediately serving with the men.
6. Increased.
7. Give a Commanding Officer full power and hold him responsible for the discipline of his Corps.
13. They must be well conversant with the Native language to begin with. Good horsemen, good tempered, but firm, and the more *bon homie* about them the better. They can then be best trained by being attached to Irregular Corps.
15. None.
21. Practicable enough, but I do not see that there would be any advantage in it.
22. I would not have more than one-third Natives. It could be armed, mounted, and officered, either on the Regular or Irregular system, as might be deemed best.

---

COLONEL W. F. BEATSON,  
*Commanding Beatson's Horse.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*Bengal Irregular Cavalry.*

1. Diminished.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2.

No reply required.

3.

Injurious.

4.

No reply required.

5.

On the Commanding Officers of brigades and regiments. The men supposing they have to look to the distant authority of Head Quarters has a most injurious effect; but you must be very careful to whom you give command of brigades and regiments. You should give them great power, but remove them for the first abuse of it.

6.

The powers of Commanding Officers should be increased on the condition stated in No 5.

7.

Appoint proper Officers to command, and enlist none but men who are "*ashrof*" in your Irregular Cavalry, and you will have no difficulty.

8 to 12.

No replies required.

13.

They must be gentlemen, good horsemen, fond of field sports, and Military exercises, know the Native languages, and be able to understand that Native gentlemen should be treated with all the courtesies you would shew to gentlemen of any country; none but men of that stamp should be appointed to the Irregular Cavalry as Officers; if you cannot find a sufficient number, give the Commanding Officers clerks instead of Officers.

14.

No reply required.

15.

The greater the number of bad Officers, the worse will be the conduct of the Corps; one good Officer would have his regiment in better order with clerks to write his papers, than with fifty bad Officers; a depot of *incapables* should be established in every division, and Officers Commanding brigades should have the power of sending any Officer there, merely reporting his reasons for doing so; any Officer who did not disqualify himself for the depot in six months to be sent home.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**16 to 20.** No replies required.

**21.**

There should be a squadron of Irregular Cavalry and half a troop of Native Horse Artillery attached to each Dragoon Brigade, but it would require a peculiar selection of Officers for such duties. The Officer commanding this squadron to be answerable for the inferior economy of his squadron, though of course under the general Military command of the Officer commanding the brigade to which he is attached.

**22.**

The Government should provide the hoases and appointments, but in other respects the squadron should be organized as Irregulars, two European Officers would be enough, a Captain and Subaltern for the squadron, and three Officers for each half battery of Artillery.

---

HIS EXCY. LIEUT. GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Irregular Cavalry.*

1. Not within my experience.
2. No.
3. The discipline is good. They are guided by the Articles of War.
4. Answered as above.
5. Upon the Commanding Officer and Officers of Troops acting on the Articles of War and the Regulations of the Army.
6. Not necessary.
7. No alteration can be made without abolishing the Articles of War.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

10.

I think it objectionable employing the Cavalry on Police duties except under Military control.

11.

I think great injury is done to discipline by employing them in that way.

12.

There may be an advantage in their joining Her Majesty's European Regiments.

13.

They must join as Cornets.

14.

Most certainly.

15.

The conduct of Corps has been unexceptionable.

16.

Post them as vacancies occur, and attach them to Queen's Regiments, in the meantime giving them full Indian pay and allowances.

17.

No Corps should be less than 800 Sabres.

18.

The Officers could not be available without breaking up the Native Cavalry.

19.

The double rank is the best for European Cavalry. It gives solidity to its operations when in a body; when acting on out-post duty, it may work in single rank, but you destroy its efficiency if you work it in single rank as a general system.

20.

This single rank is admirably suited to Irregular Cavalry.

21.

Certainly not; I consider such a measure would be most objectionable.

---

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

CAPTAIN H. O. MAYNE,

*Commanding Mayne's Horse.*

1.

Diminished—greatly to the detriment of the Corps—it is an old saying that a Commandant of Irregular Horse should be a King, but the Government should not hesitate to depose him if he systematically mismanages his Kingdom, or is guilty of some glaring errors.

2.

No reply required.

3.

One result of the decrease of the powers of Commandants is, that the men do not look to them as supreme, and consequently lost largely in respect for them, and the men getting "out of hand" was one of the many minor causes of the mutiny.

4.

No reply required.

5.

Hitherto has often depended upon the undue interference of various authorities at a distance, but I have no hesitation in asserting, and could prove from many cases which I have carefully watched for years, that the discipline or disorder, the weal or woe, of any Regiment, European or Native, Regular or Irregular, depends mainly on the moral influence, the tact, the example, the energy, the activity, the disuse of red tape, and the manly qualities possessed, or wanting, in a Commanding Officer. I have known corps highly improved, or greatly deteriorated in a year by good, and worthless, Commandants.

6.

The powers of all grades in the Army should be increased to an extent which would entitle full responsibility being taken from each grade for the amount of the charge under it; thus the Commanding Officer having full power in his Regiment, should not concern himself with the command of Companies or troops—he should give discretion and confidence to their Captains; and if they misuse either, he should correct them, and when any thing goes wrong, hold them responsible. The Captains should exact the same amount of responsibility from their Native Commissioned Officers, holding each one responsible for his squad and all that goes on in it.

7.

There are many measures which our best Soldiers consider might be carried out; but want of space, and being on active field service taking up all my leisure, I have not the opportunity of replying as



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

fully as I could wish. The careful selection of Commandants with peculiar fitness for Irregular Horse, giving them full power, and the choice of their European Officers, will generally secure perfect discipline, and rarely fail to produce good.

8 to 12.

No replies required.

13.

All should first be taught their Cavalry duties and discipline with European Cavalry Corps. Selections of *the most careful kind* should then be made of Officers possessing the *peculiar aptitudes* for Irregular Horse—such were made in former days. See the old lists of Irregular Commandants. These peculiar aptitudes are, a willingness to mix with, and make friends with, the natives—an iron will, an admirable temper, a love of, and excellence in, horsemanship, hunting and manly sports; a natural aversion to intrigue and party spirit, (a lawyer makes the worst Commanding Officer, and will ruin a Corps in six months, by raising questions) a constitution capable of standing sun and exposure, an intimate knowledge of the habits and customs of Natives, and the faculty of being able to turn these to use, and great proficiency in the language, especially in the colloquial. The list is long, but many of these qualities generally exist in one individual.

14.

No reply required.

15.

I think the Corps with few Officers have generally shown a better spirit towards them, though there are the saddest instances to the contrary.

21.

It would fail in practice, and is on this and other grounds, very inadvisable. The idea sprang up for a short period in India at the end of 1857 when men were mistrusting their own strength; but it has since rapidly died away.

22.

Replied to in No. 21.

I beg to apologize for the imperfect replies to many of the above questions, but they reached me at a time when we were on active field service, and the greater part of the day spent in the saddle, so that there was no leisure for aught save the Regimental work and raising of my new levies.



# ARTILLERY.

---

## RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF THE ARTILLERY.

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. What are the races, tribes and castes of which the Native Gunners of are composed ?
2. What are the races, tribes and castes of which the Gun Lascars of are composed ?
3. What are the races, tribes and castes of which the Drivers of are composed ?
4. Should Native Gunners, or Golundazes, continue to be enlisted, and to form part of the Artillery of
5. Should Native Drivers continue to be employed with European Artillery ?
6. From what districts are the several races, tribes, or castes which enter into the Golundaz, drawn ?
7. From what districts are the races, tribes, or castes which compose the Gun Lascars drawn ?
8. From what districts are the Drivers taken ?
9. Have any races, tribes or castes been excluded by Regulation or practice of the service, from the Golundaz of and if so, for what reason ?
10. The same question is repeated both with respect to Gun Lascars and Drivers ?

- 11.** Supposing that Native Artillery were continued in are there any races, tribes or castes, hitherto neglected or excluded, from whom recruits, for the Golundaz might with advantage be enlisted ?
- 12.** What Agency is employed for the enlistment of recruits, for the Golundaz of for the Gun Lascars and for the Drivers ?
- 13.** On entertainment of recruits for the Golundaz, the Gun Lascars, or the Drivers of the what precautions of Registry and other forms, are taken before the Local Authorities of Districts ?
- 14.** Would you suggest any alterations in the Recruiting Regulations or practice, if Golundaz continue to be enlisted ?
- 15.** The same question is put with regard to Gun Lascars and Drivers.
- 16.** What are the words of the oath administered to the recruit on his being admitted into the Golundaz of
- 17.** The same question is repeated with regard to the Gun Lascars and Drivers.
- 18.** How long has this form of oath been in use in the
- 19.** Can you recommend any improvement in the wording or matter of the oath administered to the Golundaz, Gun Lascar, or Driver, when first enrolled? or would you substitute any form of engagement for the oath ?
- 20.** If Native Artillery men continue to be used, should the different Battalions be raised each in a prescribed district, and be recruited there, and there only, or be recruited over a wide area irrespective of districts ?
- 21.** The same question is repeated with regard to Gun Lascars and Drivers.
- 22.** Should the Battalions, or Companies, or Troops of Golundaz, be homogeneous as to race, or caste, or composite, having all tribes or castes mixed up together ?
- 23.** If composite, in what proportion should the various races, tribes, or castes be entertained ?

**24.** The two foregoing questions are repeated with reference to Gun Lascars and to Drivers.

**25.** What Agency should be employed for recruiting Golundauz, Gun Lascars and Drivers ?

**26.** What precautions should be taken before the Local Authorities, or through their instrumentality, when enlisting recruits for the Golundauz, Gun Lascars and Drivers ?

**27.** If Native Drivers be discontinued, would you replace them by Europeans, raised for that duty or by European Gunners, trained to the duty as part of their exercise ; or by Anglo Indians, enrolled for this special duty ?

HIS EXCY. GENL. THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,

*Commander-in-Chief,  
Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 to 3.**

There is a much larger infusion of the Mahomedan element than in the Infantry. Some men (particularly Gun Lascars) come from Lower Bengal which furnishes hardly any Soldiers to any other branch of the army. These are Mahomedans, the Artillery generally come from Oudh, the Doab, Rohilcund and Districts of Agra, &c.

**4.**

The Artillery should be entirely European.

**5.**

Certainly not. The native Drivers are often a source of anxiety, and have the means of doing much harm.

**6 to 8.**

Already answered in Nos. 1, 2, 3, of this Section.

**9 & 10.**

I am not aware of any castes, races, or tribes having been excluded.

**11.**

I cannot contemplate their being retained, as I understand there can be no doubt that they will be done away with and no more enlistments are taking place.

**12.**

They are believed to come forward and offer themselves for service.

**13.**

Those laid down in the regulations, it is presumed.

- 14 & 15. Replies seems unnecessary.
16. Those laid down in the Native Articles of War, I presume.
17. Ditto.
18. I have no idea.
19. It seems a matter of indifference.
- 20 to 26. Answers seem unnecessary.
27. All the European Artillery men should be trained as Gunnners and Drivers, and the lightest men should act as Drivers.

---

HIS EXCY. LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras,*  
*Madras Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The same as the Madras Native Infantry.
2. As above.
3. As above.
4. I would never again have Native Artillery-men in India. The conduct of the Madras Native Artillery has been admirable hitherto, and the portions employed in Bengal during the disturbance have acquitted themselves most creditably. I would therefore maintain the existing Native Artillery of the Presidency, and let them gradually die off, enlisting no more Native Recruits however, and manning all Field Batteries by Europeans, the Golundauze while they are kept up being formed into Reserve Companies. I may add that these measures which I suggested more than a year ago are now being given effect to as opportunity offers under instructions from the Court of Directors.
5. Certainly not; all Artillery Drivers should be Europeans, or (if the experiment now under trial answers) East Indians, should it be found

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

that men of that class in sufficient numbers are procurable, which from present appearances is very doubtful.

6. Same as Infantry.
7. As above.
8. As above.
9. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.
10. As above.
11. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.
12. As above.
13. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.
14. As above.
15. As above.
16. As above.
17. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.
18. As above.
19. As above.
20. As above.
21. As in question 20.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**22.**

See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Artillery.

**23.**

As above.

**24.**

As above.

**25.**

See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.

**26.**

As above.

**27.**

See reply to question 5.

The stature of a Gunner should not be under five feet, six or seven inches, a well knit man of five feet, three or four inches is quite tall enough for a Driver, but they should nevertheless be bound by the terms of their enlistment to perform both duties if required.

---

MINUTE BY HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras Army.*  
 21st November 1858.

THE authorities at Home and in India have for upwards of thirty years entertained an anxious desire to assimilate the Artillery of the three Presidencies so as to admit of their affording mutual assistance and exchanging material, stores, and equipments on occasions of their being associated on duty or exchanging stations.

For these thirty years, this most important question has been keenly discussed by Artillery Officers of the three Presidencies. Successive Commanders-in-Chief in India have recorded their opinions on it, voluminous reports have been made, experiments tried, recommendations and suggestions innumerable have been offered, but as yet without any satisfactory result; and to shew that the real object is as far from being accomplished, *as, ever I need only point* to the fact that the Bengal and Madras Artillery have been unable to exchange armaments and equipments when directed within the last few weeks to relieve one another in Burmah and the Saugor division, and consequently the Madras guns and carriages and horse equip-



ments have to be conveyed from Mhow to Burmah and the Bengal material must be taken from Burmah to Mhow.

Why this most serious inconvenience has not been long since corrected and the necessary assimilation effected, is, I think, clearly explained by the Hon'ble the Court of Directors as follows "Each Government recommends its own fancied superiority in ordnance improvements and advocates the suggestions of its own Artillery Officers, little or no attention is paid to what may be already in useful operation at the sister Presidencies and comparisons which might be beneficial and lead to uniformity are seldom made;" letter dated 11th July 1834.

It is quite hopeless to expect unanimity on this subject amongst the Artillery Officers of the three Presidencies, and if assimilation so highly important and desirable is to be obtained, paramount authority can alone decide in what manner and to what extent it is to be carried out. I think therefore that the Honorable Court alone can effectually deal with this question, and it will be in the highest degree gratifying to me if the observations I beg to make prove of any assistance towards arriving at a final judgment on the several points in dispute.

It is in no spirit of presumption, but on the contrary, with very great diffidence that I approach a subject which has for so lengthened a period engaged the serious attention of so many able and experienced Officers of the highest rank, nor should I venture upon the task were it not that the whole correspondence having repeatedly passed through my hands whilst I was Adjutant General of the Army in Bengal, and having seen and minutely examined in every particular the Artillery of the three Presidencies, I have had opportunities of comparing each with the other not enjoyed by those who have preceded me when they recorded their sentiments.

I propose to consider the subject under each of the following heads :—

Organization.

Equipments.

Armament.

Light Field-Gun Carriages.

*Organization.*—The Madras and Bombay Horse Artillery is formed on the "Detachment system" as in the Royal Artillery and only the near Horses in draught are ridden.

In Bengal there is no Detachment, and every Horse in draught carries a rider, the system has proved thoroughly efficient in Bengal where the Horses are of much superior weight and substance, and it is far less expensive than the Detachment system which requires more men and more Horses. But the Bengal organization would not be suitable to the other Presidencies where the Horses are much smaller and lighter than the Bengal Government, Stud Horse. Moreover the differences in organization do not materially affect the real question the one Presidency being able to assist the other when necessary, and I would therefore make no alteration in this respect, but allow each Presidency to retain its own organization, and Bombay its shafts instead of the pole as used in Bengal and Madras.

The organization of the Light Field Batteries is the same in all the three Presidencies.

*Armament.*—The Bengal Armament of a Troop of Horse Artillery is five 6-pounders and one 12-pounder Howitzer, and of a Light Field Battery five 9-pounders and one 24-pounder Howitzer. In Madras and Bombay the proportions per troop and Battery are four Guns to two Howitzers which I consider greatly preferable, and for this reason every two pieces are supposed to be superintended by a Subaltern, and it is highly desirable that the pieces should be of the same description; but if only a single Howitzer is present this is impracticable and hence with a Gun and a Howitzer provided with different ammunition and varying in so many particulars, otherwise superintended by the same Officers much confusion and serious mistakes may and I am aware do sometimes arise in the heat and hurry of action. Further the 24-pounder Howitzer is the perfection of a Light Field Piece and if two are attached to every Battery with a Force in the Field, a Howitzer Battery can be readily formed at any moment.

In Madras and Bombay all Light Field Batteries manned by Native Companies are armed with 6-pounders and 12-pounder Howitzers, because Natives are thought to be physically unfit to work Ordnance of any heavier calibre, but judging from the appearance of the Native Artillery men here and in the Bombay Army, I am disposed to think that the prevailing opinion with respect to their physical powers is groundless. Doubtless they are not nearly such large powerful men as their Bengal comrades, but quite equal nevertheless to the service of a 9-pounder Battery, and I strongly recommend that the present comparatively useless 6-pounder Field Batteries in Madras and Bombay should be at once armed with the immeasurably superior 9-pounder Gun and 24-pounder Howitzer. In Bengal, one Troop of Horse Artillery was armed with the heavier Ordnance as an experiment and it answered admirably. It was a superb Troop (Fordyce's) and in the rapid advance and long marches to Peshawur under Sir Walter Gilbert, as well as in the Foray to Kohat under Sir Charles Napier this Troop always maintained a forward position without the least distress to either the men (European) or Horses, I do not however advocate Arming Horse Artillery generally with 9-pounders, but I think 6-pounders most objectionable for Light Field Batteries, and I hope that they may be peremptorily forbidden in the Madras and Bombay Armies.

*Equipment.*—In Bengal all harness and saddlery are issued in the first instance from the Government Stores and afterwards maintained complete in all respects from the contract allowance issued monthly to Officers in Command of Troops and Batteries who are responsible to superior authority that every thing is in perfect order.

When an Officer is appointed to a Troop or Battery to supply a vacancy, he is required to purchase, at a valuation such of the stock ordered to be kept up as may remain in store the property of his predecessor and whenever an Officer is removed from a Troop or Battery the Horse furniture and stores are surveyed by a Committee, and he is called upon previous to his departure, to make good all deficiencies according to an adjustment to be determined by the Regimental Commanding Officer and precisely the same course might be followed if the mode of supply and keeping up were assimilated if the public convenience rendered it desirable (as is now the case in Burmah), that the Troops or Batteries of different Presidencies should exchange equipments.

In Madras and Bombay also, I believe the duties of providing, repairing, and maintaining in a state of efficiency the saddles, bridles, harness, and horse appointments of Horse Artillery, Horse Field Batteries and Native Cavalry, including the Body Guard devolve on the Military Boards, and it is intended, I believe, to transfer them to the Commissariat Department on the Board being abolished.

Under this system the regulated allowance for each Horse granted by Government is formed into a general fund (on the principle of the old off-reckoning fund for the provision of Army clothing) for the benefit not of the Troop Officers who have the direct and immediate charge of the equipments but of Commanding Officers of *Regiments* and the profits are divided annually among the Officers so entitled, giving two shares to the Officer Commanding the Horse Brigade, one share to each Officer Commanding a Regiment of Cavalry and one-fourth share to each Officer Commanding a Horse Battery.

In my opinion the Bengal plan is the best, it creates a generous rivalry amongst the Troop and Battery Officers as to who turns out in the most efficient state and best equipped while the Regimental Commanding Officer is responsible that no deviation from established pattern takes place, it insures the instant supply and correction of deficiencies or omissions however arising which must be impracticable when the arrangements are as at Madras, under the control of a distant governing body like the Military Board or the Commissariat and thus delay and tardy references take the place of promptitude and immediate action.

*Light Field Gun Carriages.*—From the outset, this point has been the great bone of contention between the Artillery Officers of the different Presidencies and it is, before all others, the one on which assimilation, to a certain extent, is most urgently called for.

In Madras and Bombay and also in the Royal Artillery, the Gun Carriage is constructed on much the same principle, and it can be used in Bengal without the least difficulty. But the Bengal carriage cannot be adopted in the minor Presidencies, without ruining the Horses from its great additional weight in draught arising from the weight being placed in front of instead of behind the limber axle. In Bengal, this is not felt as an inconvenience because of the superior size and strength of the Horses, but with the light smaller Horse in use here, the increased weight the Bengal carriage throws on the neck of the animal is destructive of efficiency.

I have had the different carriages submitted for my inspection and compared one with the other with the greatest care and attention, and I have no hesitation whatever in pronouncing in favor of the Madras carriage.

But for all practical purposes the assimilation will be sufficient if the Madras construction of the pintle and position of the pintle hook, the Madras wheel, the Madras diminished length of axle tree body and diminished length of axle tree Arm as compared with the excessive length of the Bengal axle, are adopted as the pattern for all India.

It is not a matter of importance even if a Madras Battery were brigaded with a Bengal Battery, that one should have a swivel loop, and the other a fixed one, but it is very important that one should be able to borrow a wheel from the other which at present is impossible, for the nave of the Bengal wheel is too long for a Madras axle arm, and the arm of the Bengal axle too thick for the Madras nave, in these respects therefore assimilation is highly necessary. The Madras short pole in rear of the limber to fix the *pinle to* is, I think, a great improvement and materially facilitates limbering up without in any degree diminishing the strength of the carriage, but I would not force its introduction upon the other Presidencies if they are opposed to it for over strained assimilation is neither desirable nor necessary.

I have served in the Field with every Troop and Battery of the Bengal Artillery. I have the highest admiration for the Regiment, and all the Officers of any standing are my personal and valued friends, and as these facts are well known, it may perhaps be imputed to me that I have a strong leaning towards the system and practice of that Corps, but I can honestly declare that the opinions I have now expressed are free from all such predilection and prejudices, I have deliberately and impartially weighed and considered and compared one with the other, every point which I thought ought to be investigated and with the single view of endeavouring to ascertain and show what changes are advisable for the general good of the three Presidencies so intimately involved, as I think, in procuring the desired extent of assimilation, and I have assuredly not written under present local influences or prompting, for I have neither consulted any one here nor has any Officer of the Madras Artillery been even made aware of my intention to draw up this report.

MAJOR-GENL. SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B.,

Chief of the Staff.

Bengal Army.

I have refrained from answering the series of questions respecting Artillery in India. The Officers, connected with that Corps, in this country have doubtless been called on for their opinion on the matters submitted, and I could but reiterate the information which I might be able to obtain from them at second-hand.

Establishment of a Troop of Bengal European Horse Artillery.	1 Captain
	3 Lieutenants
	1 Staff Sergeant
	6 Sergeants
	5 Corporals
	10 Bombardiers
	2 Trumpeters
	2 Farriers
	2 Rough Riders
	80 Gunners
<b>Total</b>	113 Europeans 27 Gun Lascars

**Total 140**

Establishments for Bengal European Horse Battery.	1 Captain
	3 Lieutenants
	1 Staff Sergeant
	1 Rough Rider Serjt.
	1 Farrier Sergeant
	6 Sergeants
	6 Corporals
	6 Bombardiers
	2 Buglers
	60 Gunners
<b>Total</b>	87 Europeans 66 Nat. Drivers 27 Gun Lascars 1 Nat. Farrier

**Total 181**

Establishment of a Bengal Reserve Company or Artillery.	1 Captain	
	2 Subalterns	
	1 Staff Sergeant	
	6 Sergeants	
	6 Corporals	
	6 Bombardiers	
	2 Buglers	
	60 Gunners	
	<b>Total</b>	84 Europeans 34 Gun Lascars
	<b>Total</b>	120

But there are two or three points of General Organization to which I would very respectfully venture to call attention.

An important Problem demands solution, viz. how best to ensure economy with a large development of European Artillery, without interference with real practical efficiency which depends on the sufficient manning of the Guns.

Under the old Rules, a Troop of Horse Artillery, including all ranks from the Captain to the Lascars, numbers 140 men and a Field Battery 181, *vide* margin.

It cannot be too strongly impressed that for the purpose of active service a Troop, manned as above stated, is inefficient. We invariably observe, that after the first severe action in which a Troop is engaged, it actually has not men enough to work the Guns. After the second, leave is requested by the Commander of the Troop and obtained, to send one, two, or even three Guns into Park.

During the latter part of the siege of Delhie, the Troops of Horse Artillery were partly driven and worked by men belonging to Her Majesty's 9th Lancers.

When the two Bengal Troops came down from Delhie to the relief of Lucknow, there were but five Guns in each Troop, and these Guns were imperfectly manned. They were afterwards helped by men taken from the Bengal Artillery.

In the campaign of Lucknow and Rohilcund, Colonel Tombs' Troop, which came down from Meerut with a complete Establishment, became so crippled for want of men that it could not work more than (4) four Guns.

The Field Batteries are little better, when the Native Drivers are subtracted.

Establishment of a Troop of Royal Horse Artillery.	}	2 Captains
		2 Lieutenants
		1 Assist. Surgeon
		1 Vety. Surgeon
		2 Staff Serjeants
		10 Serjeants
		10 Corps & Bombdrs
		160 Gunners & Drivers
		1 Trumpeter
		1 Farrier
		12 Artificers
<b>Total</b>	<b>196 men &amp; 200 horses</b>	
Establishment of a Light Field Batta- ry of Royal Artil- lery.	}	2 Captains
		3 Lieutenants
		1 Asst. Surgeon
		12 Serjeants
		10 Corps & Bombdrs
		150 Gunners & Drivers
		2 Trumpeters
		1 Farrier
		11 Artificers
		<b>Total</b>
Establishment of a Reserve Compa- ny of Royal Ar- tillery.	}	2 Captains
		3 Lieutenants
		7 Serjeants
		10 Corps & Bombdrs
		92 Gunners & Drivers
		1 Trumpeter
<b>Total</b>	<b>110 men</b>	

Under these circumstances, I believe it to be an imperative necessity to add largely to the strength of every Troop and Field Battery.

The proposal has been made and submitted to Government to assimilate all establishments to the scale of the Royal Artillery. Their Establishments, *vide margin*, are very large, and as compared with those of Bengal may appear indeed extravagant.

I believe the proposal to be wise, but I can hardly expect the Government to entertain such a large proportion of men to the number of Guns worked, as that which finds favor at home on account of the great expense of the European Soldier in India.

Perhaps, however, a mean may be taken by which a larger number of Guns would be insured and an organization introduced not so inefficient on account of paucity of Gunners as is now the case, but not so extravagant as that presented according to the Royal scales.

I would suggest then for consideration, that it might be expedient to adopt the English strength of men for Troops and Batteries, but to economize on the number of these bodies by adding two pieces, *viz.* one Field Gun and one Howitzer to each Troop and Field Battery, making the number of Guns for every such body (8) eight instead of (6) six.

I have, in my distribution return, proposed the number of (44) forty-four Troops and Field Batteries and (30) thirty Reserve Companies for the Establishment of Bengal, with a general strength of (12,787) twelve thousand seven hundred and eighty seven of all ranks.

In the Royal Artillery, this would give a result of 264 Light Field Guns. By the plan proposed, the number would be swelled to 352.

The Troops and Field Batteries would admit of convenient division as a Half Troop or Field Battery would then consist of three Guns and a Howitzer, a sufficient force of moveable Artillery for the minor stations or a small column.

It may be observed that in the Continental Armies of Europe a Field Battery does consist of (8) eight pieces instead of (6) six as with us.

The late change of rank among the Officers of the Bengal Artillery, causing the introduction of a second Captain to each Company, would seem to facilitate this arrangement, and the more frequent division of Field Batteries than has hitherto obtained with the original establishment.

Were such a design entertained we should not require a larger Establishment of Captains than (148) one hundred and forty-eight, whereas it would be expedient to add one Subaltern to each Company on account of the more frequent division of Batteries and the increased number of guns.

The Arm being thus organized and manned, I cannot but think we should have an ample sufficiency of Artillery to meet every purpose, and never again to trust a gun to a Native, whereas every gun, putting the matter of race aside, would be more efficient than has been the case hitherto.

It may be remarked in addition that according to this plan, it would be unnecessary to add that to the number of Battalions already existing, the only augmentation of Officers required being that of one Subaltern to each Company or Troop.

Let us assume that there are (24) twenty-four stations requiring the presence of one or more Batteries of (8) eight guns, this being a larger allowance than is required in reality. We should then, according to the plan proposed, have (20) twenty Batteries liable to division for minor stations and detached duties, *i. e.*, 24 to be kept entire at large stations  
20.40 half Batteries, each of four guns for minor stations.

I find that according to the old rules, the total Establishment of Field guns maintained in a state of activity stood as follows :—

<i>Troops or Field Batteries,</i>	<i>Guns.</i>
9 European Troops, ... ..	54
4 Native ditto Regular, ... ..	24
21 Light Field Batteries Regular, ... ..	126
3 Punjab Field Batteries, ... ..	18
2 Ditto Mountain Train, ... ..	12
4 Gwalior, ... ..	24
3 Oudh, ... ..	18
4 Hydrabad, ... ..	24
1 Mehedpoor, ... ..	6
1 Assam, ... ..	6
1 Ramghur Battalion, ... ..	4
1 Kotah Contingent, ... ..	4
1 Bhopal ditto, ... ..	6
1 Joudhpoor ditto, ... ..	4
1 Nagpoor ditto, ... ..	6
1 Malwa ditto, ... ..	6
1 Sylhet Battalion, ... ..	2
59	Total ... .. 344

Thus it will be seen that there is but a difference of (8) eight Field guns in the establishment proposed, from that which was in existence before the mutinies, but with the great dis-

tion that in former times the European Troops and Batteries were less numerous than those worked altogether by natives, whereas now they will be altogether worked and driven by British Gunners and Drivers.

It is submitted that a half Battery of (4) four guns manned by Englishmen is more than a match for a Native Battery of (6) six guns.

I would observe that a certain number of Lascars cannot be dispensed with. The opinion of the Bengal Artillery would seem to run counter to the employment of Gun Lascars in future, but all the Officers of that Arm, with whom I have conversed on the subject, are in favor of servants whom they call store lascars by way of distinction.

Of these one Tindal and (10) ten lascars might be attached to each Troop or Field Battery.

In conclusion, I would remark that one portion of the Royal Artillery system should very certainly not be imported into India.

In the Royal Artillery the Drivers, though enlisted as Gunners and Drivers, are not even taught how to work a gun.

It is imperatively necessary in India that every Englishman attached to a gun should know how to work it on occasion and be liable to do so if required.

Consequently, as heretofore, all the men enlisted for the Bengal Artillery should be drilled as *Gunners* and *Drivers*.

The establishment proposed stands therefore as follows for a Troop of Horse Artillery :—

	6	6	por.	Guns,	
	2	12	por.	Howitzers.	
2 Captains.					Native Artificers, 12
4 Lieutenants.					Store Lascars, 11
2 Staff Sergeants.					—
10 Sergeants.					Total 23
4 Corporals.					
6 Bombardiers.					
171 Gunners and Drivers.					202 European Establishment
2 Trumpeters.					23 Native ditto.
1 Farrier.					240 Horses.
<hr/>					
Total	202				

In a Royal Troop there are (160) one hundred and sixty Gunners and Drivers and (12)



twelve Artificers. In my establishment I add (11) eleven Gunners and Drivers and one Trumpeter, as all Artificers should be Natives.

Proposed establishment for a Field Battery:—

	6	9	por. Guns.	
	2	24	por. Howitzers.	
2 Captains.				Native Artificers, 12
4 Lieutenants.				Lascars 11
12 Sergeants.				—
10 Corporals and Bombardiers.				Total 23
161 Gunners and Drivers.				
2 Trumpeters.				192 European Establishment.
				23 Native ditto
1 Farrier.				—
				170 Horses
<b>Total</b>	<b>192</b>			

As in the Troop the European Artificers admitted in the Royal Artillery are added to the effective strength of effective Gunners and Drivers, their places being taken by Native workmen.

Establishment of a Reserve Company to consist of—

2 Captains.
4 Lieutenants.
7 Serjeants.
5 Corporals.
5 Bombardiers.
92 Gunners and Drivers.
1 Trumpeter.
<b>Total</b>
<b>116</b>

#### GRAND ESTABLISHMENT.

12 Troops Horse Artillery,  
32 Horse Field Batteries,  
30 Reserve Companies

To be formed in three Brigades Horse Artillery and nine Battalions of Foot Artillery.

If it be intended to maintain a certain proportion of the Royal Artillery Regiment in the Army of Bengal, it might be well to have 3 Troops and (9) nine Field Batteries belonging to that Regiment, subtracting a like number from the Brigades and Battalions of the Bengal Regiment.

I cannot but think for the efficiency of both that much advantage would result in a permanent arrangement.

I believe that at present both gain alike, and that on imperial grounds the practical experience won in Indian campaigns is as advantageous to the Royal Artillery and Her Majesty's Service as the importation of new practices and new ideas is to that of Bengal. Both are called on to defend their own services and professional habits before the salutary rivalry of each other. We have a right to expect the very best consequences as an absolute certainty.

---

MAJOR GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B.,  
*Secretary to Government, Military Department,  
Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Much the same as in the Native Infantry, but if I am rightly informed, there are fewer Brahmins.
2. Much the same as in the Infantry.
3. Chiefly Mahomedans and the less dignified classes of Hindoos, I believe.
4. I think not.
5. These appear necessary. They will help to do various duties which Europeans in this climate cannot perform.
- 6 to 8. I am not able to answer these questions.
9. I believe the rule is the same as in the native Infantry.
10. As above.
11. No, I think not.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

12.

I believe no particular agency is employed, but that a number of men called Omedwars, *i. e.* candidates are to be found generally in the lines of Artillery companies, and from these the Golundaz are mainly recruited. I am not aware of any particular agency for enlisting Gun Lascars or Drivers, the former under certain circumstances are eligible for transfer to the Golundaz.

13.

I am not aware.

14.

I am not sufficiently informed on the subject to suggest any change.

15.

As above.

16.

I do not think any particular form of oath is prescribed for or used in the Artillery. All native recruits, including Gun Lascars and Drivers are sworn in on a Gun in presence of the senior Officer of the Brigade or Battalion, and all the native Officers, and it is fully explained to all recruits and establishments that they are entertained for General service, and engaged to go beyond Sea when required.

17.

Answered above.

18.

See reply to question 16.

19.

I would prescribe the same oath as for the native Infantry.

20.

I would do as proposed for the Native Infantry.

21.

As above.

22 to 24.

I beg to refer to my replies regarding the Native Infantry.

25.

I see no occasion for change.

26.

The same that are taken and proposed to be taken with the Native Infantry.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

27.

By European Gunners trained to the duty as part of their exercise. But I think as I have said above that Native Drivers should be retained. They have charge of the Harness and gear of the animals and are responsible for being duly preserved and cleaned. They proceed with their cattle for forage and assist in loading and unloading it. They give guards and sentries over their stables and sheds, and for other purposes when required. Two Syce Drivers per Battery are instructed in shoeing horses.

## PUNJAUB COMMITTEE

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Seikhs and Punjabee Mohomedans with a few Hindoostanees ; no Trans-Indus Mahomedans either from within or without the border.

2.

There are no Gun Lascars, the Gunners do the work.

3.

There is no separate class of drivers, the Gunners drive as well as clean the guns and harness and perform all the details of duty. To this end Sir Henry Lawrence proposed and obtained a larger proportion of Gunners and the measure has been found as efficient as economical. It keeps the men always occupied. During the past year their pay was raised from 7 Rupees to 8 Rupees a month, partly to compensate them for heavy work, wear and tear of clothes, &c, and partly to secure the selection of recruits for the artillery.

4.

See paras. 26, 27, and 28 in our general remarks enclosed in letter of 25th June, on the re-organization of the Bengal Army.

5.

Yes ; see para. 29 of the same general remarks.

6.

The Seikhs come mostly from the Manjha (about Umritsir) and a few from Malwa, (Cis Sutlej states). The Mahomedans of the Punjab from Jheyllum, Lahore, Rawul Pindie and Julundur, the Hindoostanee from Oude chiefly.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

There are none.

8.

There are none.

9.

In addition to the remarks in reply to number 3 of Punjab Infantry paper on the recruiting and composition of Corps with our letter number 3, of 1st July 1858. It should be here stated that for the past 3 years the Artillery have been prohibited recruiting from the Trans Indus Mahomedan Tribes, very few had found admittance into the ranks, but one traitor can paralyze the power of a Battery for a time by spiking the guns. After witnessing on one occasion at Dursummund in Meeranzie, the effect on the Pathan Soldiers of a religious appeal, it appeared to Brigadier General Chamberlain imperative to close this branch of the service to such a risk.

10.

There are none.

11.

See answer 4 of our paper quoted in the above answer No. 9

We think this is the branch above all others in which native Christians might with most advantage be introduced and next to them low caste men and Muzzabees. Artillery men are few in number, almost always at Head Quarters, under the eye of their European Officers and not subject to the same amount of pressure from their comrades. We know from experience that the lowest castes possess that sort of courage requisite to stand quietly under fire and without doing it abruptly and injudiciously which would disgust the well behaved men, we have at present, we would advise taking the earliest opportunity of introducing the change.

12.

The same as for the Infantry, there was a difficulty in procuring Hindoostanees as they do not like the frontier and for this class application was made to Officers in the Oude Irregular Force.

13.

The same as in the other branches of the service; see answer No. 6 in the paper quoted above in reply No. 9.

14.

None, the present rules only require to be rigidly enforced.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 15.** There are none.
- 16.** The same as in the Infantry, (see answers 9 and 10 in the paper quoted above in reply 9).
- 17.** There are none.
- 18.** Two years.
- 19.** See answer No. 11 in the paper quoted above in reply number 9.
- 20.** In any new Battery that might be raised, we would begin the new system advocated in answer number 11.
- In the rest of the Punjaub Artillery, recruiting might go on irrespective of district, as the number is very small.
- 21.** There are none.
- 22.** If not Christian, composite as at present.
- 23.** One-third Punjaabee Mahomedanes; one-third Seikhs; one-third Hindoostanees. No Trans Indus Mahomedans on the frontier at all events.
- 24.** There are none at present and their introduction is not desired.
- 25.** The present agency selected men of the classes required.
- 26.** Those prescribed by the Military regulations.
- 27.** Native or Anglo-Indian Drivers should be continued even if Native Artillery men be altogether abolished, which seems to us impracticable on the Frontier, where the lightest and handiest Troops are essential for entering the hills.

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,  
*Commanding Peshawar Division.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Golundauz are about equally composed of Hindoos and Mussalmen; the service is a most favourite one, particularly the Native Horse Artillery. Men of all the better classes, Pathans, Seikhs, Brahmins, Chutries were numerous, and Gwallas and other sects enlisted for the line, were found in the Native Artillery.

2.

As above, with a sprinkling of the lower; classes, the old and best style of Gun Lascars came from the coast about Chittagong, a creature half soldier, half sailor, with a Tartar caste of feature, called, I believe, Mhugs. Their race is nearly extinct in Upper India, their re-introduction for the work Lascars were originally intended for, might be considered expedient.

3.

Men of all castes and creeds, excepting the lowest; the Chumar was even admitted. The best men are those who distinguished themselves as Syces, generally the lower classes.

4.

Most certainly not.

5.

No, I don't recommend it.

6.

From the Oude and Arrah Districts, and the North Western Provinces generally.

7.

As above and in fact from all parts.

8.

From all parts.

9.

Soodies and Sweepers, and lower castes; on account of its being supposed that the higher classes would not enlist and serve with those castes.

10.

See preceding answer.

11.

I am not aware of any.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

12.

For Golundanz and Lascars by recruiting parties, or by men going on furlough bringing their relations; but there are generally hanging about Regiments, men waiting for vacancies. Drivers are generally replaced by smart Syces taught in the rough school of a bare backed horse at water or exercise.

13.

I am not aware; but I believe a reference is generally made to the Civil Authorities of the Districts the recruits came from.

14.

No, I think the present are sufficient for Natives.

15.

See preceding answer.

16.

The words of the oath are contained in para. 33, Sec. XXXI. Military Regulations, the word "Gun" being substituted for "Color."

17.

As above.

18.

I don't know.

19.

If an oath is of any use at all with a Native, the present is sufficient for all purposes; it should be clearly explained to him that it binds him to serve on Foreign service and beyond the seas, whether within the Frontier of the British Government or beyond it.

20.

Each Company should be recruited in a prescribed district, and from that only.

21.

See preceding answer.

22.

The companies of Battalions should be homogeneous.

23.

In equal proportions; as for example, a Battalion might be formed of a company of Hindoo Rajpoots, one of Seikhs, one of Pathans of Hindustan, and one of Punjaabee Mussulman.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24. Same as above, Chumars and Gwallas being introduced.
25. Occasional recruiting parties whenever recruits are wanting.
26. No other precautions appear to me to be necessary than are required for the Infantry recruits.
27. By Europeans of light weight, both Gunners and Drivers should be taught both to ride and drive as well as to man the guns.

---

BRIGADIER GENL. JOHN JACOB, C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief on the Frontier.*

*Bombay Artillery.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1. Chiefly men of Hindustan Proper.
2. Chief Concanees.
3. Chiefly men of the Concan and Deccan.
4. I am of opinion that the Artillery men of the Indian Army should be Europeans, with the exception of a very few Troops and Batteries employed in localities in which Europeans could not live.
5. I think not. The construction of the Bombay Horse Artillery is, in my opinion, better, where the Gunners and Drivers form one body.
6. Hindustan Proper.
7. The Concan chiefly.
8. The Districts of the Deccan, the Concan and Guzerat.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

9. Very low castes have been excluded.
10. None have been excluded I believe.
11. I think that the Artillery generally should be Europeans. The question of considering races, tribes, castes, &c., has been fully replied to in answering questions relating to the other Arms. The principles there referred to are of universal application.
12. Regimental only.
13. None.
14. All should be left to Regimental and Battalion Commanders.
15. Ditto.
16. The same as in use throughout the Native Army.
17. Ditto.
18. Since 1792, I believe.
19. I have a strong opinion that all such oaths are of most mischievous effect, and I would abolish them in *toto*. This subject has been fully treated of in replies to questions regarding the other Arms.
20. All such arrangements should be left to Regimental Commanders.
21. Ditto.
22. No difference of race, tribe, caste, &c., should be considered or

QUESTION.

ANSWER.

acknowledged in any way. Individual fitness should alone be thought of.

23.

Ditto.

24.

Ditto.

25.

Regimental only.

26.

None.

27.

I would adopt the organization of the Bombay Horse Artillery. The Gunners and Drivers forming one body.

---

BRIGADIER D. E. WOOD, C. B., *Royal Horse Artillery,*  
*Commanding at Allahabad.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

No information.

4.

Certainly not.

5.

Certainly not.

27.

All the Europeans should enlist as Gunners and Drivers. I would enlist short men 5 feet 5 inches to act as Drivers; Anglo Indians, such men as the Lahore Horse might be enlisted for Drivers, provided they are men without caste or Native prejudices. Good Drivers are most essential for an efficient Artillery, it is much easier to fight Guns than to get them to the field of action, the Drivers by the care of their horses must do this.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER G. R. BARKER, C. B.,  
*Royal Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1.

Nearly the same as the Native Infantry; the majority of Hindoos, *viz.* Brahmins, Rajpoots; rather more of the Aheer or Cowherd tribe than are received in the Infantry, perhaps. The smaller half of the Company generally Mussulmans. In the 9 Battalions raised in Bengal, there is or was a larger admixture of lower castes, and of a lower class of Mussulmans generally who inhabit the Eastern Provinces and seek employment in magazines, &c., as Lascars.

2.

No essential difference between them and Golundaz can be defined. The lower standard makes recruiting easier, and men who cannot enter the Infantry for want of height generally offer themselves. The Hindoos predominate in number, but the *apparent* marked distinction between Sepoys and Gun Lacars, I attribute to the nature of the duties, which results in the latter becoming a rough, ready, willing, and most useful class of men.

3.

It depends chiefly upon where and how they were raised; when the old bullock drivers were converted as far as practicable into Horse Battery Drivers, a large admixture of Aheers would be found. For entirely fresh raised Horse Batteries, the Syces, Hindoo Syces are generally Chumars; a very low caste that work in leather. were generally taken and taught to ride, and recruiting afterwards continued from a rather better class when procurable. The best drivers recruits I have obtained were Punjabee Mussulmans, but very difficult to find, and so are Mussulmans generally for this service: Aheers came forward in abundance, and turn out very well. Drivers are considered to be a much lower class and caste generally than Infantry men, but until the mutinies always behaved admirably in action.

4.

No.

5.

Certainly not alone, if not expedient to entertain entirely European drivers, they should at least constitute one-half; but this system would have its inconveniences, multiplying detachments, &c., and in case of sickness or many casualties among Europeans, Native drivers would have the guns in their power.

I consider the Native drivers useless and should be discontinued.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 6.** Chiefly Oude and Upper Provinces. In the 9th Battalion the proportion of Up-country men is smaller.
- 7.** Mostly from Oude and the Upper Provinces. The proportion of men from the Chittagong and Eastern districts, larger than in the Native Infantry or Golundaz.
- 8.** This is mostly answered at question 3. They are not drawn from any particular district. Some Officers select nearly all their drivers from the Syces of the Battery, but it is difficult to discipline men who have been Syces long, and newly entertained recruits answer best.
- 9.** The practice in the Golundaz has been to exclude low caste Hindoos, as in the Infantry, for the reason that they were not considered to make such good soldiers, and that the higher caste men particularly objected to associate with them.
- 10.** They were not excluded by any Regulation, but it has not been the practice to receive the very low castes for Gun Lascars. For drivers, probably every caste except sweepers have been enlisted.
- 11.** I think not.
- 12.** The Golundaz. Formerly Commanding Officers at Head Quarters of Battalions; now by the Commandant of Artillery, who finally approves after they have passed a Committee at Regimental Head Quarters, to which they are sent from Batteries, Troops and Companies under rules laid down in the standing orders of the Regiment. Officers Commanding Companies enlist their own Gun Lascars, except when at Battalion Head Quarters; and Officers Commanding Batteries are generally allowed to entertain drivers entirely at their own discretion; but all rolls are sent to the Commanding Officer of the Battalions for final approval.
- 13.** The description roll is transmitted to the civil authority of the district from which the recruit professes to come, and it is then returned verified to the enlisting officer.
- 14.** No answer.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 15.** I would exclude the Brahmin Chuttree castes.
- 16.** The forms are furnished to the Interpreter, because they vary for men of different persuasions. In the Artillery the men are sworn in on a gun, placing one hand upon it, and they all bind themselves to serve beyond the sea or wherever they may be ordered.
- 17.** *Vide* answer 16.
- 18.** The same forms are observed.
- 19.** I think the oath is looked upon as a mere form, and held in utter disregard by either Mussulman or Hindoo, and any engagement except a material one effecting person or property, valueless.
- 20.** No Answer.
- 21.** I would not alter the present system.
- 22.** Composite.
- 23.** The Mussulman proportion never to exceed one-third, Brahmins and Chuttries to be excluded, and the remaining two-thirds Seiks, Punjabees, Aheers, &c., as they could be obtained.
- 24.** The same as recommended for Golundaz, if procurable; but it would be found difficult to obtain Seiks and Punjabees of the Military class to serve on the present driver rates of pay.
- 25.** The same as now prescribed in the regiment, explained a Question 12.
- 26.** The Golundaz, if again entertained, the rolls should be sent for verification as explained at Question 13. For Gun-Lascars and Drivers the precaution is almost superfluous; the men are generally well known before entertainment; vacancies occurring but seldom, and are filled up by relatives or others who have been waiting a long time.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

27.

This question involves many important principles, and in the Royal Artillery, I have heard that there are still differences of opinion about Gunners and Drivers. For the Bengal Artillery, owing to the small size of the horses, I do not think the Gunner and Driver system would answer. The Drivers should decidedly be European; Anglo-Indians are totally unsuited for such a service, requiring great passive courage and steadiness, muscular strength of arm, the best riding, energy and quickness of comprehension; in which latter qualities, Anglo-Indians are certainly more or less deficient. Small, light, active men should be entertained and trained especially as Drivers and they might afterwards all be taught the gun drill, so as to be ready for an emergency with the greatest advantage. On the other hand, the advantages would be obvious of teaching the Gunners to ride, or as many as possible, not only to replace drivers, on emergencies, but because efficiency will not be obtained in the Bengal Horse Batteries, until the Serjeants are mounted. As, however, strong and powerful men make the best Artillery men, and nine-pounder guns will probably take the place of most others of lighter calibre, I would not load the horses with their additional weight if it can possibly be avoided.

---

BRIGADIER C. BLOOD,

*Commanding Scind Division of the Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

The Native Gunners are composed of Mahomedans, Brahmins, Hindoos, Chuttries, Coombees, Khonobees, Aheers, Loads and Saikhs.

2.

The Gun Lascars are of the same tribes as the above, including in addition, Mahrattas, Pathans and Purwarries, their races and castes are likewise the same.

3.

The Drivers are of the same races, tribes, and castes, as the above; including Rajpoots.

4.

No, during the late mutiny the Native Gunners belonging to the Bombay Army, (enlisted in Bengal,) showed decided symptoms of disaffection, whilst the Mahrattas, Purwarries and other castes remained attached; yet I do not consider it advisable to have Natives enlisted for this arm of the service.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5. I see no objection, provided high caste Natives are strictly excluded ; but for the expense attending the enlistment of Europeans, I would decidedly give them the preference.
6. From the Districts of Lucknow, Cawnpore, Delhie, Agra, Mulwa, and Southern Mahratta Country.
7. From Cawnpore, Lucknow, Delhie, Mulwa, Deccan, Concan, Southern Mahratta Country, and Cutch.
8. From the same Districts as above.
9. I am not aware of any races, tribes, or castes, having been excluded.
10. I never heard of any exclusion.
11. None.
12. Recruiting parties.
13. The recruits, on enlistment, are registered, passed by Committees assembled for the purpose at the principal stations ; and sent to their Regiments.
14. Alterations in the Recruiting regulations will depend in a great measure on any new system that may be introduced hereafter in the organization of the Native Army.
15. As above.
16. " I solemnly declare that I will serve the Government with truth and loyalty, and that I will never abandon my guns, but consider them as my life, and defend them accordingly."
17. The same as above.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

18. I am not aware of any other form of oath than that now in use, having been administered.
19. I am of opinion that in addition to the present Oath, each recruit should be sworn in on the oath observed among his particular caste.
20. Recruited over a wide area irrespective of Districts.
21. The same as above.
22. The tribes and castes should be mixed as much as possible.
23. Mahratta, Purwarries, and low caste men should preponderate.
24. The same as above.
25. The usual recruiting parties.
26. I know of no better precautions than those now in use.
27. I would replace Native Drivers, by European Gunners of light weight, trained to the duty as part of their exercise. I have mentioned light weight as it would be a difficult matter to procure sufficient horses powerful enough to answer the double purpose for which they would be required, if particular attention was not paid to the weight and selection of the Drivers.

---

BRIGADIER R. HORSFORD,  
*Acting Commandant of Artillery.*  
*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The Native Gunners of the Bengal Army were composed of Hindoos and Mahomedans in about equal proportions, the former predominating if any thing.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Latterly a few Seikhs or Punjabees were entertained, but in very small numbers.

Puthans, Syuds, and Shaicks, comprised the Mahomedan portion of the Artillery; Brahmins, Rajpoots and Gwala, the Hindoo portion.

2.

The Gun Lascars were enlisted from the same races, tribes, and castes as the Native Gunners, with a greater preponderance of low caste men, many of them are taken from among the syces of troops and batteries.

3.

Of the same races, tribes, and castes as the Lascars; a much larger proportion being taken from the syces, to whom it is considered promotion as is a service which they like to enter.

4.

On no account,—I cannot conceive any thing more fatal to the interests and safety of the state and to the speedy settlement of the country than a continuance of this system, which I earnestly deprecate.

In the official correspondence of myself and predecessors with the head of the Army, the abolition of the Native Artillery, without exception, has been strongly recommended, and I cannot too forcibly express myself on a subject of so much importance.

The entire charge of guns, without qualification, should be placed in the hands of Europeans, and I feel confident that the certainty of receiving no co-operation from this branch of the service, (Artillery) in the possession of which the Natives place such confidence, and without which they are, as an enemy so powerless and contemptible; would act as the strongest preventative to any farther attempt at mutiny or rebellion.

5.

Answered above.

6.

Both Mahomedans and Hindoos from Oude chiefly, but enlistment has not been confined to any particular district. Many of the former come from Rohilcund, and a good number of both races from the neighbourhood of Cawnpore and other large cities of Bengal; some of the Mussulmen of the Horse Artillery come from Delhie and the surrounding districts.

7.

From no particular district; as casualties occurred men on the spot were enlisted, being relatives or friends of other Lascars in the troops or company.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

See answer to query No. 2.

8.

These men have generally been entertained at stations where the Batteries have, from time to time, been raised; casualties being replaced as mentioned in answer to question number 3 by syces chiefly.

9.

The enlistment of Brahmins has of late years been discouraged as much as possible, and men of low castes neglected in conformity with general orders on the subject.

The objection to Brahmins is due to the supposition that their caste gives them undue influence and authority detrimental to discipline over others of the same creed.

Men of low caste have been rejected under the impression of their inaptitude from their relative social position among their comrades for the Military service.

10.

It has not been considered advisable to consider the question of caste among these classes of the same importance as among the Golundauze. Many low caste men have been admitted as Lascars, and still more as Drivers. Both these classes have been so overworked and comparatively ill-paid, that the service is not popular among the higher castes, nor are there many men to be found in their ranks who could obtain service as Golundauze or, in the line.

11.

If it be determined to retain Native Artillery, then a more general but judicious admission of Punjabees, both Seikhs and Mahomedans, and the entertainment of Goorkhas would be desirable. There may be races too in Bengal Proper, who would make good Artillery men, but I am not sufficiently acquainted with the natives of that part of the country to be able to make any specific recommendation.

12.

Recruits for the Golundauze till lately (1855) were chiefly drawn from Oude. These were obtained either by recruiting parties sent for that purpose, or by the Native Gunners in the regiment getting their brothers or fellow-vilagers to present themselves for enlistment, either at Cawnpore or Allahabad, on examination and approval by the Medical and Commanding Officers, they were enrolled as Gunners.

Gun Lascars and Drivers have generally been obtained at the stations where their troops, companies or battalions were located.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Since 1855, recruits have been sent to regimental head quarters (Meerut) to be approved by a committee of Officers appointed for that purpose, before enlistment. After enlistment they remained at Meerut to undergo a course of professional instruction; having passed which, they were sent to their respective troops and companies.

13.

No precautions of registry have hitherto been taken by the local civil authorities in whose districts recruits for the Golundauze were obtained.

The precautions of registry adopted by the Military authorities by whom recruits were enlisted, were.—

1. A descriptive roll of the recruit himself; 2, a kindred roll of the next of kin.

In these documents, the age, height, caste, and place of residence of the recruit and his next of kin were recorded.

14.

The system hitherto pursued in obtaining recruits for the Native Artillery has answered the requirements of that portion of the regiment. The Artillery, however, is not such a favorite service as it formerly was, and the line is preferred. This is probably owing to promotion being slower and the circumstance of the Battalions being of late years much more broken up into detached companies, and less local than they used to be. If therefore Native Artillery is to be kept up and it is considered desirable to have the best men for the service; a higher rate of pay, or a small bounty on enlistment would possibly be advantageous in its results.

15.

The present system should be adhered to as regards their enlistment, but their pay should be increased.

16.

The words of the oath administered to recruits, are in effect as follows:

“ I                      son of                      of the village of                      in  
the district of                      in Oude do solemnly declare in the presence  
of my God that I will never desert the colours of my regiment or my  
gun; that I will march wherever I may be ordered to, whether it  
be in the territories of the East India Company or beyond them; that

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I will unhesitatingly obey every order of my superior ; that if I am to embark on board-ship, I will do so, without excuse or hesitation ; or if required to serve in the Horse Artillery, I will do so, and under all circumstances will conduct myself as a good soldier, a loyal, faithful servant of the Government. If I should be guilty of any crimes, I agree to submit to the punishment laid down in the Articles of War for such offences, and which have been read and explained to me."

17.

This oath is sworn over a gun, and equally applicable to gun Lascars and Drivers.

18.

The form of oath was adopted in 1852, when it was made imperative on all recruits enlisting for any portion of the regiment to engage for general service. The oath administered previous to that date differed only as regards the special arrangements for general service.

19.

The oath administered to the Native Artillery men on being first enrolled has up to the past year kept them faithful and loyal to the State. No improvement in the wording or matter of the oath or any form of engagement is likely to bind the Native Soldier more strongly to the Government.

20.

The more composite and less homogeneous the different Battalions are, the less likelihood is there of combination or conspiracy ; and therefore the wider the area irrespective of districts from which they are recruited, the greater will be the security.

21.

If either of these classes is to be retained, the present system appears the best. I would recommend that no limitation be placed as to the districts from which these men are drawn.

22.

The reply to question No. 20, is equally applicable to this.

23.

Mahomedans of the various sects should be in the proportion of one-third Hindoos, including Rajpoots ; and the other denominations formerly enlisted, one-third ; and Seikhs, Goorkhas, and such other tribes as may in future be considered eligible for Military service, one-third.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24.

Let all be composite, and the above proportions maintained ; but it appears a matter of little importance as regards these classes.

25.

This question, so far as it refers to gun Lascars and Drivers has been previously answered.

As regards Golundauze, I can suggest no better method than that at present practiced. The Regulations on this subject, Section XXXI, Military Code, are carefully and comprehensively drawn out, and if strict attentoin be paid to them, especially to paragraph 19, every precaution would appear to have been taken to prevent the enlistment of improper characters or of men presenting themselves under fictitious names and designations.

26.

Every recruit should bring with him a descriptive roll of himself verified by the Civil Officer of the district from which he comes. It may be worthy of consideration whether some species of security might not be required from the relatives or friends of the recruit.

27.

By European Gunners trained to the duty as part of their exercise ; a system which is now in force in the Bengal Horse Artillery (European). There is an objection to enlisting men *specialy* as drivers for if, as constantly occurs, they become from accident or disease physically unfit for mounted duty, they are useless as soldiers, the terms of their engagement preventing their transfer to a reserve company as Gunners.

This would be obviated by enlisting all recruits as *Gunners and Drivers*. As regards the enrolment of Anglo-Indians, the mixture of this class with Europeans would be very objectionable and prejudicial. The latter generally entertain great contempt for the Eurasians, and if it be determined to introduce this class of men in to the service ; I should recommend their being kept perfectly distinct from the European Artillery-men from whom in habits, association, pursuits and *physique* they differ so widely.

---

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,  
*Secretary to Government, Bombay.*  
*Bombay Army.*

1. The Golundauz Battalions contain a very large proportion of Hindoos and of men from Hindoostan. Fully three-fourths of the whole number are Hindoos, and two-thirds are from Hindoostan.
2. Returns, showing the races, tribes, and castes, of the Gun Lascars, have not hitherto been prepared.
3. Returns, shewing these particulars in the case of the Drivers, have not yet been prepared.
4. I think not.
5. The Native Drivers should, I think, be maintained as a class but in limited numbers. They are very useful assistants to the Europeans of a battery, and may often save them from exposure and extra fatigue : But the battery must not depend upon the Native Drivers for its efficiency. The European Gunners or a certain proportion of them must be trained to drive, as a part of their exercise; and thus the battery will be independent of the Natives attached to it, who are too few to be dangerous, but who by deserting might otherwise produce much mischief.
6. Answered above.
7. Ditto.
8. Ditto.
9. None.
10. Ditto.
11. I am not prepared to name any.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

12.

The same as for Infantry.

13 to 26.

The answers given in the Infantry Section are equally applicable to the Artillery.

27.

I would not introduce any new class of Native Drivers; I would retain the present class, and would have the European Gunners trained to drive themselves. I would thus employ the services of the Natives, but at the same time make the Europeans independent of their assistance.

---

COLONEL W. M. COGHLAN,

*Commanding at Aden.*

*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Chiefly of Hindoos; the proportion of Mohamedans is very small. The Hindoos contain some Maharattas, but the Hindoostanee element, from Oude and the adjacent provinces prevails.

2.

Mostly of the Bombay Presidency, with a large admixture of low caste men: it is a family corps, there are some in it whose father and grand-fathers served in its ranks.

3.

Mixed: but probably the Hindoostanee element prevails.

4.

Some stations are so unfavorable to Europeans that Golundauz must be kept up; if any Artillery is to be maintained at those stations under proper regulations, the employment of Golundauz is unobjectionable.

5.

Under proper regulation, and with a European Non-Commissioned Officer to each sub-division they would be perfectly efficient.

6.

A large proportion from the District of the Ganges and Jumna, a few from Sawantwaree and the Konkan.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

7. Mostly from the Bombay Presidency, many of them born in the corps.
8. Mostly Hindoostan and Deccan.
9. None have been excluded, but the Hindoostanee men have been usually preferred by reason of their superior size and appearance.
10. No exclusion.
11. None have been excluded. No better men than the Hindoostanees can be got; it is an improved system of discipline that is required, the men are good enough.
12. For the Golundauz, recruiting parties are sent to Hindoostan, and to Sawantwaree.  
  
The Gun Lascars and Drivers are usually filled by a selection of candidates anxious to serve.
13. They are registered by the District Authorities.
14. If Golundauz be maintained, they should be of the *best*; at present they are not superior to the sepoy of the line, and many of them are unfit for Artillery duties, an extra rupee would secure for the Artillery all the best men; this was so formerly, the Bombay Golundauz had a rupee more than a sepoy of the line, the Golundauz Battalion was then incomparably the finest corps in the service—the rupee was taken of and the Battalion deteriorated. If the extra pay were restored there need be no difficulty about recruiting.
15. The Gun Lascars are well enough. The Drivers are not sufficiently paid or clothed, considering the nature of their work.
16. No copy accessible at Aden; but it is a declaration of fidelity to the Government, it is made on the guns (which in the Artillery, represent colours) and administered to Hindoos by the Pundit; to Mus-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

sulmen by a Moollah. It is similar to that prescribed for the Infantry recruit.

17.

The same answer.

18.

I am not aware of any alteration during my experience of 38 years.

19.

No, the form is immaterial: no form of oath will bind a man who is disposed to mutiny.

Institute a good system of discipline and interior economy, and supply the means to maintain it.

20.

Over a wide area irrespective of districts.

21.

The same answer.

22.

All tribes and castes should be mixed.

23.

Say, not to exceed two-thirds of Northernmen,—that is of men North of the Nurbuddah, the other third to be Deccanees and Kan-kanees.

24.

With reference to Gun Lascars, no restriction is necessary.

The rule suggested in answer No. 23 preceding, might be followed in respect of Drivers.

25.

For the Golundauz, recruiting parties could be employed when necessary. Gun Lascars are usually procurable in any number at Head Quarters of Battalions, and each battery could find its own recruits for the Drivers.

26.

An accurate and formal registry before the nearest District Magistrate or Deputy.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

27.

If Native Drivers be discontinued, they should be replaced by European "Gunnery and Drivers" on the system which prevails in the Horse Brigade Artillery, where driving is a part of the Gunner's duty.

This would be the most efficient establishment, but is it necessary to incur the expense of it. Anglo-Indians do very well as clerks, draughtsmen, &c., but they would form a corps of very indifferent Drivers, even if they were procurable in sufficient numbers.

Native Drivers, well selected, and properly disciplined, would be efficient and safe.

Every sub-division, that is, each gun, should have a European Sergeant *belonging to the battery for duty with the horses harness, and Drivers*, irrespective of the Company, which may be European and Native.

---

LIEUT. COLONEL G. HUTT,  
*Bombay Artillery.*  
*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Almost entirely of Hindostanees and Mahrattahs.

2.

Almost entirely of the various races of the Deccan and Concan, including the Perwarry, Moochee and Der, there are a few Mussulmans; and Soosties, and Poorbeas.

3.

Identical with the Gun Lascars.

4.

I believe it to be in many respects highly advantageous and economical, that the Native Artillery be not wholly disbanded; there is often work to be done in India on which it is murderous to employ European Gunnery, but one Battalion of its present strength would suffice for the Bombay Presidency.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5. I am strongly in favour of Native Drivers, they are light weights and Horsemen, and have always behaved well with us; they not only save the Europeans, but can often be employed where it would be impossible to employ Europeans at all. I have seen much of these men, and believe them to be among the most valuable we possess. Hardest worked and worst paid.
6. Almost exclusively from Hindostan and the southern Concan.
7. The Deccan, northern and southern Concan, and Surat; there are a few Hindoostanees.
8. Identical with the Gun Lascar, there are a few Punjabees and Pathans among them.
9. By Bombay G. O. 26th March 1826, almost all the best classes of men are excluded, the reason of this, I am not acquainted with.
10. No restrictions whatever.
11. Remove all restrictions, some of the prohibited classes comprise the best men in the country; but efficient Gunners are not to be had at the present reduced rate of pay, as it is, we only get the refuse of the Infantry; almost the only efficient men in the ranks are those enlisted prior to 20th April 1837, at that time the Native Gunners were really effective and economical, at present they are much the reverse: prior to that time, we drew our best recruits from Sarwunt Warree; the order of that date cut them all off and ruined the Battalion.
12. The ordinary "recruiting party" is the only agency, that I am aware of having been employed.
13. I am not aware of any, when I was Adjutant the Brigade Major of Cawnpore used to examine the Hindoostanee recruits for me, but that was a mere private arrangement.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

14.

Remove all restrictions, revert to the rules in existence prior to 1837, and there will then be an efficient Native Artillery if required.

15.

There are thousands of men in the Western Provinces of India admirably suited for Lascars and Drivers, but the position of the latter should be improved, they should be placed on the same footing as the Regular Cavalry; at present they are the hardest worked and worst paid men in the service which renders it difficult at times to get recruits.

16.

I have always looked on native oaths as a farce, the precaution I was in the habit of taking was carefully to explain to each recruit in the presence of one or two Native Officers, the nature of the work required of him, laying the greatest stress on "obedience to the Commanding Officer, and the use of the pick-axe and shovel;" if he did not agree to that he was not received. The formal oath was afterwards gone through because it was ordered.

17.

These are mostly good cast men, Ders, Perwarrees, Moochees, Chamars, regarding whom I never took any precautions, I have enlisted many hundreds, but do not remember ever to have gone through the form of the oath, though of course it ought to have been done.

18.

Since the Native Artillery were first raised, 26th March 1826.

19.

Abolish oaths altogether, substitute a concise, plain exposition of what is expected from him, and the punishment that would follow disobedience, laying stress on any particular point that circumstances might seem to require, but above all let the recruits know and see that in the body of men he is about to join, the Commanding Officer really possesses the power to enforce what he demands.

20.

Raise the Battalions as at present, recruit from all parts of the country, taking especial care that the influence of no one class predominates; there are some classes of men who are only to be had in small numbers whom it were most injudicious to exclude: the Jews are an invaluable body, though probably no regiment has more than thirty or forty in its ranks.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The best Native Officer I ever knew was a Moplah.

21.

The same reply: I doubt, whether a better class of men are any where to be had for the work required of them, than those we now have.

22.

I have seen much evil and no good arise from combination of the same caste or class; let the men of every Battery or Battalion be as "composite" as possible, taking care that the senior Native Officer be as far as possible of that caste that has the smallest number in the ranks.

23.

I doubt the practicability of laying down any definite rules on this head; much discretionary power should be vested in the Commanding Officer, the general principle being always insisted on that the influence of no one caste be allowed to predominate.

24.

The same reply.

25.

I have always found the agency of the simple recruiting party to be quite sufficient in any well regulated Battery or Battalion, there is no difficulty in getting recruits. Previous to April 1837 I generally had from 20 to 30 half-drilled men eagerly waiting to enlist in the Golumdauze, and since that I have seen something of the same sort with Batteries, as regards Lascars and Drivers.

26.

I am not aware of any precaution that is necessary.

27.

If European Drivers are to be employed, they should decidedly be "Gunners and Drivers:" among every body of recruits will be found a certain number of men who, from physical conformation, habits or inclination, are better suited for this work than others, let these be selected, but trained as Gunners also.

Anglo-Indians are utterly worthless. On this point, I would suggest that while retaining Native Drivers; a certain number of Europeans, say about 25, be added to each Battery, and trained as Drivers, these men might, as a general rule, take the gun team and would always be available as Gunners when required. I put this in practice a few months ago, and it seemed to answer remarkably well.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL E. W. S. SCOTT,  
*Inspector General of Ordnance.*

*Bengal Army.*

**1 to 3.**

I have not access to the documents which would enable me to answer these questions with precision, but full information can be obtained on these points from the Commandant of Artillery. The necessary documents being in the office of the Assistant Adjutant General, Artillery.

**4.**

I do not think Golundauz or Native Gunners ought to be enlisted, or form part of the Artillery.

**5.**

No.

**6 to 8.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**9 & 10.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**11.**

I would not employ any.

**12.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**13.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**14.**

See answer to question No. 4.

**15.**

See answer to question No. 5.

**16.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**17 to 19.**

See answer to question No. 1.

**20.**

See answer to question No. 4.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**21.** See answer to question No. 5.

**22 to 26.** See question No. 4.

**27.** By European Gunners trained to the duty of Drivers as part of their exercise, but making use only of such Gunners of each company as shewed a mutual aptitude for riding.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL H. TOMBS, C. B.,  
*Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 to 3.** These questions, I respectfully submit, can only be correctly answered after reference to the records of the Office of the Assistant Adjutant General of the Regiment; I have but slight knowledge of the native portion of the Regiment, never having served with it, and cannot therefore reply to questions Nos. 1 and 3. With regard to the Gun Lascars, they are chiefly recruited from the Syces who are composed of Mussulmen and Hindoos of low caste and are principally Natives or descendants (born with the Troops and Companies) of Natives of Oude.

**4 & 5.** My firm conviction is, that the Government should, unhesitatingly and at once, or as soon as arrangements can be made to supply their place, discharge all Native Gunners and Drivers from their service and keep their whole force of Artillery in the hands of Europeans entirely; when this has been done, I do not think a recurrence of the Mutinies of 1857-58 need be apprehended.

**6.** I cannot answer this question.

**7.** Already answered on the first page.

**8.** I cannot answer this question.



## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

9.

I believe that until very lately there were no Seikhs in the ranks of the Regular Artillery, but whether they were excluded by order I cannot say—there are no Goorkhas in the Artillery, probably from a difficulty in recruiting them or from a disinclination on the part of the race to the service.

10.

The Drivers and Gun Lascars had, up to the time of the Mutiny, been so overworked and underpaid in comparison with the other branches of the service, that none but low caste men would enter.

11.

I think Goorkhas would make capital Artillery men, but I have already stated my conviction that no natives of any caste or denomination should be retained in the Artillery.

12.

I believe recruiting parties from the head Quarters of native Battalions were detached in Rohilcund, Oude, and other districts, for the purpose of bringing in Recruits. The Gun Lascars and Drivers were principally recruited from the Sais's and their relatives, numbers of whom, up to the time of the Mutiny, were always at hand to supply vacancies.

13.

I cannot answer this as far as it relates to the Golundaz or Drivers. Gun Lascars being usually enlisted on the spot, the registry of them was made by the Commanding Officer of Troops or Company.

14 &amp; 15.

No, I cannot suggest any; and I think the system of recruiting the Gun Lascars and Drivers from the Syces good, especially for the Drivers, as most of the Syces are good riders.

16 &amp; 17.

All Golundaz, Gun Lascars and Drivers, are sworn in over a Gun according to the oath held most sacred by the religion which they profess; I do not know what the words of the oaths are, but I believe Musulmen swear by the Koran, and Hindoos by the water of the Ganges.

18.

I cannot say, but I do not recollect any alteration in it, since I joined the Regiment in 1842.

19.

No.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

20.

I am of opinion that, if it be decided to keep up Native Artillery, the wider the area from which they are recruited, and the less homogenous the Battalions are, the less chance will there be of conspiracy against the State.

21.

I can but repeat that I would not interfere or alter the system now in force with regard to enlistment of Gun Lascars and Drivers; I would give Officers Commanding Troops and Batteries unlimited control over the enlistment, insisting merely on the broad principal of allowing no preponderating number of one Sect or Caste over another.

22.

No. 22 is already answered at No. 20.

23 &amp; 24.

An equality of number should, as far as possible, be invariably retained. Of the two great Sects of Mahomedans and Hindoos of the plains, I should say a Battalion composed of  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd Mahomedans,  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd Hindoos, and  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd of other tribes, "Seikhs and Goorkhas," would be a good proportion.

25.

I can suggest none other than was employed previous to the mutiny.

26.

I can suggest none, beyond taking securities from their relations or head men of their villages for their good behaviour and allegiance to Government.

27.

All recruits for the Indian Artillery should be enlisted as Gunners and Drivers. On joining their recruit Depôt at Meerut, they should all be put into the riding school, and those whom (after a fair trial) it is found impracticable to make horsemen of, should be drafted into reserve or Garrison Companies. If recruits are enlisted separately for Gunners or Drivers, the service of the latter will be lost to the Government should they become ruptured or otherwise disabled for mounted duty; whereas by enlisting them as Gunners and Drivers they are available for either duty. I am decidedly against the employment of Anglo-Indians with Europeans, though I see no objection to a Battery, *wholly Eurasian* being raised as an experiment; to mix the two classes is, in my opinion, to spoil both, for their habits and

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

customs are entirely different, and the European looks with contempt upon his demi-Asiatic comrade, and it is moreover to perpetuate that Piebald system which has so long ruined the efficiency of the Company's Artillery.

## PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Bengal Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Usually half Hindoos and half Mahomedans. In the Troop of Major V. Coxe (which was at Rawul Pindee,) we have ascertained that the proportions were as follows :

Mahomedans, .....	52	
Brahmins,.....	26	} 58
Rajpoots,.....	29	
Inferior castes,.....	3	
		Total, ..... 110

2.

Mahomedans and low caste Hindoos.

3.

Same as No. 2. The Drivers were usually syces, promoted for smartness.

4.

As explained in paras. 26, 27 and 28 of our "general remarks" forming enclosure No. 2, in letter No. 1 of 25th June 1858, we would not have one gun manned by natives if we could help it, but consider that there must be some at Frontier Stations where Artillery is necessary, but where European Infantry could not be placed. The rule should be, to have as few native Artillery as possible, and in those few, to secure as many Native Christians and low caste natives as can be got. It is true that the Native Christians would be liable to be over-powered in a mutiny, but their destruction would leave the guns unmanned.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

Yes, in the Local India Artillery, not in the Royal Artillery, (see reasons assigned in Para. 29 of our "general remarks" quoted in the last answer.)

6.

Oudh, Allahabad, Rohilkund, Behar. In the Native Troop quoted in answer No. 1, the proportions were :

From about Allahabad,.....	40
From Oudh,.....	36
From Rohilkund,.....	31
From Behar, .....	3
	110
Total	..... 110

7.

The whole of Hindoostan.

8.

Ditto, often out of the sudder bazars or lines of large Cantonments like Meerut, Cawnpore and Umballah.

9.

Yes, (see our answer 3, Infantry paper, on "the recruiting and composition of corps," Bengal Army.)

10.

Same as No. 9, but there were more men of inferior caste in the Lascars, and many more in the Drivers than in the Golundauz.

The Drivers or ("Drabees" as they call themselves) were becoming almost a class of themselves.

11.

See our answer No. 4, in both the Bengal and Punjaub Infantry papers on "(re-organization and composition.)"

From the Artillery, we would exclude high caste men altogether, and recruit from low caste men, and Native Christians. The complement of a battery is so small in comparison with a Regiment of Infantry, or Cavalry, that we think this more decided line, which is recommended by policy might be taken without inconvenience. One of the objects of the late mutiny was to preserve the aristocracy of the upper castes. It has failed, and we should not give them another chance. The inveterate servility of the system was well illustrated the other day

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

by even a Seikh Havildar, telling General Chamberlain that the Havildar Majorship of a Regiment was too good a berth for any but a high caste man.

12.

The same as in other branches of the service, recruiting parties or Native Officers, introduced their own friends and relations.

13.

See Military Regulations; applicable to the whole Native Army. But we do not think Gun Lascars or Drivers were registered.

14.

See Bengal Infantry answer No. 8, ("recruiting and composition").

15.

Ditto. ditto.

16.

See Military Regulations and Articles of War.

17.

We do not think any oath was administered to either.

18.

We do not know.

19.

See answer 11, in the Punjaub Infantry paper on "recruiting and composition".

20.

As far as the Native Christian Artillerymen will be concerned, it matters not whence they come. But to the native element, the provincial principle laid down in answers 14 and 15 of the Punjaub Infantry paper, should be applied as far as practicable, the number will be so small that the point is of less importance.

21.

Ditto. ditto.

22.

All Native Christians if possible, otherwise low castemen.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**23.**

The Natives who are not Christians should be balanced caste against caste.

**24.**

Ditto

ditto.

**25.**

The best Native Christians, or best men of whatever class was wanted, should be selected for recruiting. But soldiers on leave would act as recruiting parties, and bring friends from home sufficient for the Artillery.

**26.**

Strictly enforce the present rules, which are quite sufficient.

**27.**

We should regret the discontinuance of Native Drivers, but if determined on, then their places had better be supplied by Anglo-Indians, as far as procurable, and failing them, by European Gunners trained to this duty. Separate classes of Europeans would be inconvenient in India where casualties are difficult to fill. We think Anglo-Indians might with great advantage be introduced into the Artillery to the extent of one-fourth or one-fifth both as Gunners and Drivers. The saving in Europeans would be considerable; and the Anglo-Indians from their knowledge of the language, and habits of the people, would often prove useful, especially in time of War.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,

*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1.**

Mussulmen and Hindoos. There are many Brahmins among the latter caste.

**2.**

Mussulmen and Hindoos.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. Mussulmen and Hindoos.
- 4 & 5. No replies required.
6. They are drawn from the Deccan and Hindoostan.
7. Recruits for both of these are taken from all classes, as height and a robust frame are not essential for their particular duties.
8. There are few Hindoostanees among the drivers. The Hindoostan men, from their height are generally put into the Golundauz.
9. None are excluded by any regulation.
10. The same reply as para. 9.
11. There are no Seikhs in either of the four Companies of Artillery in this contingent; and if Native Artillery are to be continued, it would be very advantageous to enlist some Seikhs into it, to counter-balance the influence of the Hindoostan and Deccan Mahomedans, who form the larger portion of the Artillery.
12. No agency is employed. Recruits are easily obtained for the Golundauz, and Gun Lascars and Drivers.
13. No precautions are taken: but if they are physically fit and are the regulation height for the Artillery, the men are registered.
14. None.
15. None.
16. The same oath is administered to the Artillery recruits, as that which is in use with the Infantry.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17. The same as above.
18. The same length of time as in the Infantry.
19. If the Native Artillery are to be continued, I would recommend the same addition to the present oath as I have suggested for the Infantry of this contingent.
- 20 & 21. No replies required.
22. The different races should be mixed up as much as possible to prevent combination.
23. There should be more Hindoos than Mussulmen, as many as three to one, other races should be mixed with them.
24. I would suggest the same as for the Golundanz.
25. The European Officer Commanding the Company can best employ his own Native Officers and Non-Commissioned, as the best agency for procuring recruits.
26. It is not requisite to apply to any Local Authorities when enlisting recruits for the Company of Artillery.
27. No reply required.
-



MAJOR G. ROWLANDSON,  
*Director Artillery Depôt of Instruction,*  
*Acting Superintendent Gun-powder Manufactory.*

*Madras Artillery.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

THE HORSE BRIGADE CONSISTS OF

Castes.	Actual number from last Returns.	Proportion.
Mussulmen, ... ..	116	Nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ rd. Rather more than $\frac{1}{4}$ rd. Mahratta, rather predominate.
Brahmins and Rajpoots, ... ..	17	
Mahrattas, ... ..	20	
Total, ... ..	153	

THE GOLUNDAUZ BATTALION IS COMPOSED OF

Mussulmen, ... ..	248	Nearly $\frac{1}{2}$ .
Brahmins and Rajpoots, ... ..	38	Ditto $\frac{1}{4}$ th. Nominal. Not one per cent.
Mahrattas, ... ..	4	
Tellingas, ... ..	72	About $\frac{1}{2}$ th.
Tamil, ... ..	146	Ditto $\frac{2}{3}$ th.
Other Castes, virtually, "Pariah" ... ..	3	Nominal.
Total, ... ..	511	

2.

THE GUN LASCAR ESTABLISHMENT CONSISTS OF

Castes.	Actual number from last Returns.	Proportion.
Mussulmen, ... ..	126	Between $\frac{1}{2}$ & $\frac{1}{4}$ .
Tamil, ... ..	144	About 14.
Pariahs, ... ..	143	Ditto $\frac{1}{4}$ th.
Christians, ... ..	102	Nearly $\frac{1}{6}$ th.
Tellingas ... ..	41	About $\frac{1}{4}$ th.
Brahmins and Rajpoots, ... ..	16	Ditto $\frac{1}{37}$ th.
Mahrattas, ... ..	10	Ditto $\frac{1}{80}$ th.
Total, ... ..	582	

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

The Native Drivers of Nos. 1 and 2 Batteries were enlisted in a great measure by recruiting from the Classes which enter the Cavalry Regiments; the other two Batteries (numbers 3 and 4) chiefly from amongst the Horse-keepers of Horse Artillery and Horse Batteries. They are accordingly accounted for separately as follows :

## IN NOS. 1 AND 2 BATTERIES, THERE ARE

Castes.	Actual number.	Proportion.
Mussulmen, ... ..	56	$\frac{1}{2}$ .
Brahmins and Rajpoots, ... ..	13	About $\frac{1}{5}$ th.
Mahrattas, ... ..	12	Ditto $\frac{1}{5}$ th.
Tellingas, ... ..	12	Ditto $\frac{1}{5}$ th.
Tamils, ... ..	3	Ditto $\frac{1}{7}$ th.
Pariahs, ... ..	13	Ditto $\frac{1}{5}$ th.
Christians, ... ..	3	Ditto $\frac{1}{7}$ th.
Total, ... ..	112	

## IN NOS. 3 AND 4 BATTERIES, THERE ARE

Mussulmen, ... ..	27	Nearly $\frac{1}{4}$ th.
Brahmins and Rajpoots, ... ..	3	About $\frac{1}{10}$ th.
Mahrattas, ... ..	1	Nominal.
Tellingas, ... ..	13	About $\frac{1}{3}$ th.
Tamil, ... ..	16	Ditto $\frac{2}{5}$ th.
Pariahs, ... ..	41	Do. $\frac{7}{20}$ th.
Christians, ... ..	18	Do. $\frac{3}{20}$ th. } $\frac{1}{2}$ .
Total, ... ..	119	

There are but four Horse Batteries with Native Drivers, in the Horse Artillery.

NOTE.—No account is taken of the Karkhans (or Bullock) Drivers as the Establishments are to be disbanded.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4.

I am of opinion that Native Artillery, either Horse or Foot Artillery, should not be part of the regular establishment of the Army, nor of the contingents maintained by Native States; there are Districts, such as those bordering on the Northern Circars, so fatal to Europeans that perhaps it may be advisable to maintain for service in those Districts, a limited establishment of *Local* Native Artillery.

5.

The system of Horse Batteries, with Native Drivers, never extended in the Madras Artillery, beyond four Batteries. These Drivers are now to be reduced, and the whole of the Light Field Batteries of this Army are to be driven by Europeans, the Home Authorities having approved entirely of the arrangements entered on last year for this end.

The employment of Native Drivers, under any circumstances, is an unsound economy, jeopardizing the efficiency of the Battery, and neutralizing the best arrangements for the efficiency of the other parts. East Indian Drivers are under trial; if they are found to answer the same objection does not apply to them, but a mixture of races in a Battery is an element of weakness, and an entirely European Battery is out and out the cheapest and best, because the most thoroughly dependable and effective. It is to be borne in mind that East Indians are on the same pay and conditions of service as Europeans.

6.

*Horse Artillery.*—The men are enlisted at Bangalore and Hyderabad. They are chiefly of the same class as the men of the Madras Cavalry, the largest proportion is from Arcot, and its neighbourhood. Mysore provides the next largest proportion. At Secundrabad, a few men from the North West Provinces are occasionally enlisted.

*Golundauz Battalion.*—The Battalion has been recruited at its Head Quarters at St. Thomas Mount; excepting in 1834, when a recruiting party was sent to the Northern Circars, which provided chiefly Tellinga men. The recruits for the most part (of the Golundauz Battalion) are connected more or less intimately by relationship or country, with the men already in its ranks.

7.

The Gun Lascars are enlisted by the Officers Commanding Detachments where vacancies occur. The recruits are more or less connected, through relations or friends, in the Gun Lascar Establishment.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

8.

The Drivers of Nos. 1 and 2 Horse Batteries were recruited to a considerable extent from the lines of the Cavalry Regiments, and were lads who were not deemed fit for the ranks of the Cavalry in consequence of being undersized; these Batteries have afterwards been recruited on the spot as casualties occurred—from the preponderance of Mussulmen and high caste men, it has been difficult to enlist men of inferior caste.

Nos. 3 and 4 Batteries were chiefly organized out of the Horse keepers of the Horse Brigade, the Mussulmen and men of high caste in these Batteries are those who were drafted as nuclei in the first instance from Nos. 1 and 2 Batteries. The enlistments, since their organization, have been from their own Horse keepers.

In conformity with orders from Army Head Quarters, all enlistments into the Horse Brigade, Golundauz, and Native Horse Batteries have ceased; and the Hon'ble Court of Directors have approved of Europeans replacing Natives as Drivers in the Light Field Batteries.

9.

None, by regulation. But no man of inferior caste has ever attempted to enlist in to the Horse Artillery, nor in to the Golundauz Battalion.

There are three men classified under the head of "other castes"; two, are men who have abjured Islamism, and the other is a "Pariah," who obtained admission through the grade of recruit boy: the Commanding Officer's objection to the transfer was over-ruled.

10.

No exclusion in respect to either Golundauz or Drivers.

11.

If Native Artillery is to be continued, I think that Pariahs and Native Christians in good proportions, should be enlisted. The services rendered by the Gun Lascars, and Sappers, composed alike of all castes, have been the admiration of all forces with which employed for the last 30 years.

12.

Regimental only.

13.

None whatever, but a registration by the Regimental Authorities is made of every man enlisted, of his village and caste in addition to personal registration.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

14.

No, excepting as relates to admission of Pariahs and Native Christians, who have hitherto been excluded practically though not by regulation.

15.

No.

16.

"I, A. B., Private, do solemnly affirm in the presence of Almighty God, that I will serve Government with truth and loyalty: and that I will faithfully obey the orders of all the Officers set over me. I do also swear that I will never abandon my Guns, except when lawfully ordered, and that I will consider them as my life, and defend them accordingly".

17.

Vide reply to Question 16.

18.

Cannot say; but it is understood to have been the only form heretofore in use.

19.

No; I believe no more value could be attached to any engagement or attestation, than to the oath or affirmation now in use.

20.

If Native Artillery for general service is to be continued, the men should continue to be recruited without reference to Districts.

If a limited Establishment of Native Artillery should be formed for local service, it may, or may not be advisable to recruit in the Districts they are to serve in, according to local considerations.

21.

Gun Lascars should continue to be recruited as hitherto, irrespective of Districts, Castes or Creeds.

22.

Composite, to the utmost practicable extent.

23.

Native Christians, Pariahs and inferior castes should be encouraged to enlist extensively, instead of being excluded as they practically have been hitherto.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24.

The Gun Lascars are of all castes. Native Christians, Pariahs and lower classes have not been excluded from this body of the Native Artillery, and should not be.

25.

Regimental only, as hitherto; the peculiar duties of Artillery service require to be specially provided for by Artillery Agents.

26.

The local authorities have hitherto had no connection with recruiting or enrolling men for the Artillery; and for the reason above given, it is not expedient they should.

27.

By European Gunners only, driving being made the duty of every Artillery-man. This has always been the system in the Madras Horse Artillery; but as light men are specially suited for driving, a representation has been made on the subject, with a view to a due proportion of under-sized but muscular men being enlisted in England for the Artillery, specially for driver service, but capable of serving a Gun.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,

*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Principally men from the upper Provinces of India, of all the varieties of Caste; with a fair sprinkling of Mahrattas.

2.

The Gun Lascars are, generally speaking, of low caste; Purwarics and others from the Deccan and Concan.

3.

A mixture of all the Races, Tribes, and Castes of India; but mostly enlisted within the limits of the Bombay Presidency.

4.

The Golundauze should be absorbed, and none but European Artillery allowed in India, except in certain cases, where climate may interfere with the efficiency of British Troops.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

No. Guns should be manned and driven by Englishmen, and Natives excluded from Artillery altogether: with the exception above alluded to.

6.

Principally from Hindoostan proper; Oude and the Doab, between the Jumna and Ganges, also a few from the Concan, and Deccan. Hindoostanees were selected on account of having more physical power to manage Artillery.

7.

From the Deccan, and Northern and Southern Concan.

8.

The Drivers are of all Districts, Hindoostanee men from the Deccan and Concan, a few from Guzerat: in short, enlisted from all manner of people without distinction.

9.

No exclusion has been practiced. Hindoostanees were esteemed as being of greater physical power, otherwise all men were enlisted who were considered fit for Artillery service.

10.

In the same manner were the Gun Lascars and Drivers entertained. The general low caste of the former is accounted for by the peculiarity of their duty; greasing gun wheels and other dirty work.

11.

I do not know of any: as a service, the Golundauz were ruined by the reduction of the pay from 8 to 7 Rupees per mensem; but all eligible men willing to serve were entertained without respect to caste.

12.

The Commanding Officers of Battalions arrange these matters under orders from the Commandant of Artillery.

13.

As regards the Recruits for the Golundauz, the orders respecting registry, &c., will be found in the III. Appendix to Jameson's Code, page 182, Section XLVI. (G. G. O. 5th July 1855, No. 539.) No precautions are taken with respect to the Gun Lascars and Drivers, and the rule quoted extended only to Presidency limits.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

14.

The rules answered very well; but the above regulation could, with advantage, be adopted generally throughout India. I may remark that enlistment for the Golundauz has been stopped altogether.

15.

With the few men required, alteration would be unnecessary, and Native Drivers are being replaced by Englishmen.

16.

I solemnly declare in the presence of God that I will be faithful to Government, and will implicitly obey my superiors; and I further declare that I will never abandon my Guns, but will defend them with my life.

17.

The only form of oath administered to either Gun Lascar or Artillery Driver, on enlistment, is to the effect that they will faithfully serve the Government for any period of service required of them; that they will never abandon the Guns entrusted to their care, that they will serve wherever Government may direct. This form of oath is administered to them in front of a Gun, with their right hand placed on it, and the 1st Section of the Native Articles of War read to them on parade.

18.

Since the Establishment of the Golundauz Battalions.

19.

No. I am impressed with the idea that the oath altogether is unnecessary; no oath or form of engagement will bind men to the service if they be indisposed to remain.

20.

Irrespective of Districts. The Battalions should be composed of all kinds of men; enlisted, if possible, from all parts of India.

21.

And I would apply the same answer. I am certain that local enlistments will not answers for Corps accustomed to be employed on general service.

22.

Composed of all kinds of men to be procured in India, and no restriction allowed, except personal disqualification for duty as a Soldier.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

23.

This must depend upon various circumstances, but as much mixed as possible; no one class or caste preponderating over others.

24.

And I would apply the same answer; though the matter is of minor importance as their numbers are few, and they are much divided already, being attached to the several field Batteries.

25.

Nothing is required beyond the agency of the Commanding Officer.

26.

The Golundauz should be enlisted under the Rules laid down in the III. Appendix to Jameson's Code, page 182, Section XLVI. para. 214, (G. G. O. 5th July 1855, No. 539). These precautions should be generally ordered for all enlistments as they appear to be desirable and feasible.

27.

I would replace the Native Drivers by English Gunners taught to ride, drive, and manage the Guns, as is usual with the Bombay Horse Artillery. I see no objection to Anglo Indians being entertained in our European Batteries, if found fit for the service of Artillery.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY. LIEUT. GENL. SIR. H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., & K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Principally men from the Upper Provinces of India; of all the varieties of caste, with a fair sprinkling of Mahrattas.

2.

The Gun Lascars are, generally speaking, of low caste; Perwaries and others from the Deccan and Concan.

3.

A mixture of all the races, tribes and castes of India; but mostly enlisted within the limits of the Bombay Presidency.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4. I say decidedly not.
5. Certainly not.
6. Principally from Hindoostan proper, Oude, and the Dooab between the Jumna and Ganges; also a few from the Concan and the Deccan. Hindoostanees were selected on account of having more physical power to manage Artillery.
7. From the Deccan, and Northern and Southern Concan.
8. The Drivers are of all Districts. Hindoostanees; men from the Deccan and Concan; a few from Guzerat: in short, enlisted from all manner of people without distinction.
9. No exclusion has been practiced. Hindoostanees were esteemed as being of greater physical power, otherwise all men were enlisted who were considered fit for Artillery service.
10. In the same manner were the Gun Lascars and Drivers entertained. The general low caste of the former is accounted for by the peculiarity of their duty; greasing gun wheels and other dirty work.
11. I do not know of any. As a service the Golandauz were ruined by the reduction of the pay from 8 to 7 Rupees per mensem; but all eligible men willing to serve were entertained without respect to caste.
12. The Commanding officers of Battalions arrange these matters, under the orders from the Commandant of Artillery.
13. As regards the recruits for the Golundauz, the orders respecting registry, &c., will be found in the III. Appendix to Jameson's Code, page 182 Section XLVI., G. G. O., (5th, July 1855, No. 539.) No precautions are taken with respect to the Gun Lascars and Drivers, and the rule quoted extended only to Presidency limits.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 14.** The rules answer very well, but the above regulations could with advantage be adopted generally throughout India. I may remark that enlistment for the Golundauze has been stopped altogether.
- 15.** With the few men required, alteration would be unnecessary ; and Native Drivers are being replaced by Englishmen.
- 16.** I solemnly declare in the presence of God that I will be faithful to Government, and will implicitly obey my superiors ; and I further declare that I will never abandon my Guns, but will defend them with my life.
- 17.** The only form of oath administered to either Gun Lascar or Artillery Driver on enlistment, is to the effect, that they will faithfully serve the Government for any period of service required of them, that they will never abandon the guns entrusted to their care, that they will serve wherever Government may direct. This form of oath is administered to them in front of a gun with their right hand placed on it, and the 1st Section of the Native Articles of War read to them on parade.
- 18.** Since the establishment of the Golundauze Battalions.
- 19.** No.
- 20.** I would have none.
- 21.** Answered as above.
- 22.** Replied to in former question.
- 24.** Replied to as before.
- 25.** Nothing is required beyond the agency of the Commanding Officer.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

26.

The Golundauze should be enlisted under the rules laid down in the III. Appendix to Jameson's Code, page 182, Section XLVI, para. 214, G. G. O. 5th July 1855, No 539; these precautions should be generally ordered for all enlistments, as they appear to be desirable and feasible.

27.

I would place them on the same footing as the Royal Army at home.

---

COLONEL V. EYRE, C. B.,

*Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Poorbeahs, farmers and tillers of the Mahomedan, Brahmin, Rajpoot, Gwalah, and Aheer castes, with a sprinkling of Chittagong men.

2.

The same as the Golundauze; but as a body, the men are physically inferior.

3.

The same as the Golundauze; but chiefly of the Aheer and Gwalah castes, and as a body, below the standard for Gun Lascars.

4.

No: but Native Artillery to form part of the Artillery of the Bengal Army might be wholly composed of Native Christians; plenty of them in Bombay to commence with. Once established, there will be no further need of recourse to another Presidency.

5.

No.

6.

From the several districts in the provinces of Oudh and the Dooab.

7.

Ditto

ditto

ditto

ditto.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

8. From the several districts in the provinces of Oudh and the Doab.
9. The castes allowed by regulations, are Mahomedans, Brahmins, Rajpoots, Gwalahs and Aheers ; all others have been excluded as inferior.
10. The restriction as to caste did not extend to the Gun Lascars and Drivers, and therefore among them were many Loadhs, "Tailees" and even "Passees".
11. No, I am not aware of any.
12. A recruiting party of a Native Officer and perhaps two or three Golundauze is detached to Oudh for the purpose of getting recruits for the Artillery ; for the Gun Lascars and Drivers there are always men at hand.
13. None that I am aware of.
14. Let a recruiting depôt be established.
15. None.
16. Myn-rahnewallah bustee-ka, Purgunnah ka, Souba-ka, beta-ka Hngtala Khoda-ka hazir hazir jauka Purnesshur, Bhugowan ko jap hankeee kee roo se ignar bacha kurta hoon, ki Emaam Dhurum. Myu phurgiz upun tope ke nuheen chorja oonga or Khoodbhee kuroonga juhan kuheew ka hookum kaon, aor upun surdaron ka sub hookum tum O munsee manoonga, aor hurek but meu upne tyn nibahoorga jysa bhula sipahee, uor company ka wafadar humokar moonasib had : uor nysabee hoke jo kisoo bhoree see upne khidmut men goosoor kuroon tas myn qubool kuroonga suzeeu jo likee hooee hyn luskurree neen meu uor mere roohuroo purkee guye hyu.
17. The same as that administered to the Golundauze.

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

18.

I should say since 1754, when the first Articles of War for the Native Army were compiled.

19.

It seems to me an incongruity to administer an oath on enlisting, when in the more grave proceeding of a Court Martial, a solemn affirmation is deemed sufficient: perhaps the former had better be discontinued when the latter was introduced.\* I would have no oath, but simply an engagement to serve the Government subject to the Articles of War.

\* Sic in Orig.

20.

I would suggest the establishment of a recruiting depôt from which alone casualties should be filled up; and the recruiting to embrace all India, to the exclusion of all Brahmins, and Syuds of the Mahomedan faith: and all castes hitherto excluded.

21.

Ditto ditto as regards Gun Lascars and Bullock Drivers.

22.

Composite.

23.

Seikhs two-fifths, Hindoos two-fifths, Mahomedans one-fifth.

24.

The Gun Lascars and Bullock Drivers might be formed as hitherto.

25.

None other than Native agency will succeed.

26.

If a Native Artillery recruiting depôt is established, the precautionary measures in regard to enlisting recruits should be left to the Commandant of the depôt.

27.

By Anglo-Indians and Native Christians.

---

# ARTILLERY.

---

## 2.—RULES OF DISCIPLINE AND MILITARY CODE.

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. Are the same Articles of War applicable to the European Gunners and to the Golundaz of
2. Can you suggest improvements in the Articles of War, now in use in the Golundaz of
3. Can you suggest improvements in the Articles of War, as respects the European Artillery?
4. Are the Gun Lascars and Drivers under the same Articles of War as the Golundaz; and do any improvements suggested, comprehend these classes?
5. Should the special rules regulating punishment in the Native Army be retained, or should they be assimilated to the rules which obtain in the British Army?
6. Does the system of the Native Courts Martial work satisfactorily in the Native Artillery of
7. What means are adopted to acquaint the Golundaz, Gun Lascars and Drivers, with the Military Code under which they serve?
8. What proportion of the Golundaz, Gun Lascars and Drivers, can read and comprehend the Articles of War in their own vernacular.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

HIS EXCY. GENL. THE RT. HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief in India.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. No, certainly not.
2. The same as suggested for the Infantry.
3. They must be kept assimilated to the Mutiny Act and Articles of War for Her Majesty's Forces; any difference is undesirable.
4. Yes, and the same improvements are desirable.
5. To assimilate the rules; for with those applicable for Europeans is out of the question.
6. I should suppose as unsatisfactory in the Native Artillery, as in the other branches of the service.
7. The Articles of War ordered to be read to them periodically.
8. I have no means of answering this.

---

HIS EXCY. LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras.*

*Madras Army.*

1. The Articles of War for Native Troops are alone applicable to Native Military classes of every description.
2. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Artillery.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. In my opinion the Articles of War for all European Troops in India should correspond in every particular with the Articles of War for Her Majesty's British Army.
4. See replies to questions 1 and 2.
5. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Native Artillery.
6. As above.
7. As above.
8. As above.

---

MAJOR GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B.,  
*Secretary to Government,  
Military Department.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. No, the Europeans are governed by the Mutiny Act, the Golundaz by the Articles of War for the Native Troops.
2. I beg to refer to my reply to the similar question regarding the Native Infantry.
3. No, these follow *mutatis mutandis* the Articles of War for Her Majesty's service.
4. Yes to the whole question.
5. They should be retained.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6. There is no difference that I have observed, from the working of Courts Martial in the Native Infantry.

7. The Articles of War are periodically read to them.

8. I do not know.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

1. There are no European Gunners in the Punjab Irregular Force. Two Staff Serjeants are attached to each battery, and they are under the same Articles of War as the European Troops.

2. See answer 1, Infantry paper No. 2, on "Military Code and rules of discipline."

3. No special articles are required for the European Artillery-men, who will be governed by the same articles as all other European Soldiers.

4. There are none.

5. See answers 1 and 2, Infantry paper No 2, on "Military Code and rules of discipline."

6. See answer 3 of Punjab Infantry, paper No. 2, on Military Code, &c.

7. Periodical rehearsal of Articles of War.

8. Perhaps 10 per cent.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,  
*Commanding Peshawur Division.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. They might be made so with a few modifications.
2. I think they might with advantage be abolished. European Courts Martial only should be allowed for the trial of Capital crimes; all other offences should be disposed of under the orders of Commanding Officers, whose powers should be correspondingly increased.
3. No.
4. Yes.
5. The present special rules have far too lenient a tendency. I see no advantage in assimilating them to the rules which obtain in the British army. What is most wanted is, to furnish Commanding Officers with increased powers; no appeal beyond them should be listened to.
6. In no portion of the Native army does the system of Courts Martial work satisfactorily; the ends of discipline are at present rarely met by it, and crime to a certain extent goes unpunished.
7. They are read by interpreters at stated intervals, but with no satisfactory result, for none comprehend them.
8. I know not exactly, but very few read or write at all, and none comprehend the vernacular of the Articles of War.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,

*Bombay Army.*

1. No.
2. I have a strong opinion that these Articles of War should be totally abolished.
3. Ditto.
4. Yes, they are so. The improvement I would adopt would be the having no Articles of War whatever.
5. Commanding Officers should have magisterial powers over all ranks of Native Indians under their command, and no special rules are required.
6. No.
7. The Articles of War are read to them monthly.
8. I cannot say.

---

BRIGADIER G. R. BARKER, C. B.,

*Royal Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. No.
2. I think they might be made, especially with regard to punish-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ments, powers of Commanding Officers, constitution of Courts Martial &c., but our Articles are those of the Native Army generally, and would probably have to undergo a complete revision if a Native Army is reorganized.

3.

The Articles are those for the European Troops of the E. I. Company, but emanating from the highest authority, and ought not to be lightly criticised, but with all diffidence, I think that if military men were encouraged to offer suggestions which must occur at the time in the practical working of the "Code," and more especially with reference to infirm Courts Martial, now so uncertain in their results, much greater perfection might be attained.

4.

Yes, all under the Articles for the Native Army.

5.

I would assimilate them as nearly as possible, because I think a feeling pervaded the Native Army, that they were exempted from, and did not require the same discipline and restraints as Europeans, but this again embraces a very wide subject, because difficulty with regard to Prison rules, diet, &c. must arise, if Native prejudices are to be respected.

6.

No; most officers who are conversant with Native Courts Martial are aware that in their verdicts they are very little guided by the evidence, but either try to form their opinion from that of the Superintending Officer, or have already done so with the impression that a man must be guilty if brought to trial. They are also ready at any time to record a verdict to gratify (as they suppose) their European Officers, or the reverse if it suits their purpose.

7.

The Articles are read to them on parade, under the same rules as to the Native Infantry.

8.

About one in ten.

---

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER C. BLOOD,  
*Commanding Sind Division of the Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

1. No, they are not.
2. I am decidedly of opinion that flogging should be again introduced into the Native Army.
3. No, the present Articles of War appear to answer every purpose.
4. Yes.
5. Yes, with the modifications herein mentioned, viz, flogging, the power of summary dismissal, &c., &c.
6. Yes, I am of opinion that it does.
7. I am not aware that it has been usual to instruct the Golundaz, Gun Lascars, and Drivers in Military Law.
8. This question would be better answered from the Head Quarters of the Bombay Regiment of Artillery.

---

BRIGADIER R. HORSFORD,  
*Acting Commandant of Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. No.
2. I think the Articles of War for the Native Army might be simplified with much advantage, and the restriction placed on the power of Courts Martial by means of private instructions to Superintending

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Officers should be removed, especially as regards the infliction of corporal punishment.

3.

I would recommend that as in Her Majesty's service, there should be an annual Mutiny Act, and Articles of War for the European portion of the Indian Army. It has not unfrequently occurred that similar offences have been visited at the same station with dissimilar punishments in the two services, from the circumstance of their being governed by different acts. There appears to me no reason why the Mutiny Act and Articles of War for Her Majesty's service should not be made applicable to the European Indian Army.

4.

They are under the same Articles of War; and whatever alterations may be made in the Act, should apply also to these classes.

5.

Assimilation in regard to punishment cannot entirely be introduced, the habits of Europeans and Natives being so different, but some of the powers with which Commanding Officers in the British Army are vested, might, I conceive, be safely and advantageously entrusted to Commanding Officers of the Native Army. I refer especially to the power of inflicting sentence of short periods of solitary imprisonment, and also of imprisonment with hard labor, to be carried out under the Commanding Officer's orders and superintendance. The labor to consist in piling shot, drill in heavy marching order, &c. Offenders under such sentences should not be made over to the civil power, nor should the hard labor necessarily entail dismissal from the service.

6.

No; the native Code of morality differs evidently from our own; and there are many crimes in our eyes and according to our principles considered disgraceful, which judged by the native standard, are very venial. Take for instance perjury, an offence, to the commission of which, we attach *infamy*. I do not think I am wrong in saying that few natives would hesitate to resort to it if it suited their purpose. It is impossible therefore to expect that a Native Court Martial would readily, or except under compulsion, visit the crime with the punishment it calls for, and so in other cases.

7.

The Articles of War are read to all, every third month.

Offences committed by Native Soldiers are investigated, and punishments awarded in accordance with the provisions of these Articles. The men themselves are generally well acquainted with the purpose and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

principles of the Articles of War, either from talking to one another on the subject, or from having the proceedings of all Native Courts Martial published in General Orders, read and explained to them on parades specially ordered for this purpose.

The larger proportions of Native Artillery can read and write, but not many who can read and comprehend the Articles of War, in their own vernacular, without the assistance of some one who has acquired a greater facility in reading and writing than themselves.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,

*Secretary to Government, Bombay.*

*Bombay Artillery.*

1.

The Articles of War for the European Troops are not the same as for the Golundaz.

2.

I am not prepared to do so.

3.

I am not prepared to do so.

4.

The Articles of War for the Native Army apply to the troops of all arms, and to all enlisted men.

5 to 8.

These questions have been answered in the Infantry section.

---

COLONEL W. M. COGLAN,

*Bombay Artillery.*

1.

They are not. The Europeans are subject to Articles very nearly identical with those for the Queen's Army. The Golundaz are subject to the Articles for Native Troops.

2.

They are too complicated in their construction, and instead of carrying their meaning to any ordinary reader, they require many books, and regulations and general orders to explain them.



**QUESTIONS.**

**ANSWERS.**

**3.**

The Articles of War for European Troops also require to be simplified.

Of minor Courts Martial there is perhaps not one in ten which has not some flaw, irregularity, or illegality.

A Code might be compiled which should be intelligible, and easy to work.

**4.**

They are: the observations apply to all.

**5.**

The ordinary punishment regulations need not differ, but in Native Corps it would strengthen the hands of the Commandant if he had the power of summary dismissal.

**6.**

No particular complaint has been made in the Artillery, but the feeling is general that our Military Judicial system is needlessly encumbered with law.

**7.**

They hear the Articles of War read periodically once in the three months, and they learn by habit and observation.

**8.**

No means of answering this question at Aden.

---

COLONEL G. HUTT,

*Bombay Artillery.*

**1.**

All Native Troops are liable to the Native Articles of War.

**2.**

Abolish them; substitute a few simple rules that can be readily understood and remembered; teach the Native Soldier to look to his Commanding Officer only, and from him again exact the most rigid responsibility; this is far more consonant with native feelings and ideas, and commands a ready respect and obedience that our complicated system can never hope to approach.

**3.**

I think our present system works well.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. They are all liable to the same Articles of War.
5. The nearer the rules of both forces can be assimilated the better, reinstate corporal punishment, and invest the Commanding Officer with the power of discharge.
- On the whole it does.
6. None whatever, except reading a portion of the Articles of War on each muster parade, to which they never seemed to pay the smallest attention.
7. Ability to read and write is indispensable for promotion to the lowest grade in the Golundaz; in the Gun Lascars and Drivers, it is not so much regarded, but I never heard of such a thing as a Native soldier reading the Articles of War; they were regarded rather as a myth, most terrible because least known.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL E. W. C. SCOTT,  
*Inspector General of Ordnance.*

*Bengal Artillery.*

1. No.
2. I would not retain Golundaz.
3. The proceedings of Courts Martial, might, I think, be simplified with advantage. They are too technical.
4. Yes.
5. Assimilated.
6. Practically the Inspecting Officer constitutes the Court.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7. The Articles of War are read to them every three months.

8. I cannot say.

---

BREVET COLONEL H. TOMBS, C. B.,  
*Horse Artillery.*

1. No. There are distinct Articles of War for Europeans and Natives.

2. I think the Native Articles of War are unnecessarily long, complicated, and far beyond the understanding of most Natives. I would give every Officer Commanding a Native Regiment, Troop or Battery, the power of a Magistrate over his men, submitting only to Courts Martial crimes worthy discharge, Death or transportation, and alter the Articles of War accordingly.

3. No.

4. Answered at No. 2.

5. There must be separate rules for the Native Army; many of the punishments awarded to Europeans being wholly inapplicable to Natives.

6. From my experience, which is small, I should say the system of Native Courts Martial is a wholesale failure. The European Superintending Officer, and the Judge Advocate, are in nine cases out of ten the real members of the court.

7. I am not aware of any other than reading the Articles of War to them.

8. I cannot say.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Bengal Army.*

1. No; but the law in both cases is based on the same principles.
2. See reply No 1, Bengal Infantry paper No 2, on "Military Code and Rules of discipline" where it is fully discussed.
3. No; we have not the requisite experience. But Europeans in all the branches of the service must, of course, be under the same Articles of War.
4. Yes, they are all tried and punished under the same Articles, and the improvements are required for all.
5. See the Infantry paper quoted in answer 2. The treatment of Europeans and Natives is necessarily different, and must remain so till their natures become assimilated by common principles of action.
6. Certainly not.
7. The Articles of War were periodically read to them as to other Native Soldiers.
8. Perhaps 10 per cent. of the Golundaz, hardly any of the Drivers.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,  
*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Hyderabad Contingent.*

1. They are the same as at present in use with the Infantry.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. The same improvements as I have already suggested for the infantry of this Contingent.
3. No reply required.
4. They are under the same Articles of War as the Golundaz.
5. The rules for the punishment of the Native Army cannot be assimilated to the rules which obtain for Europeans.
6. Yes.
7. Being written in Hindoostanee and Nagree, the Native Officers are able to explain them to the men of the Company.
8. Not above one-third of the whole company can read in their own vernacular.

---

MAJOR G. ROWLANDSON,  
*Director, Artillery Depôt of Instruction,  
Actg. Supdt. Gun-powder Manufactory.*

*Madras Artillery.*

1. No, the European Gunners are subject to the Mutiny Act and Articles of War, as provided by the Legislature in England. The Natives to the Articles of War framed under the Legislative Acts of the Government of India.
2. The Articles of War in use with the Golundaz, are those applicable to the other Native Troops of the Army of India. I am not disposed to think that any special difference between the Golundaz and the other portions of the Native Army, in respect to the Articles of War, is desir-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

able; nor have any circumstances come under my knowledge to lead me to think that administration of Military Justice, under the existing Code, is either insufficient for maintaining the discipline of the Army, or inapplicable to the class of men who usually enlist into the Artillery, in all its branches.

3.

The European Artillery are subject to the same Mutiny Act and Articles of War as the other Europeans of the Honorable Company's Army, and in close assimilation with those of the Home Service.

4.

The Gun Lascars and Drivers have been, and are, under the same Articles of War as the Golundaze; and no special exception should be made, I think, in respect to any class, that are to be subject to the Code.

5.

Rules relating to punishment in the Native Army should be, as hitherto, quite distinct from those for the European portion of the Army. The races differ so completely that amalgamation is impracticable.

6.

Yes, as much as in the other branches; but the real value of such Tribunals depends more on the conducting Officer, than the competency of the Native Members.

7.

All orders affecting pensions, either to the Native Troops or their heirs, as well as the prescribed sections of the Articles of War, are read to the men on parade once in three months; and such parts of the standing orders as affect them, once in six months; translations in Hindoostanee, Teloogoo and Tamil of the above, are read in each language also.

8.

The majority it is believed, are competent to read and understand the Articles of War, each in his own vernacular.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,

*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Artillery.*

1.

No, the European and the Native Articles of War are separate and distinct.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. No, I cannot ; but I would abolish them altogether as inapplicable for Native Troops.

3. No, I cannot.

4. Yes ; I have not been able to suggest any improvements.

5. The assimilation will not answer. Under *selected* Officers in Regiments, the Native Officers will maintain discipline without the special Rules which stand between the men and those to whom they should look up, in all things.

6. Yes, it works well according to Regulation, and habit has become second nature ; but I am convinced that the system spoils the Native Soldier, who should look to his Commander in all things. Much could be written on this subject. A constant change of Commanders causes want of confidence in the men, and the object of most European Officers is to get away from the Regiment as soon as possible.

7. The Articles of War are periodically explained to them.

8. I cannot answer this question with any degree of certainty. The Golundaz are generally well educated ; many of the Gun Lascars are taught in the Battalion Schools, and have picked up a good deal of English from the Gunners. An ability to read and write is scarce among the Drivers.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Bombay Artillery.*

1. No, the European and Native Articles of War are separate and distinct.

2. No, I cannot ; but I would abolish them altogether as inapplicable for Native Troops.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. No, I cannot.
4. Yes, I have not been able to suggest any improvements.
5. As long as the natives are retained, the special rules are sufficient.
6. It does.
7. The Articles of War are periodically explained to them.
8. I cannot answer this question with any degree of certainty ; the Gollundaz are generally well educated. Many of the Gun Lascars are taught in the Battalion School and have picked up a good deal of English from the Gunners. An ability to read and write is scarce among the Drivers.

---

COLONEL V. EYRE, C. B.,  
*Artillery.*

*Bengal Artillery.*

1. No, they restrict the powers of Commanding Officers of Native Corps to a mischievous extent.
2. I think they might be improved by vesting in Commanding Officers the power of punishing all offences deserving of reduction, dismissal, and simple imprisonment, without recourse to Regimental Courts Martial.
3. None.
4. Yes, the same.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

I do not know what those special rules are, but consider that in Native Corps only such offences as are punishable by death, transportation, or long imprisonment and corporal punishment should be dealt with by Courts Martial. All other offences should be disposed of by Commanding Officers.

6.

They are Native Courts Martial in name only, that is, they fine and sentence. They are conducted by European Officers and the proceedings written out in English, the Native Officers signing them as directed. They are as kind as to say, "see how conscientious we are, we allow you to be tried by your cast fellow."

7.

The Articles of War are read to them quarterly.

8.

About  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd of the Golundaz,  $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the Gun Lascars, and a very few of the Drivers.

---



# ARTILLERY.

---

## 3.—ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARDS.

---

### QUESTIONS.

1. In the Artillery, what is  
the system of promotion in force for the Gun Lascars, Golundazes and Drivers? Is it based on merit alone, on seniority alone, or on merit and seniority combined?
  
2. Are the Native Commissioned Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the Golundaz generally intelligent, useful, and efficient?
  
3. Are their acquirements usually of a higher grade than those of the Golundaz from among whom they have risen?
  
4. Is there any test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade, or on promotion from one Commissioned grade to another?
  
5. Do the Golundaz of all grades undergo systematic instruction, in any thing else than ordinary gun Drill? Are they practised at laying guns and mortars; at cutting fuzes; judging distances; adapting charges to mortars, &c., or do the European Officers themselves execute those details?
  
6. Can the Golundaz of the frequently read English, and write it?
  
7. Is it advisable that Native Gunners should be conversant with laboratory work?
  
8. Does the intervention of the Native Commissioned Officer between the European Officer and his men, weaken or strengthen the position and influence of the European Officer?

## QUESTIONS.

**9.** Have the Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers of Golundaz, been found on occasions of mutiny, to evince cordial fidelity, to give timely information, and effectively to aid their European Officers in checking or quelling mutiny? Have the Native Officers passively, or overtly, sided with the mutineers or with the Government they had sworn to serve, and with the European Officers?

**10.** If Native Artillery be continued in should the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be maintained or abolished?

**11.** Would the substitution of such a number of European Non-Commissioned Officers, as would give one to each gun of a Battery in lieu of the Native Commissioned Officers of Golundaz, be advisable?

**12.** If the abolition of the grades of Golundaz Commissioned Officers be advisable, and the prospect of distinction and emolument be thus closed to the Golundaz, would a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions, claimable after specified periods of service, be a compensatory encouragement, and as efficacious as Commissioned grades?

**13.** Have retiring pensions proved effectual in attaching the Golundaz to the British service and the British Rule?

**14.** Do the Drivers and Gun Lascars receive pensions?

**15.** Have the Drivers and Gun Lascars of the Artillery, been found faithful in times of mutiny?

**16.** Should the system of pensions as now in force by Regulation, be maintained, or modified, or prospectively abolished?

**17.** Can you state the charge upon the finances of the on account of Military pensions to the Native Artillery of

**18.** Should not the system of promotion, generally by seniority to the grade of Native Commissioned Officers (if these are retained) be altered and promotion for merit and efficiency be the rule?

QUESTIONS.

**19.** Are Commissioned Officers of Golundaz, generally fit to take part in the conduct of Courts Martial?

**20.** Are Native Commissioned Officers on a par with European Serjeants and Corporals in professional intelligence and efficiency?

**21.** Under the supposition that the Artillery be wholly European, would it be advisable to assimilate it as far as practicable with the Royal Artillery?

**22.** What would this assimilation involve of change in the system of the Artillery?

**23.** What would it involve of change in the material of the Artillery?

**24.** What modifications would it be expedient to maintain in the organization of the Artillery, when assimilating it to the Royal Artillery, in consequence of the nature of the country, climate and service?

**25.** Need the material of the Artillery, if assimilated to that of the Royal Artillery, be at all modified in consequence of climate and service in India?

**26.** Do you advocate the maintenance of Horse Artillery at its present strength?

---

HIS EXCY. GENL. THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief in India.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1.** The system of promotion is believed to be much the same as in the Infantry.

**2.** Some are understood to be efficient, and during the mutiny the Native Batteries have been efficiently worked against us.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. I am not aware that they are ; they have of course had more instructions.
4. I am not aware of there being any.
5. They appear to understand all these things.
6. I believe not often.
7. No, but it would be inconvenient to a battery with no one in it but the Officer who understood laboratory work, therefore do away with the Native Artillery altogether.
8. Answered under the head of Infantry.
9. All arms of the Native Army have been proved (as a rule) faithless, whatever their rank or caste.
10. It would in my opinion make very little difference in the amount of danger to the State arising from Native Artillery whether there were Native Officers or not.
11. Simply throwing away the services of good men.
12. Answered under the head of Infantry.
13. Ditto.
14. Yes.
15. With Native Batteries the Drivers have joined the mutineers, with European Artillery both Gun Lascars and Drivers have done good service in many cases, but they have been a source of anxiety and always were

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

narrowly watched. They knew that the slightest symptom of treachery would inevitably cause their death. It is not desirable that our European Artillery should be hampered by having such men attached to them.

**16.** Answered under the head of Infantry.

**17.** I have no means of knowing.

**18 to 20.** Answered under the head of Infantry.

**21.** Most desirable with one exception. The Bengal Horse Artillery should as at present have every man able to serve as Gunner and Driver and not have as the Royal Artillery, a separate body of drivers unarmed and who are not required to work a gun.

**22.** It would involve an increase of Officers and men (European) and therefore greatly add to our strength.

**23.** It would involve but little change. The Indian pattern ordnance is preferred as being lighter. The Bengal carriage is nearly the same as the Royal carriage.

**24.** The modification expressed in No. 21. It would be desirable also that a few store Lascars and Native artificers (non-combatants) should be attached to each Troop or Battery.

**25.** Answered in reply to No. 23, but the carriages should be made in India of timber properly seasoned.

**26.** It does not appear very excessive. There were nine Europeans and four Native Troops. The old European Troops stand; a Native Troop is still employed and two European Troops have been formed by Volunteers from the Infantry in lieu of the two of the three mutinied Native Troops; twelve Troops are hardly too much for so enormous a country.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

HIS EXCY. LIEUT. GENL. SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras.*

*Madras Army.*

1. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Gun Lascars, Golundaz and Native Drivers.
2. As above.
3. As above.
4. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.
5. The Golundaz have been systematically instructed and practised in all these points, but I am told that with exception of the ordinary Gun Drill, they have evinced little aptitude either to receive or retain the instructions imparted to them.
6. I am informed that many of the Golundaz can both read and write English, but that they are often indisposed to allow it to be known that they possess these acquirments.
7. Certainly not.
8. See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Native Artillery.
9. As above.
10. As above; but I earnestly hope that it has been authoritatively and finally decided to abolish Native Artillery not only in the armies of India, but as well in the Forces of all Native independent (so called) States and Chiefs.
11. See reply as regards Native Infantry on this point, it is equally applicable to Native Artillery.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**12.**

As above.

**13.**

As above.

**14.**

Yes, after 20 years service if unfit for further duty.

**15.**

Neither more nor less so than any other Native Military retainers; the Drivers and Gun Lascars are drawn from precisely the same classes and districts as the Golundaz and Native Infantry, and I conclude are imbued with precisely the same feeling and disposition.

**16.**

See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.

**17.**

As above.

**18.**

See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry.

**19.**

As above.

**20.**

As above.

**21.**

On this point of assimilation, I beg to refer to a Minute\* I recorded at Madras on the 21st of November 1858, and of which I now forward a copy. Assimilation to the extent therein contended for is much to be desired, any closer assimilation is, I think, not called for. The perfect efficiency of the Artillery of the Armies of India never has been doubted, and I imagine it is infinitely more economical than the Royal Artillery. I observe that the Chairman of the Court of Directors announced at the last Addiscombe Examination that the Officers of the Artilleries of India are to be placed on the same organization as the Officers of the Royal Artillery, thus abolishing the ranks of Regimental Major and 1st Lieutenant, and substituting for them the superior grades of Lieutenant Colonel and 2nd Captain; and doubtless this is a boon which cannot fail to be gratefully appreciated by the Artillery of the Indian Armies.

---

\* The Minute referred to is entered at pages 6 to 10 of the 1st part on the Recruiting and Composition of the Artillery.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

22.

The "*system*" of the Madras Artillery corresponds with that of the Royal Artillery, both Horse Artilleries being formed on the "detachment system," and the system of Drill and instruction throughout, is also, I think, the same in both.

23.

A Royal Artillery 24-pounder Howitzer and 9-pounder Gun are each 3 cwt. heavier than the pieces of the same description in use in India, and here and in Bengal the pole is in use instead of shafts as used in the Royal Artillery, and in the Bombay Presidency, the Royal Artillery Gun carriages are also much heavier than those of the Madras pattern. On these and other points, see also the minute of the 21st November 1856.

24.

The present organization of the Madras Artillery would be all that need be desired if an increase were made to the strength of Troops and Companies. If European were substituted for Native Drivers, and if the lamentable paucity of European Officers was rectified, and in every case let us have horses instead of Bullocks with the Field Artillery. In my opinion a Troop of Horse Artillery and a Battery Company of Foot Artillery should consist of the former 100 and the latter 80 Gunners with the prescribed proportion of Bombardiers, Corporals and Sergeants, and let the Establishment of Officers be on a scale to *ensure the presence at all times with each Troop and Battery* of at least one Captain and three Subalterns. Artillery insufficiently officered never can be thoroughly efficient.

25.

I think the present material of the Madras Artillery most suitable to the climate and service in India, and I am of opinion that it would be a mistake with our Light Horses to assimilate it more exactly to that of the Royal Artillery.

26.

There are at present two Troops of Native Horse Artillery in this Presidency, they should be gradually reduced and two Light Field Batteries manned by Europeans, substituted for them.

---

MAJOR GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B.,  
*Secretary to Government, Military Department.*

*Bengal Artillery.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Promotions to the Commissioned grades is made by Government on recommendations sent by the Commandant of Artillery Regiment through the Adjutant General of the Army. The same rules as to seniority and merit apply, as in the Native Infantry. Promotions to the Non-Commissioned ranks are made by Officers Commanding Brigades and Battalions, at the recommendation of Officers Commanding Troops and Companies. No Native Artillery Soldier entertained since 1826 is promoted, who cannot read and write one language at least.
2. Much the same as in the Infantry, I apprehend.
3. I do not know.
4. I do not know.
5. The instruction of the Golundaz nearly approaches that given to the European Artillery—men. I believe Gun Lascars are instructed in the Foot and Sword Drills, also Gun Drill; the use of the gin, drag ropes and general duties connected with ordnance. They are used in magazine, park, laboratory, and ordnance commissariat duties occasionally.
6. I am not able to answer this question.
7. I think not, after the experience of the late mutinies; on this account I would not retain the Golundaz.
8. This must be the same as in the Native Infantry.
9. They have behaved as ill I believe as their comrades in the Native Cavalry and Infantry. But as in these arms so in the Native Artillery, some have remained eminently faithful.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

I would abolish the Commissioned grades if it be possible to avoid detaching parties of Artillery to out posts, such as Arracan, &c.

11.

I think it would, but then detachments with one European Non-Commissioned Officer should be avoided.

12.

They might, I think, be so arranged as to ensure this result.

13.

As in the case of the Native Infantry so with the Native Artillery. I do not consider the late mutinies to furnish any criterion of the effect of retiring pensions on the loyalty of the men. No doubt these are a powerful attraction to all natives to enter the service.

14.

Yes.

15.

No, with some exceptions.

16.

I would abolish pensions prospectively, except for men wounded in action, and the heirs of men killed on service and for cases of peculiar merit.

18.

I would do as proposed for the Native Infantry.

19.

They are on a par with Native Officers of the Infantry.

20.

I have not the means of judging.

21.

Yes, *mutatis mutandis*.

24.

I am not in a position to reply to these questions, nor would my opinion as not being an Artillery Officer be of any weight.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

26.

I think Horsed-Light Field Batteries might be substituted for the Horse Artillery. My opinion is given with great deference, it is founded on the expressed sentiments of some distinguished Officers, Sir Charles Napier and others.

---

MAJOR GENL. SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,

*Commanding Peshawur. Division.*

*Bengal Artillery.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

Seniority alone is a system which has deprived the Commanding Officers of the power to reward the really deserving men and to check the advancements of the indifferent ones, a more fruitful source of evil in the Army cannot well be devised; all emulation and encouragement in the performance of duty was nullified and the link between the European Officer and the Native Soldier so necessary to discipline was here found worse than useless.

2.

The Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers and more particularly the former, having been promoted by seniority, were generally worn out from old age with impaired intellect and energies, they were neither trusted by the Officers nor respected by the men.

3.

No, the acquirements of those who were worn from old age probably stupified with the use of opium or some such drug, were generally of a lower standard than those who were younger in the service.

4.

No.

5.

All Golundaz used to go through a series of instruction at annual practice, but especially on enlistment (before the mutiny) at Meerut. The sooner their instruction is stopped the better, if still continued.

6.

No.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

Most certainly not, although if Native Gunners are to be maintained in spite of our sad experience in the recent mutiny, I do not see how they are to be employed without the knowledge of some laboratory work.

8.

A Native Officer is generally under the seniority system of promotion, a nonentity, but still it is necessary to entrust to him certain duties connected with the discipline of the men and to require them to respect him. The presence therefore of the Native Officer in my opinion certainly tends to weaken the position and influence of the European Officer.

9.

Certainly not, at Bareilly the mutiny was commenced by Bukt Khan, a Subadar, of Captain Kirby's Battery, who having been more intelligent and socially disposed than his brother Native Officers had been treated on all occasions with the greatest kindness by the English Artillery Officers, he had therefore no cause for dissatisfaction, but was still a prime mover in the rebellion. From my own experience, and from the information I have received, I consider that the Native Officers, as a body, have proved more faithless to the Government than any other class. There are perhaps a few exceptions, but how few, I am not aware of a single instance where a Native Officer has afforded real active assistance to the European Officers in quelling mutiny.

10.

Abolished, for if efficient, they are dangerous and mischievous, and if otherwise, they are useless.

11.

I should not recommend it; the character of the European deteriorates when associated with Natives in such limited numbers.

12.

Amplly sufficient.

13.

Certainly not as regards the recent Mutiny. Look at the Native Batteries and Troops at Delhi, Neemuch, Nowgong, Fyzabad and the many it was necessary to disband for safety's sake.

14.

Yes.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

15.

In some cases when under the wholesome influence of European Gunners, as in those Batteries manned by Europeans and driven by Natives.

16.

Considerably modified.

17.

No.

18.

Decidedly.

19.

Certainly not.

20.

They are not to be compared with the European Sergeants.

21.

Yes, as far as the nature of the climate and other local circumstances will permit.

22.

An increase of European Officers (particularly Field Officers) and men. I should think also that the vacancies of all officers withdrawn for Staff employ, should be filled up. It has been quite deplorable to see the inefficient manner in which the Troops and Batteries of the Bengal Artillery have been officered; only a few days ago, there was one Subaltern Officer only with 1 Troop and 2 Batteries of the Peshawur Division of Artillery. I make the same remark as regards the paucity of the men during the latter part of 1857, and the beginning of 1858; the 1st Troop 2nd Brigade Horse Artillery was only able to parade with its Guns without wagons. No. 19 Light Field Battery can now only bring out 4 Guns and wagons, in both cases in consequence of the paucity of men. I could mention numerous other instances to show that the Bengal Artillery is neither efficiently officered nor manned at present. I trust both these glaring deficiencies will be made good.

23.

If by "material" it is intended to mean the present ordnance, Gun carriages, ammunition, &c., I do not see that any change is necessary, although I should hope that the Government will give to the Bengal Artillery all the benefits of new scientific improvements, the introduction

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of which may have been found advantageous to the service after undergoing the usual tests at Woolwich.

**24.**

The present Guns and carriages are certainly more adapted to India than those of the Royal Artillery, which have been recently brought out.

**25.**

No.

**26.**

Yes, I don't think there is a superabundance of Horse Artillery, but it would be advantageous to substitute 9 Pounder for 6 Pounder Guns in more Troops, and I should recommend that all be placed upon the "Detachment" system.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

**1.**

Merit, with consideration shewn to seniority.

**2.**

Generally very much so.

**3.**

Yes, because that got them their promotion.

**4.**

No, general superiority and fitness for command, shown in daily duties; is the qualification for promotion.

**5.**

The Golundaz as a class are only instructed in the Gun Drill, and manual labor of serving and working the guns. The Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers are taught by the Officers to cut fuzes, judge distances, charge shell and shrapnell, &c. &c., and are punished if they do not learn. Sometimes the Golundaz give a helping hand, and if zealous and intelligent, they become instructed, but they are not regularly taught or examined in such matters.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**6.** General Chamberlain can only call to mind one Native Officer who does so, and one Non-Commissioned Officer who is trying to learn. No Golundaz.

**7.** No. We think they should be kept to Gun Drill.

**8.** Strengthens a good Officer, and cannot weaken a bad one.

**9.** There has been no mutiny to test the point.

**10 & 11.** Yes, decidedly we would advocate the retention of Native Officers in this Frontier Force. At present there are two European Non-Commissioned Officers with each battery, and it is the wish of the Commandants to get rid of these two, because they give more trouble than all the rest of the battery. From the want of society even a steady Non-Commissioned Officer takes to drinking. When found incorrigible and broken in health by a course of "delirium tremens," they are removed and replaced by fresh ones who run the same career. A little while ago, one who joined left immediately, saying that if he stayed, he must become a confirmed drunkard. Poor fellows, their case is much to be pitied, for education has provided them with no resources. General Chamberlain got them entirely removed from the Infantry, for the above reason; but the Artillery Commandants were at that time averse from parting with theirs. Now after a longer trial, they wish to be rid of them and General Chamberlain recommends the Natives to be substituted with an additional European Officer, or if that be not approved, that there be six Serjeants in each battery, (as contemplated in the question,) so that they may have a mess and society of their own.

It is almost impossible however to get Native Officers and European Non-Commissioned Officers to work together. The European should not be commanded by the Native as a matter of Policy, nor a respectable Native Officer by a drunken Serjeant as a matter of both policy and justice.

**12.** We think not.

**13.** There has happily been no opportunity of testing it, but in a mutiny, the same result might be expected as in Hindoostan, a few would

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

remain. The majority would take arms against us. Pensions act as anchors no doubt, but only in ordinary weather; they would not hold in a storm such as 1857.

14.

There are none.

15.

There has been no mutiny.

16.

Modified as recommended in answer 12, Bengal Infantry paper No. 3, "Organization, Promotions, and Rewards."

17.

No, but it must be very small, as the force has not been long in existence.

18.

It is so already, and ought so to remain.

19.

Intellectually they were, but the system was a farce. See answer 14, Infantry paper 3, "Organization, Promotions, and Rewards."

20.

See our answer No. 15, in the paper above quoted. A well selected Native Officer is a more intelligent man than the common run of Sergeants who generally have little or no influence with Native soldiers, while Native Officers have a good deal.

21.

See Bengal Artillery paper.

22.

Ditto ditto.

23.

Ditto ditto.

24.

Ditto ditto.

25.

Ditto ditto.

26.

Ditto ditto.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,  
*Commandant-in-Chief on the Frontier.*

*Bombay Army.*

1. Merit and seniority combined.
2. My personal experience dates twenty years back, they were so then; but the fact is, their assimilation with the practice in Bengal has ruined the Native Artillery of Bombay.
3. Yes, generally.
4. No special examination.
5. The Natives are taught every thing. The European Officers of course also execute the details here referred to.
6. No.
7. I would have no Native Gunners, but if there be Native Gunners, they should be taught every thing; suspected servants are the most dangerous of all.
8. The influence of good Native Officers is invaluable.
9. Their conduct has been extremely various.
10. Maintained.
11. No.
12. No.
13. To a limited extent they have so. This seems to me to be a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

very important subject, and I have treated of it in full in replies to questions regarding other arms.

**14.**

The Lascars do, the Drivers do not.

**15.**

Generally so.

**16.**

Modified, as fully set forth in replies to questions respecting other arms.

Pensioners should remain with their regiments.

**17.**

No.

**18.**

Undoubtedly.

**19.**

I believe so.

**20.**

I think so.

**21.**

The Bombay Artillery does not require remodelling. It differs from the Royal Artillery only in respect of such matters wherein the difference of localities render such differences necessary.

**22 & 23.**

I cannot answer these questions with precision sufficient to render the replies of any value.

**24 & 25.**

The principle appears to me to be totally erroneous.

The Bombay Artillery is organized for service in the Bombay Presidency; its peculiarities adapt it to that locality. It cannot be right to break up this order and re-arrange the machinery on a plan adapted to different circumstances.

**26.**

Undoubtedly the Horse Artillery is the most efficient portion of the Corps.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER G. R. BARKER, C. B.,  
*Royal Horse Artillery.*  
*Bengal Army.*

1.

Sir Charles Napier's orders desiring that seniority should never be deviated from, if possible, embraces the whole of these classes. In the Driver Companies it was impossible to adhere to the letter of that order, as the Non-Commissioned Officers would have been useless, and as far as I can ascertain, it has not been done, but merit and seniority were both considered. It was the same in the Golundaz, for Non-Commissioned Officers previous to the order, and the system worked well.

2.

The Non-Commissioned Officers are; after obtaining their Companies their smartness and intelligence degenerates, and their usefulness most certainly.

3.

No.

4.

No; seniority has been almost the sole consideration, misconduct the only bar.

5.

No, they do not pass through the laboratory course as the Europeans do, and the knowledge they acquire in their details in the siege Batteries during the annual practice of the Regiment is but slight, although they always willingly assisted as far as they could.

6.

No.

7.

No.

8.

They are little more than cyphers in their position. Discipline is almost entirely maintained through the medium of smart Non-Commissioned Staff, who make their reports and through whom orders are communicated.

9.

I have only heard of rare instances where they sided with Government, and of more where they gave timely information. The leader of the Delhi rebel army was a Native Officer of Golundaz.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

10.

Abolished.

11.

I do not think the system would work well.

12.

I think so ; there was no Commissioned grades open to the Driver, and yet he seemed satisfied. It would not do now, however, to place Golundaz in respect of Commissions on a footing inferior to the rest of the Native Army, whatever may be the system decided on, because the latter would look upon them as an inferior class, and the service would deteriorate.

13.

It appears not.

14.

Yes.

15.

The Gun Lascars are attached to European Companies only, and have mostly been faithful, and so have the Drivers with Europeans. The most glaring exception I know of, was in No 9 Battery when the Drivers carried the Limbers, when in action, over to the enemy, but the Non-Commissioned Officers remained and are now with the Regiment. The Drivers attached to Golundaz who mutinied have, as far as I can ascertain, sided with them.

16.

Abolished, because it does not seem in any way to have influenced favourably the attachment of the Army to Government.

17.

No answer.

18.

Most certainly.

19.

Their qualifications in this respect are the same as those of Native Officers generally, for an opinion on which, vide reply to question 6th "Rules of discipline and Military Code."

20.

Certainly not, and on Parade they generally look up to the Euro-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

pean Non-Commissioned Officers as their superiors in that respect, which places both in a false position.

**21.**

Yes, if the Royal Artillery remain in India it would be almost impracticable to work well together under dissimilar systems.

**22.**

The principal changes would be, 1st—The adoption of the Detachment system in the Horse Artillery instead of mounting men on the off Horses, which I think very objectionable. 2nd—Mounted Non-Commissioned Officers for Field Batteries, two for each subdivision besides Staff Serjeants, Farrier, Shoeing Smiths and Trumpeters. 3rd—A considerable increase to the number of Gunners for both H. A. and F. B. to render them efficient. 4th—The discontinuance of Native Drivers and of Bullocks for spare wagons. 5th—The introduction of the rank of 2nd Captain into the Bengal Artillery. This latter is most urgently required. I have on several occasions been unable to make use of the Bengal Artillery from the want of Officers through sickness or other causes.

**23.**

Very little change would be desirable in the carriages ; the wood of which the English carriages are made, is not suited to this climate, and not properly seasoned ; but the ammunition used by the R. A. should be introduced into the Bengal Service ; the pattern of the Bengal carriage might to some extent be assimilated to that of the carriages used by Royal Artillery, and the Iron work should be the same, and made in England.

**24.**

The Gunners and Drivers, I think, should be separate ; a small number of gun Lascars might be retained in each Troop and Battery for certain duties during the hot weather. The Native Artificers should be retained also. The changes desirable in Officers and men I have referred to in answer to Question 22.

**25.**

The carriages, as I have said, are made of very well seasoned wood, and well suited to the climate ; the Iron work appears to be bad. The English Harness is of course infinitely superior to that made in India, which is constantly breaking, and can never be depended upon when going over rough or heavy ground.

**26.**

Certainly, but I would recommend a few 9 Pr. Troops.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER D. E. WOOD, C. B.,  
*Royal Horse Artillery.*  
*Commanding at Allahabad.*

*Bengal Army.*

7. Certainly not.
8. Weaken very much.
9. From the information I can procure, I understand that the Golundaz and Gun Lascars were as bad as the Sepoys, with some very few exceptions, in the last mutiny.
10. / Abolished.
11. When the Bengal Artillery is without Golundaz, I presume they would have the same proportion of European Officers and Non-Commissioned-Officers as a Troop or Company of the Royal Artillery.
13. The retiring pensions in the last mutiny appear to have been never considered by the mutinous Troops, and as the Native Artillery was as much tainted as any other Corps, I presume the retiring pensions proved ineffectual in attaching the Golundaz to their Corps.
15. Not in the last mutiny.
18. Seniority coupled with merit should be the rule for promotion in all Corps.
21. There ought to be only one system of Artillery for all India, whether that be Bengal, Madras, or Bombay, or the Royal system. As the Royal Artillery serve in every quarter of the world, and have depots of ordnance stores at the different stations, if the patterns and system of Royal Artillery be adopted in India, the stores at these stations and the manufacturing powers of the Arsenal at Woolwich become available for the service of the Army



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of India. At the siege of Sebastopol all the stations in the Mediterranean, and Canada supplied "Material" for carrying on the siege, all being of one pattern there was no difficulty.

23.

The enlistment of short men to act as Drivers, and placing the Officers five to each Company and Troop, two Captains and three Lieutenants, and a proportion of Lieutenant Colonels and Non-Commissioned Officers according to the strength that it might be considered advisable to keep the Troops and Companies at.

23.

The material of the Bengal Artillery would require but little alteration in the siege Artillery, the new approved of improvements would be introduced as circumstances would permit, as far as applicable to the service in India.

The Field Artillery would require alteration, but not to any considerable extent. The adopting the shafts, and placing pads instead of saddles on the off horses generally in the service. In the Troops of Horse Artillery, the system of mounted detachments instead of mounting the men on the off horses of the Guns and wagons, and relays of fresh horses ridden by the Syces. No bullocks, but horses for all the carriages would be desirable, and much facilitate the movement of the Artillery, and enable the Native Drivers to be dispensed with; the store cart and the forge cart being drawn by bullocks are never up when the Troop or Battery arrives at its camping ground, and the artificers when the work is to be done, have only a few hours of daylight to do it in. The Horse Artillery with Sir E. Lugard's column were much inconvenienced by this in the last campaign.

In the Field Batteries, the Gunners would be required to mount on the limbers and ammunition wagons when wanted to move rapidly into action instead of the off horses; it would be also advisable to horse all the carriages in the Field Batteries. The ammunition boxes of the gun limbers and wagons of the Field Artillery would require altering to carry *more* ammunition. No shells *loaded* to be carried in the boxes.

24.

The employment of Native Grooms and Grass-cutters, Water Carriers, and Natives to clean the Barracks, some Native Artificers to assist the Europeans in shoeing the horses, Collar makers, and Wheelers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

25.

In the Bengal Artillery, the wood of the carriages is excellent, and the Brass 9-pounder Gun is a piece of ordnance better adapted for the service than the 9-pounder Gun in the service of the Royal Artillery. I should recommend, as all the iron work must come from England, that it should come manufactured; the patterns for all carriages being the same, there could be no difficulty in working the wood up to it.

26.

Horse Artillery is essentially necessary for Cavalry, who have no fire of their own; it covers their movements, preserve their flanks, breaches columns, which enables Cavalry to ride them down, is most useful in reserve for the facility with which it moves either to support or attack, and often, by quickly obtaining a good flanking fire, decides an action. In India, it is most freely used with skirmishers; generally commences and finishes an action; is the most efficient Artillery that can be formed, it is a very expensive arm and its strength must depend on the resources available for its support and the amount of Cavalry to be kept for service in India, of which I have no knowledge.

---

BRIGADIER C. BLOOD,

*Commanding Scind Division of the Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

1.

On merit and seniority combined.

2.

They are always promoted for their intelligence.

3.

They are selected for their superior acquirements.

4.

Yes, it is from superior knowledge of their duties that they obtain promotion, which is discovered in frequent examinations.

5.

They are taught theoretically and practically the duties of an Artillerist.

6.

Yes; their qualification is becoming more common from the better opportunities afforded them of learning English at the Regimental Schools.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 7.** If Native Gunners are to be continued in the service, it is necessary they should be conversant with laboratory work.
- 8.** This entirely depends on the character of the Native Officer.
- 9.** The few instances of disaffection in the Bombay Native Artillery during the late mutiny, occurred among the men enlisted in the Bengal Provinces; the Native Officers do not appear to have rendered the assistance to their European Officers that they might have done.
- 10.** I am in favor of their being abolished, I have found them very effective after being promoted to Commissioned Officers.
- 11.** With a full proportion of European Officers, I would prefer Native Non-Commissioned Officers.
- 12.** I am highly in favor of this proposal; the service would be rendered much more efficient, and be rid of many useless and worn out old Native Officers. A graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions, would hold out great inducements and encouragement.
- 13.** Yes, to men enlisted in the Bombay Presidency.
- 14.** Yes, the enlisted Drivers and Gun Lascars receive pensions.
- 15.** Yes, the Gun Lascars have always been true; the Drivers of five Batteries were lately suspected; it is supposed they received the taint through the Post Office, and emissaries for Bengal.
- 16.** If Native Commissioned Officers are discontinued, the pensions must be modified.
- 17.** No.
- 18.** Most decidedly so; it has, as far as I know, been invariably the case in the Bombay Army.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

19.

Certainly not, without a European Officer to superintend the proceedings.

20.

Not as a general rule.

21.

Yes, I am of opinion it would be highly desirable.

22.

I am not acquainted thoroughly with the organization of the Royal Artillery, but I consider the Bombay Artillery to be much under Officered; so much so, as at times to impair the efficiency of this arm of the service.

23.

The material now in use by the Bombay Artillery has been proved by past experience admirably adapted to the requirements of the service; I would recommend as far as practicable, of 9, for 6-pounder Batteries.

24.

Not having served with the Royal Artillery, I do not consider myself competent to pass an opinion.

25.

If assimilated, the Bombay Artillery would, I conclude, require to be modified.

26.

Yes, I do: I do not consider five troops more than sufficient to meet the emergencies of the service.

---

BRIGADIER R. HORSFORD,

*Acting Commandant of Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1.

Seniority when combined with merit, is the system in force as regards the promotion of Native Artillery-men; merit however of a less active than passive character, good conduct, respectability and a sufficient knowledge of their duties being more considered than smartness or peculiar intelligence.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2.

No, as a general rule, the Native Officers are too old by the time they have obtained their Commissions to be useful, efficient or intelligent. There are, and have been however, many exceptions, especially in the horse Artillery.

The average of the Non-Commissioned Officers possess the qualifications referred to.

3.

No.

4.

No professional examination, or test is required.

No Native Soldier entertained since 1826, is promoted, who cannot read and write in one language at least.

5.

They receive systematic instruction in every thing relating to their profession ; no difference in this respect is made between the Natives and European Artillery men ; all the details referred to in this question are involved in the annual practice of the Regiment, which takes place at all the large stations. Whenever it is possible, Native Detachments on out post duty are called in to the nearest station, for the purpose of taking part in this practice.

6.

No, very few indeed can read or write English.

7.

It has hitherto been considered advisable, but for the future assuredly it should not be so.

8.

This depends more on the character of the European Officer himself, who if he is zealous, and takes an interest in his men, will not allow his influence among them to be weakened by the Native Officers. It seems doubtful however whether any European influence can withstand that of a Brahmin Native Officer, among those of his creed ; or of a clever Mahomedan bigot. I wish to be understood that a good European Officer will exercise more influence than a bad one.

9.

In some instances during the recent mutiny, exemplary fidelity has been shown by Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, both in giving timely information of the feeling existing in other regiments, and

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

in their cordial and effective co-operation with their European Officers. But in no one instance of a Native Troop, Battery, or Company of Artillery mutinying, has an Officer or Non-Commissioned Officer given intimation of the men's intentions; on the contrary, they have sided with the mutineers, and there is reason to believe that they have been the most active instigators of the rebellion.

The Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers on furlough at the time of the mutiny, whether belonging to Troops and Companies that have mutinied or remained faithful, have not shown any loyal feeling by rejoining, or reporting themselves to the proper authorities.

10.

Considered as Officers, they have, speaking generally, proved a failure, and as the advantages which they derive from their commissions have not deterred them from taking a part against the Government, I see no reason why such grades should be continued in the Native Army.

I think however Commissions might be given specially for good conduct, and marked fidelity.

11.

The number of European Non-Commissioned Officers proposed by such arrangement, would be insufficient to counteract the working of disaffection among the Natives; and their presence in Troops and Companies in supercession of Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, would cause much dissatisfaction and irritation.

12.

Yes, I think such a system would work well.

If the abolition of the grades of Commissioned Officers be determined on, I do not think it would be advisable to abolish at the same time the institution of the "Order of British India." I recommend that this reward be still held out as an encouragement and inducement to good service, and that the rules be modified to suit such new organization.

13.

The mutiny or disaffection to the British Rule of the greater part of the Native Army proves that such has not been the case.

14.

Yes.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

15.

The Gun Lascars and Drivers attached to European Troops, Batteries and Companies have, as a body, been faithful, and performed their work well. Those attached to Native Troops and Batteries that have mutinied, have gone with them.

16.

If the Native Army be maintained, a system of retiring pensions will, I think, be necessary and advantageous. But the present system should be modified; a certain period of service with good character should, I consider, entitle a Soldier to pension, irrespective of his physical qualifications, and fitness, or otherwise for further service.

17.

No, the regimental records do not afford this information.

18.

I have always been of opinion that it is not desirable that the Native Officers should be *selected* for merit and efficiency, if by such is meant superior intelligence and smartness, to the supercession of *seniority*. This is not a popular view, but I am impressed with the conviction of its policy. If there is a sufficiency of European Officers, these qualifications in Native Officers are not necessary, and I think it impolitic to *select* the cleverest and most intelligent men for situations in which they can work so much mischief, if inclined to do so; should the seniors possess these qualifications, they should of course be promoted.

19.

No; few Native Officers are fitted for such duties.

20.

Certainly not.

21 to 25.

Assimilation in all Field Artillery is most essential, and the principle should, as far as practicable, be introduced in India.

It is a question for grave and mature consideration however, whether such changes as would be involved should take place in the Royal or Bengal Artillery. Both systems possess certain advantages over the other, and it should be for the Government to decide after the most careful enquiry, and collation of the opinions of the most experienced officers of both services in which such advantages consist, and to deter-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

mine how they can most beneficially be amalgamated into a general system.

The subject is one of great importance and involves so many considerations that it is impossible in the limit and scope of these replies to enter into it at length, and to treat it as it deserves.—I would suggest as the best and most favorable means of arriving at a satisfactory conclusion, that a committee of well selected Officers of Her Majesty's and of the Artillery of the three Presidencies be assembled without loss of time to decide on these questions.

The most decided advantage the Royal Artillery possesses over that of Bengal, is its detachment system, on the superiority of which all unite in agreeing. There is no doubt that eventually it will be introduced into the Bengal Artillery, and this is the most important change which the latter will undergo. This system modified in some degree has obtained for years in the Artillery of the other Presidencies.

The experience of the last few months proves that the carriages of the Royal Artillery are unsuited to the climate of this Country, nor was any other result anticipated by those who, from experience, were capable of judging. It will be found necessary therefore, to substitute carriages manufactured in this country for those sent from England. This has already been done in the case of the Royal Artillery at Rawul Pindee, the carriages of which, under the effects of the climate, have been utterly destroyed. The 9 Pounder Gun and 24 Pounder Howitzer of the Royal Artillery will, I think, be found too heavy for the comparatively small, and slight Horses of this Country. These weigh  $13\frac{1}{2}$  Cwt., while the corresponding pieces of the Bengal Artillery are only 10 Cwt. The latter will, I think, under all circumstances of country, climate and service, be considered the most efficient piece; opinions differ considerably as to the comparative advantages of the shaft and pole systems of draught, I am in favor of the latter, and should regret to see the shaft introduced into the Bengal Artillery.

The superiority of the English Harness in leather and workmanship, over that manufactured in this Country, is undoubted.

It is impossible in this form to enter into all the arguments for and against the two systems and organization, or at present to pronounce on the comparative merits of the material and equipments of the two services.

It is a subject, as I have said before, of the greatest importance, and I earnestly recommend that it be given to a Committee to decide upon.

Speaking generally, I think it will be found that the system of the Royal Artillery has decided advantage over that of Bengal, while with certain exceptions, the material of the latter is best adapted to the peculiar nature of the Country, climate, and service.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

26.

Certainly.

I think a reduction of this arm in a Country like India, and for a service eminently requiring rapid movements, where so much depends on the power to follow up, would be most impolitic. Taking into consideration the extent of country over which it is spread, and the probable future amount of Cavalry which will be maintained, the present strength of Horse Artillery is the very best which should be kept up.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILLE,

*Secretary to Government, Bombay.*

*Bombay Army.*

1 to 4.

Answered in the Infantry section.

5.

The Golundaz are instructed in every part of Artillery practice, to the same extent as the European Gunners.

6.

I believe not.

7.

Perhaps not, but Natives of some class must be employed in the laboratory work of the Magazines and Arsenals.

8 to 10.

Answered in the Infantry Section.

11.

I doubt the expediency of any such change.

12 & 13.

Answered in the Infantry Section.

14.

Yes.

15.

There have been no instances to the contrary.

16.

I think it should be maintained.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

In round numbers, sixty thousand Rupees per annum.

18 & 19.

Answered in the Infantry.

20.

In the Artillery, probably they can hardly be so considered.

21.

For Indian service, it would be advisable to assimilate the Royal Artillery with that of India.

22 to 25.

These are questions of professional detail which I am not prepared to answer.

26.

Certainly I do advocate the maintenance of the Horse Artillery, at its present strength *at least*. In the Bombay Army there is no Native Horse Artillery.

---

COLONEL W. M. COGLAN.

*Bombay Army.*

1.

On merit and seniority combined.

2.

They are selected men, and therefore the best; but in the Artillery with a *Field Battery*, a Native Commissioned Officer is useless, he is in *the way*, and there is no knowing what to do with him; an intelligent Native Officer is useful for duty of interior economy with the Company.

3.

Very slightly so.

4.

None.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 5.** They do all, except the cutting of fuzees, and calculating charges, and they would do these if it were not that an European Officer generally prefers to do it himself, rather than to teach them, but nothing is systematically withheld from them.
- 6.** No, very seldom. I am acquainted with only one Native Officer who possesses this qualification.
- 7.** Perhaps not—but there is no lack of knowledge on this subject throughout India in the Native states.
- 8.** I do not believe it has any effect one way or the other. A good Native Officer is useful, an indifferent one is not consulted.
- 9.** I have had no experience on this subject. In the Bombay Golundaz the Native Commissioned Officers have generally been well selected.
- 10.** To abolish them would lower the inducement to enlist in the Corps, but the number might be reduced.
- 11.** It would be an excellent arrangement to appoint a European Non-Commissioned Officer to each sub-Division of the Battery, but he should have nothing to do with the Company. These six Non-Commissioned Officers and the Sergeant Major of them, 7 in all, would make a Battery very efficient, they should be mounted and attend all parades.
- 12.** I think it would not. The Commissioned grades, though not of much use, can hardly be dispensed with. Men look forward to a Commission, and the prospect is an incentive to good behaviour.
- 13.** Certainly not in all cases.
- 14.** They do.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

15.

They have.

16.

It might be modified with advantage!

17.

I cannot.

18.

The system of promotion "generally by seniority" to the grade of Native Officer is not the rule; we profess to advance our men through the Non-Commissioned grades by merit and efficiency.

19.

As fit as Native Officers of other Arms.

20.

I think they are not.

21.

Certainly on any points in which the superiority of the Royal Artillery is evident and can be agreed on, but that will be the question; and the Artillery Corps of India have a claim to be heard: it may be, that on some points the Royal Artillery might with advantage assimilate to the Indian Artillery. Perfect uniformity, even amongst the Indian Corps, is not attainable.

22.

It would involve a large increase in the number of Officers; some increase is necessary; it would also involve an increase in the number of Companies per Battalion, which is not to be desired. Four, or utmost five Companies per Battalion, are sufficient.

23.

None except the substitution of poles for shafts. The Royal Artillery have changed twice or three times. The Bombay Artillery has always preferred shafts for Field Gun Horses. The 9 Pr. Field piece and 24 Pr. Howitzer weighing  $13\frac{1}{2}$  cwts are too heavy for Indian service, they have been complained of even for English Roads and Woolwich Common, and a 9 Pr. Field piece of 10 Cwts. was proposed some years ago as a new invention. It was almost identical with the 9 Pr. which had been used in India for 20 years previously.

24.

None occur to me. I believe the system of the Bombay Horse

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

and Foot Artillery is already, in all material points, the same as that of the Royal Artillery; the differences are minor.

**25.**

Some important modifications would be necessary to complete and perfect the assimilation.

The Bombay Artillery has now a Battalion of four Companies and Batteries of Europeans without any establishment of Officers: it is Officered by the other Battalions who have not enough Officers for their own men.

**26.**

For all Indian purposes, a well appointed, efficient Field Battery, is quite as serviceable as a Troop of Horse, and at about half the expense. But the field Batteries require a better description of Horse than those now allowed. Rs 350 will not purchase a serviceable Gun Horse.

---

COLONEL G. HUTT,

*Bombay Artillery.*

*Bombay Army.*

**1.**

For the first two steps, those of Lance Naique, and Naique, merit only, after that, are merit and seniority combined.

**2.**

As a general rule, decidedly so; some few are very intelligent and efficient men.

**3.**

Decidedly so, or they could not have gained their Commission. I cannot exactly state what is the present practice, but when I was with them no man was promoted to Jemadar till thoroughly efficient in all his parade duties, and capable of passing an examination in the common rules of practical gunnery.

**4.**

No man was promoted to Naique unless able to read and write his own language; Havildar, till he knew the English figures, the system of packing, the use of the tangent scale, and was able to

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

take command of a Gun on Parade; and to Jemadar, as above stated in reply 3.

5.

Every care was taken to instruct them in *all* the practical duties of their profession; many attained to great efficiency; several kept regular practice tables in their own hand.

6.

Very few. There were several among the Lascars, but they have been mostly handed over to the Royal Artillery.

7.

A knowledge of the Laboratory and Repository exercise is valuable. No Gunner is complete without it. I see no good in entrusting men by halves, with us it always formed part of the course.

8.

It is different to answer this question in general terms, so much must depend on individual character. In most instances that I have seen, the Native Officer was a very great support and assistance, whenever it was otherwise, "caste" was at the bottom of the mischief, and then the sooner the Native Officer is removed the better. I have marched a Battery many, many hundreds of miles, and taken it into action without a single European Officer.

9.

In the only two instances in which any thing like mutiny occurred with us, the senior Native Officers both behaved most honorably, and evinced a cordial fidelity, aiding the European Commanding Officer by every means in their power.

Two Jemadars at Shikarpore did not seem to me to render us true cordial support to the extent that I considered their duty. I strongly recommended their dismissal, but my judgment was overruled, and they were rewarded instead.

In one instance only, has a Native Officer in any way sided with Mutiny, he was a Brahmin, and promptly hung at Hyderabad.

10.

I am strongly in favor of continuing them.

11.

Decidedly not. Europeans attached to Native Corps are in a great measure unavoidably removed from many of the restraints of discipline, and too frequently go to ruin; it is with difficulty we get men suited to

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

fill the situation of Battery Staff Sergeant with Natives. I have seen many good European Non-Commissioned Officers ruined by being sent to native Corps.

12.

I do not think the system of good service pay work well; the great difficulty to contend with in Natives are their negative faults, many a worthless man enjoys good service pay because he has committed no overt act of irregularity. A man under this system lives through a certain number of years doing as little as possible, at the end of which time he asserts a right, claim, or *huk* to an additional rupee, which I hold to be most mischievous. I greatly doubt the advisability of raising the scale of pension.

13.

It is the fashion to allude to the pension list as a most powerful motive in attaching the natives to our service. I myself believe that they are such children of impulse, and live so entirely for the present moment that the influence of the prospective advantage of the pension list is greatly over-rated. I have far greater faith in the power of discipline in the hands of an energetic Commanding Officer, invested with proper power.

14.

Yes.

15.

*Invariably*, under the most trying circumstances.

16.

As far as I am capable of judging, I would not alter it.

17.

59,988-9-6 per annum, or 4,999-0-9 per month.

18.

The system in the Bombay Artillery has always been to give Commissions, to merit only. I cannot conceive any thing more mischievous than allowing mere longevity to entitle a man to promotion. I consider the admission of any right, (*huk*) except that of monthly pay, to be subversive of discipline in a Native Corps.

19.

As a general rule, quite so.

20.

As a general rule, they are so.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

21.

Our great defect is want of Officers, in which respect we ought to be assimilated; in others, the differences are not great, and where they do exist, I believe them to be in our favor.

22.

Our system is almost identical with that of the Royal Artillery, the differences being those climate and local circumstances render necessary. Our contract system has great advantages; it is economical to the State, it inculcates habits of self-reliance in the Commander, and compels an intimate and minute knowledge of every component part of his Troop or Battery.

23.

There is a difference in the build of their carriages, the method of packing ammunition and small stores, and the weight of the guns; assimilation of material would involve an enormous outlay to no advantage. I think our carriages are superior.

24.

I would make no alteration in the Bombay Artillery beyond that of increasing the number of Officers: at present many of our Batteries have only one Subaltern and one Captain present, the contrast in this respect is painful, and the supercession cruel.

25.

Our material, as it at present exists, is the result of long trial and experience, it works very well, and I doubt very much if it could be changed, to advantage.

26.

Horse Artillery in India have too often been thrown away by being made to do the duty of Foot Batteries, and hence disappointment. I do not think four Troops too much for the Bombay army, and if maintained at all, their present establishment is not too great.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL E. W. C. SCOTT,

*Inspector General of Ordnance.*

*Bengal Army.*

1.

Seniority alone, except in cases of decidedly bad character.

2.

No.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 3.** No.
- 4.** No.
- 5.** They are instructed in the Drill of all Ordnance, siege and field, and the Non-Commissioned Officers practised in laying Guns.  
The European Officers always direct the details, such as cutting and setting Fuzes, in many cases executing them.
- 6.** No.
- 7.** I do not think it of much importance; it is not the mere knowledge that would make them dangerous to us.
- 8.** Ordinarily it has little effect either way.
- 9.** I have not had any intercourse with the Officers who were present with mutinous Companies, and cannot therefore speak with confidence, but my impression is, that the Native Officers sided with the mutineers.
- 10.** Abolished.
- 11.** I think this sort of amalgamation unsatisfactory.
- 12.** More so, if seniority continues the principle of promotion.
- 13.** It was thought so before the mutiny.
- 14.** More so than Golundaz, but I attribute this to the fact, that in most of these cases Europeans constituted the Artillerymen.
- 16.** Retained with modifications.
- 17.** No.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18. Yes.
19. No.
20. No.
21. I think it very important that all the Artillery should be assimilated, the Royal Artillery with certain modifications being the basis of assimilation.
22. The abolition of the Bengal Horse Artillery system, and alterations in the strength and constitution of Troops and Companies.
23. In the Ordnance, a change in the 9-pounder Guns from 10 Cwt. to 13 Cwt. Two Howitzers per Field Batteries instead of one, shafts instead of poles for draft. A difference in the description and number of carts attached, in the fittings of ammunition boxes, and minor changes in the small stores and equipments.
24. I would retain and lighten 9-pounder ordnance, and generally lighten the details of equipment as far as possible, so as to adapt the draft to a lighter description of horses.
25. The carriages ought to be constructed in this country as at present.
26. I think the proportion of Horse Artillery in India is too large in proportion to the Field Batteries; it constitutes  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd of the regiment, instead of about  $\frac{1}{4}$ th or  $\frac{1}{5}$ th.
-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BREVET COLONEL H. TOMBS C. B.,  
*Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1. I believe on seniority alone, provided there is nothing against the character of the senior.

2. The Native Commissioned Officers whom I have met, were generally old, worn out, decrepid men, utterly unfit for their position on active service; the Non-Commissioned ranks are on an average an efficient and intelligent body.

3. No, this could hardly be the case where a system of promoting by seniority prevails.

4. Not that I am aware of.

5. The Golundaz, during the season of annual practice underwent the same instructions as afforded to Europeans; all the particulars contained in the question are comprehended in the course of practice.

6. I have never seen or heard of one who could.

7. No.

8 to 10. I prefer leaving these questions unanswered to making replies founded on conjecture, not experience.

11. Wholly unadvisable; the European element would be too small to prevent sedition and conspiracy amongst the Natives, whilst the presence of European Serjeants in the position indicated, would destroy all spirit of emulation and pride in there profession amongst the Golundaz.

12&13. I would prefer leaving these two questions unanswered, for the reason given on opposite side.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**14.**

Yes.

**15.**

Generally so, I believe there is no instances of the latter class having joined the rebellion, except when attached to Troops of Native Artillery and Golundaz Companies, and in these cases the Lascars could hardly help themselves.

**19.**

I would maintain the system of pensions to all fighting men as at present; but should think a system of gratuities on discharge after a certain number of years' service would be preferable for non-combatants, Syces, Grass-cutters, &c. &c.

**17.**

No, I cannot.

**18.**

Decidedly.

**19.**

No, they are generally unfit.

**20.**

Certainly not.

**21.**

This question, and those which follow, involve such extensive organic changes that a satisfactory answer to them is hardly possible in the limited space allotted. Assimilation of all Field Artillery employed in India is urgently needed, but whether the greatest change should be made in the Royal or Bengal system is a question which can only be decided by a special Committee of Officers of both services, the assembly of which, at as early opportunity as possible, I urgently impress, on the Government.

**22 & 23.**

One of the first points to be considered is the advantage of the Detachment or Royal system over that of Bengal, which carries its Gunners on the off horses; and of the superiority of the former over the latter, few Officers will be found to doubt; at the same time few Officers would be found who could, at such a time conscientiously recommend the total overthrow of a system which has been found to work well on service, and to substitute for it another requiring great time, great care, and knowledge of the drill to perfect.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

24.

I think the Royal Artillery should at once be furnished with Gun carriages of the Bengal pattern, and that, with reference to the size and weight of the horses procurable in India, their shafts should give way to our pole draught, and their 9-pounder Gun of 13½ Cwt. to ours of 10 Cwt. The Royal Artillery have also, I believe, two different carriages in use with their 9 and 6-pounders; whereas in Bengal there is only one for both pieces, and surely this is a great desideratum.

25.

I do not think it would be wise to reduce the Horse Artillery, taking into consideration its great motive powers, the extent of country over which it is scattered, and the amount of European Cavalry likely to be kept up in India.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,

*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Hyderabad Contingent Artillery.*

1.

On merit alone.

2.

They are a very intelligent class of Natives; the Native Commissioned Officers especially, are very superior men.

3.

As there are but few Native Officers in each Company, those selected for promotion are men of higher acquirements, and greater intelligence than the others.

4.

No. The Officer Commanding the Company is able to judge of their efficiency from daily observation of the manner in which they perform their duties.

5.

The Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers only, are practised at laying Guns and mortars, at cutting fuzes, and judging distances. The charges adapted to mortars are executed by the European Officers and the Warrant Officers of the Company.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

6. No, they cannot.
7. No.
8. No reply required.
9. The Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers of the 4th Company Artillery, which was at Aurungabad last year during the mutiny, did not give information of it; and among the executions for that mutiny a Havildar was shot; a Golundaz was also transported. The Commandant of that Company had also reason to doubt the fidelity of the Jemadar.
10. If the Native Artillery be continued, the Native Commissioned Officers should be maintained.
11. I believe that the introduction of so few Europeans to a Company of Artillery as would give one to each Gun of a Battery would be unadvisable; for in the event of a mutiny, this small number of Europeans could not defend themselves against a whole Company of Natives. They would probably be cut to pieces before assistance could reach them.
12. I would not recommend the graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions to the Non-Commissioned grades; as this proposal would not, I think, gain for the Artillery such intelligent men as at present.
13. They appear to have done so hitherto, in this Contingent.
14. The Gun Lascars and Drivers do receive pensions.
15. Their fidelity under such circumstances would be very doubtful.
16. I believe that pensions are essential for preserving the fidelity of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the Army, as the only reward for old and worn out men, and the only thing they have to look for if they serve the Government faithfully.

17. I am unable to provide this information.

18. I have replied to this in para. 1.

19. Yes, they are.

20. Most certainly not.

21 to 26. No replies required.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Bengal Army.*

1. Formerly seniority alone. Latterly seniority tempered by merit. But unless character was decidedly bad, seniority prevailed.

2. Their intellect was originally average, but they reached posts of responsibility when their efficiency was gone.

3. No.

4. None.

5. Yes, they went through the whole Laboratory course, and no Gunners could have been more perfectly instructed in practical gunnery.

6. Very few; perhaps one or two in a Troop.

7. Certainly not. It has proved a great evil in the present mutiny; they should be confined to Gun drill.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

8.

Where the European Officer is efficient, the Native Officer strengthens him, and *vice versa*.

9.

We believe they have generally sided with the Mutineers. Bukht Khan aspired to be Captain General of India, and asked the King of Delhie for a patent making the office hereditary.

10 &amp; 11.

On the point involved in these two questions we are not agreed, Brigadier General Chamberlain having advocated either Native Christians, or low cast Natives for the few Native Artillery required. Is very decidedly opposed to giving them any Commissioned Officers of their own class. He would let none of them rise higher than a Havildar Major, and leave all command in the hands of the European Officers, and European Sergeants. In the Native Infantry 900 men are associated in one body. There are not Native Christians enough in the country to fill the ranks; perhaps not enough low caste men even, available. But if there were, it would not be sound policy to refuse employment to that large class of high caste Natives who live by either Military service or highway robbery; and when such masses of men are brought together, hope, as well as fear, is necessary to restrain them, and if the Native grade were withdrawn, discontent would follow. For this reason, General Chamberlain advocated Commissioned grades for the Native Infantry. But the case is different in the Artillery. Here very few men are required, but those few possess the control of the most effective weapons of war. Let these natives then be taken from those classes which have no traditions of empire, and let them be kept in the ranks and Non-Commissioned Grades. They will be content with plenty of bread and little power, and will look upon the European Sergeants and Officers as their natural leaders. They will know that but for us they would have been in menial offices, and that if we lost the country, they would sink to those offices again. Old Native Officers are fond of telling of the golden days, when a chamar, or low caste man, dare not wear his dhootee like a Brahmin or a Rajpoot. But the equality they deplored, has not been thrown away upon the humbler classes.

Throughout the mutiny our low caste servants have, as a rule, shown singular fidelity. The passive courage of the Drivers, Syces, and Doolee bearers, under fire, is well established; and General Chamberlain would advocate making gunners of the best of them, and placing European Non-commissioned Officers over them, as proposed in question 11, to keep them from aspiring.

Lieutenant Colonel Edwardes differs from the above opinions, and thinks that as every class has an inherent right to rise by merit, and our



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

whole system tends to foster that right, in contradistinction to the Indian system of caste, the surest way to keep any class contented and efficient is to give fair scope to its energies. He would therefore leave it to be a pure question of merit. If among the Native Christian or low caste Non-commissioned Officers there were men fit for the Commissioned grades they should get them. If not, let Europeans take the places. It is to be hoped that it will be quite exceptional to have any guns manned by Natives at all, and in those few cases Lieutenant Colonel Edwardes believes that the Native Gunners would be less liable to sympathize with Mutiny if admitted to the Commissioned grades, than if they were excluded.

Sir John Lawrence concurs with Lieutenant Colonel Edwardes, and thinks that if a low caste man will prove faithful in the Non-commissioned grades, he will be still more to be depended on in the higher ones. Having obtained the higher reward of a Commission, he will have a strong inducement to continue to deserve it.

The late Colonel Skinner used to say, that the best and bravest native Officer he had known in his Regiment was a Rissaldar by name Peer Khan, who had been a Syce, (groom) and who would never have been enlisted, but that a Trooper was killed at a time when no eligible Recruit was available. Ambition, and the desire of improving the social position is as strong in the low, as in the high caste man. The difference is, that the one too often considers advancement as his right, and the other, as the reward of desert, or at any rate, as due to the favour of his European Superior.

11.

Answered above.

12.

Those who advocate the abolition of the Native Non-Commissioned grades, think good service pay and Pensions on a graduated scale would satisfy the ambition of the classes for whom only it is proposed, viz., the Native Christians and lowest caste Natives, who have hitherto not been eligible at all to be either Non-Commissioned Officers or Gunners. The Gun Lascars and Drivers had little to look forward to, except pay and pensions after long service, and in all European Batteries they remained true; while the whole of the Native Artillery to whom the prizes of the service were open, turned their Guns against us.

On the other hand, those who advocate keeping the Commissioned grades, believe that pay cannot effectually be substituted for honor and authority, in any military service.

13.

No. They seem to have had little or no effect.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

The high caste Artillerymen played for something higher than pensions. They claimed to possess the country.

14.

Yes. See pay and Audit Code.

15.

Only when associated with Europeans. In the Native Batteries and Troops, they went with the Artillery men. So did the Syces and Grass-cutters.

16.

Modified by a competent Committee. (See reply No. 12. in Bengal Infantry Paper No. 3, on "Organization, Promotions, and Rewards.")

17.

No.

18.

Certainly.

19.

Not more so than those of the Native Cavalry and Infantry. (See reply No. 14, Infantry Bengal Paper 3, on "Organization, Promotions, and Rewards.")

The Native members were old and sleepy, and left the evidence, the Judgment, and the Sentence, pretty much to the Superintending Officer. When asked their opinion, they said "*whatever your honor pleases.*"

20.

Under the seniority system they were not; under the merit system, they would be.

21.

We have already said that we would retain Native Drivers, as more economical; and we think the same as to Gun Lascars and Native Artificers, who would also be far more efficient in India than Europeans. After a fatiguing march an Englishman cannot be expected to set to work in the heat of the day to repair damages, but unless the damages were repaired during the day, the Troop often would have to halt.

Especial care should in future be taken to keep the complement of Artillerymen full, not only in Troops and Batteries, but reserve Companies, and there should never be less than 3 Officers present with the Troop, besides the Medical Officer.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

22.

If entirely assimilated, there would be a large addition of both men and Officers, and consequently of expense.

23.

Additional Horses, Wagons and Carts, and of course Syces and Grass-cutters in consequence.

24.

Our present pieces and carriages, Native Drivers, Gun Lascars, Native Artizans, Forge, &c. (See answer No. 21.)

25.

English Guns and carriages are alike too heavy for Indian horses, roads, and no roads.

The wood of the English carriages is too unseasoned for this country. Our 9 Pr. Guns and 24 Pr. Howitzers are found to be the most serviceable pieces.

26.

Horse Artillery being intended to act with Cavalry should be proportioned to the Cavalry force. We think too much Horse Artillery has been hitherto kept up.\* There is a tendency to sacrifice the Foot Artillery and Horse Batteries to this dashing branch of the service, especially in the numbers of the Officers attached to them, and after all, the Batteries are more effective in the field.

---

MAJOR G. ROWLANDSON,

*Director Artillery Depôt of Instruction.*

*Acting Superintendent Gun Powder Manufactory.*

*Madras Artillery.*

1.

Sometimes on seniority, sometimes on merit; selections recommended on the grounds of superior qualifications have been disapproved of, at other times, such selections have been adopted, as per pages 108 and 109 of the general regulations of the army, if acted up to, which they are not, and it is difficult to affirm that any precise principle guides the selection of candidates for promotion.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2. Yes generally, where a due regard to personal qualifications in combination with claims of seniority, have been paid to the selection.
3. Yes, in some degree, resulting from diligence in acquiring a knowledge of their duties.
4. An examination is required by the Regulations, but it is doubtful if this important duty receives the attention it deserves.
5. Yes, in every thing that European Artillery are taught, or their Officers.
6. No, the cases are rare, but more frequent than formerly.
7. It is a very doubtful expedient to employ Artillery; ignorant and unskilled in their work, if the Officers are put *hors-de-combat*, and the subordinates thus deprived of the power of action, it is a sham, not a real Artillery Service. The service should be European and effective in instruction, and power of action under all contingencies.
8. The value of the Native Commissioned Officer depends essentially on the character and qualifications of his European superior. If the latter knows his duty and does it, and is competent to communicate freely with every man under his command, the Native Officer falls into a position of great value and importance; but his power for mischief is in direct ratio to the weakness of his own European superior.
9. Yes; invariably, in every instance as regards Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers they have behaved well.
10. If European Officers were adequately available, the Native Officers could be dispensed with, as regards the discipline and duty; but grave considerations affecting the animus of a Native Force, deprived of the stimulus of hope and expectation, afforded by a commission in prospect, seem to preclude their abolition.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

11.

European Non-Commissioned Officers never could be substituted for Native Officers in the peculiar relation which the latter occupy between the European Officer and his men, or in the bearing of the office on their prospects in life; but as regards efficiency, the experience of our Native Horse Artillery, in which a European Non-Commissioned Officer is attached to each division of Guns, proves beyond question, the important influence of a judiciously selected European, in the whole tone and spirit, and energy in which duty is done; but to have his full value off parade, as well as on, he should be required to know the language, and be retained a long period in the Office.

12.

Good service pay and pensions might operate on the mind of an old worn out soldier on his last legs; but the ambition and spirit of younger Soldiers would be chilled by the withdrawal of the hope of a Commission, which the far distant idea of Pension at the end, would never compensate. Human nature is the same in us all, and the best guide to their feelings is by consulting those general and common to the race, and I conceive that now to discontinue the Commission to native Officers would be a fatal error, however wise it might have been in an original organization.

13.

The Pension prospect is most highly valued, and must have commensurate influence on their loyalty, and the Pension to heirs I have known in numerous instances, more highly valued than their own life.

14.

Most certainly, every man that goes under fire and is exposed to equal risks, should have equal privileges and inducements to fidelity and devotion.

15.

Yes, I am aware of no exception.

16.

I believe a more fatal error could not be made, than to alter, even to improve, much less reduce, the pensions; for the Native Army is no more than a mercenary Army, and have no other motives for serving us than those which self interest supply. To cut off pensions would cut the first thread of the tie between us.

17.

I am not aware, it is a question of finance not open to unofficial Officers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18.

The true principle is, combination of claims by seniority, with personal character and qualifications; this is secured by the discriminating selection of the most competent men for the first grade of promotion from the ranks, and their gradual rise by progressive merit, to be tested by examination and sustained character for each successive grade; which system, as admirably laid down in the Madras General regulations, would provide a body of Non-Commissioned Officers, from whom the rank of Native Officers, would without difficulty be supplied, and with effective and useful men, most likely to do good service, and to be attached to it.

19.

Quite as fit as any others, but this has been replied to before in answer to question 6 section 2.

20.

As a class I should say they are so.

21.

The Royal organization of Batteries in the number of Officers, Men, and Horses is highly efficient, possibly even excessive; but the Madras are *painfully defective*; in these respects assimilation is most desirable, indeed *essential to equal efficiency*.

22.

The Royal organization, as an Artillery, is divided into three distinct divisions, Siege Artillery, Horse Artillery, and Horse Batteries, which are not confounded but retained each in its own special service: with the Madras Artillery, we have Horse Artillery and Foot Artillery: All are taught all duties of heavy and field Guns, capable of yielding efficient service to the State in any contingency. For Indian service the latter is undoubtedly the most suitable and most economical and tends to the enlargement of the experience and value of both Officers and men: the adoption of the Royal system therefore, would obviously involve very extensive alterations, and I believe would not improve the Arm for general service in India when effected.

23.

The Material of the Royal and Madras Artilleries vary only in minor details of pattern, both are efficient, each probably better than the other in some respects. There are Officers of character and experience of the Royal Artillery whose Batteries are equipped with Madras Material, and would be sorry to relinquish them again for the Royal. I believe there are few, if one, Madras Captain who would choose a Royal in pre-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ference to the Madras, but this may be due to some natural prejudice and *Esprit-de-Corps*, but it is not a point of real difficulty.

24.

The experience of a century has led us gradually to the adoption of the best system for Indian service, the abandonment of which, for the inexperience and peculiarities of an European Service, seems most undesirable: to put our Batteries on an effective footing as regards, "personel," and leave us to follow the existing system of Service in India and the Royal Batteries to conform to it in India, as we should to theirs in Europe, seems the only sound principle of assimilation open to us in this respect.

25.

Certain advantages of construction in our carriages adapted to the size, strength and character of the Horses obtainable in India, and the peculiar country we have to travel over, calculated to spare both cattle and carriages, and facilitate marching and manœuvring, could be relinquished only at a most serious sacrifice of efficiency. These points are as valuable to the Royal as to our own Batteries, and therefore no sufficient reasons can exist for their disturbance. With these exceptions and a few others of special consideration, no difficulties impede a sufficient assimilation for all practical purposes.

26.

I consider six Troops, as at present existing, the least that should be maintained for the Madras Army; after an experience of thirty years Regimental duty with Horse and Foot Artillery (the first fifteen thereof with the latter), I am clear in my judgment that to confound the object, nature and duties of a Horse Artillery Troop, and a Horse Battery is a profound mistake.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

1.

One general system pervades the Bombay Army as regards the Native promotions, viz. merit and seniority combined.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2. Very much so indeed: many of the Native Officers are highly efficient.
3. Yes, consequent on their being selected from among the Golundaz.
4. I believe not.
5. The Golundaz are taught every thing, including laboratory exercises.
6. Not frequently.
7. Certainly, if Native Artillery is to be maintained.
8. It strengthens the influence of the European Officer, especially if the Native Officers be men of character; because notwithstanding their position, the British Officer is still the judge between them; the dispenser of justice, honor and rewards.
9. Two Companies of Golundaz were supposed to be disaffected. In one company at Shikarpore 8 men mutinied and seized 2 Guns. They were driven from the Guns by the remainder of the Company, some of the 16th Native Infantry and the Police, and were all killed. The company at Hyderabad was suspected. The Subadar warned his Officer; the men were disarmed and the Guns taken from them. A Jemadar of Golundaz and a Havildar of Drivers were executed. The other Native Officers of the two Companies sided with the European Officers.
10. The Native Officers in this event should be maintained.
11. I am of opinion that this would not answer.
12. Certainly not.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

13.

They exercise a powerful influence undoubtedly, but have not proved effectual, as events have proved.

14.

Yes.

15.

Yes, generally so. I think the exception is the Havildar of Drivers (a Hindoostanee), who was executed at Hyderabad in Scinde.

16.

Maintained, but a modification may be necessary, certainly not abolished.

17.

No, I cannot.

18.

Promotion for merit and efficiency, combining with seniority, is the rule in the Bombay Presidency, so that alteration is not required.

19.

Quite so.

20.

Yes, I think so.

21.

As far as practicable, yes, but in many respects the assimilation would be injudicious; for the system of the Royal Artillery is far from perfect. I think much good would ensue were the best parts of the two systems combined.

22.

Points of equipment, of manœuvre and minor arrangements which, as an Infantry Officer, I am hardly competent to detail.

23.

Guns and carriages of all kinds. There is much difference in this respect between the Royal and Bombay Artillery.

24.

There are scientific points connected with this question which I am not competent fully to answer.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

25.

The answer above given must apply to this question also.

26.

Yes, as applied to the four Troops of this Presidency. It is an admirable School for Artillery Officers and men, and on it is formed the efficiency of the Field Batteries.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT. GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Bombay.*

*Bombay Army.*

1.

One general system pervades the Bombay Army as regards the Native promotions, viz. merit and seniority combined.

2.

Very much so indeed, many of the Native Officers are highly efficient.

3.

Yes, consequent on their being selected from among the Golundaz.

4.

I believe not.

5.

The Golundaz are taught every thing, including laboratory exercises.

6.

Not frequently.

7.

No.

8.

It strengthens the influence of the European Officer, especially if the Native Officers be men of character, because notwithstanding their position, the British Officer is still the judge between them, the dispenser of justice, honor, and rewards.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9.

On the occasion of the mutiny at Hyderabad, the Native Officers gave the information by which it was frustrated.

10.

Gradually abolished.

11.

I am altogether adverse to any Native Artillery.

12.

Answered as above.

13.

I cannot say; the Golundaz of the Bombay Army have not generally been unfaithful.

14.

Yes.

15.

With one exception.

16.

As long as the Golundaz are retained, the pensions should continue.

17.

No, I cannot.

18.

Promotion by merit.

19.

Quite so.

20.

They are not deficient in intelligence.

21.

Most certainly in every respect.

22.

Very little.

23.

Yes.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

24. The organization need not be altered.
25. I think not.
26. Most certainly.

---

COLONEL V. EYRE, C. B.,  
*Artillery.*  
*Bengal Army.*

1. On seniority alone.
2. They are for the greater part intelligent and efficient men. In regard to usefulness, the Native Commissioned Officers only stand in the way of the Non-Commissioned Officers.
3. Their acquirements are only greater in respect to their more perfect knowledge of their duties, obtained after a long service, and as Non-Commissioned Officers being called on to perform more responsible duties and in closer communication with their Commanding Officer.
4. None, further than to be able to read and write and bear a good character, and possess a good knowledge of duties, &c.
5. They undergo the same course of laboratory instruction as the Europeans, excepting the several ingredients of compositions, their proportions, and the mixing of them, and generally all parts involving calculation. They are instructed in all drills and exercises the same as the European Artillery. Those attached to field Batteries can lay guns and cut fuzes by rote. The laying of siege guns and mortars, and their charges is always directed by the European Officer.
6. No.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

7.

No, nothing beyond the mechanical operations, such as making cases and filling them, &c.

8.

The Native Officer conducts the whole interior economy of a Company; nothing transpires in it that he is not made aware of, either by direct report or privately. His influence is sufficiently powerful to prevent any report going further, and in this respect it is doubtlessly too often exercised to weaken the position of the European Officer.

9.

Some have passively, others overtly, sided with the mutineers in the present disaffection of the Native Army.

10.

Totally abolished.

11.

I am in favor of replacing the Native Officers by Europeans, and consider three to a Battery sufficient; but those should be Warrant Officers and mounted.

12.

I should say they would, since the majority would benefit thereby.

13.

I have invariably heard the subject of Pensions spoken of in terms of the greatest admiration and gratitude.

14.

Yes.

15.

They have followed the Golundaz that were with them, and those with Europeans remained faithful.

16.

Maintained.

17.

No.

18.

See reply to No 1 of this part.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**19.**

No, they are carried through it by the Superintendent, and Interpreter, and Judge Advocate (if a general Court Martial.) No Native should have judiciary power.

**20.**

No, they are far behind.

**21 to 26.**

These questions can only be satisfactorily solved by a commission of Royal Artillery and Bengal Artillery Officers combined.

---

# ARTILLERY.

---

## 4.—EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

---

### QUESTIONS.

- 1.** Within your experience have the powers of the Commandants of Native Battalions of Artillery, and of Officers in command of Golundaz Batteries of Artillery been increased or diminished ?
  
  - 2.** What has been the result upon the discipline of the Golundaz of the Artillery ?
  
  - 3.** If Golundaz Artillery is continued, what measures can you suggest for the improvement of discipline, and the confirmation of the influence and authority of the European Officers ?
  
  - 4.** Is the efficiency of the                    Corps of Artillery, affected by the number of Officers taken away from Corps duties, for Staff employment ?
  
  - 5.** How can the demand for European Officers of Artillery for Staff and detached employments be best provided for, without injuring the efficiency of the Corps of Artillery ?
  
  - 6.** Would the general standard of acquirements be lowered by any measure which, by removing the hope of Staff employment, cut off the inducement, which young Artillery Officers now have, to qualify themselves in languages, sciences, and special branches of knowledge useful to the State ?
-

HIS EXCY. GENERAL THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief in India.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 to 3.** The replies made to these questions under the head of "Infantry," are equally applicable here.

**4.** Most lamentably so.

**5.** By having an unattached list, and by "seconding" Officers as in the Royal Artillery, every Troop and Battery requires four Officers at least always present, and any system which fails to ensure this, is defective.

**6.** The Staff should be open to Artillery as to other branches.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras.*

*Madras Army.*

**1.** See reply to this question as regards Native Infantry, it is equally applicable to Artillery.

**2.** As above.

**3.** As above.

**4.** See reply on this head as regards Native Infantry. The paucity of Officers as I have repeatedly represented, is utterly destructive of thorough efficiency in the Corps of Artillery.

**5.** See reply on this head as regards Infantry, it is equally applicable to Artillery.

**6.** As above.



MAJOR GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B.,  
*Secretary to Government, Military Department.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 to 6.**

Regarding these six questions, I beg to refer you to my answers to the same questions respecting the European Officers of Native Infantry Regiments.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B.,  
*Commanding Peshawur Division.*

*Bengal Army.*

**1.**

Diminished.

**2.**

Disrespect. Contempt of Authority. Mutiny.

**3.**

Full powers being granted to Commanding Officers to advance and promote those they think fit, and inflict punishment to the extent which is now awardable by District Courts Martial, corporal punishment and solitary confinement being brought in to active play when necessary.

A proper selection of Officers should be made, and these should be shifted as little as possible.

**4.**

Yes, decidedly.

**5.**

They should be removed to the Staff Corps of the Army, and their vacancies filled up in the Regiment of Artillery.

**6.**

They would certainly become more devoted to their branch of the service, the practical and theoretical knowledge of which, with its colateral studies, require much time and attention. If the inducement to leave their Military duties were cut off, the Officers would be more settled and would attain to higher acquirements in their own profession.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I cannot but condemn a system which takes Officers away from their legitimate duties, and places them in situations where it is impossible they can serve the State with advantage.

Having completed my replies to this series of questions, respecting the reorganization of the Native Artillery of the Bengal Army, I conclude by stating that I utterly condemn the system of employing the Natives of the country with guns, either in the capacity of Gunners or Drivers, for in both positions they can do the Government incalculable mischief.

If the experience of the recent mutiny is to teach us any thing, it must surely point out that the fidelity of no Native, whatever be his caste or creed, can henceforth be depended upon.

The conduct during the Mutiny of the Native Artillery, has been no better than that of their brethren, the Infantry and Cavalry, and only the other day, I was informed of the Native Gunners of one of the Punjab Light Field Batteries, having been concerned in a seditious combination formed by the Malwah Seiks of the 10th Irregular Cavalry, at Dera Ismail Khan for the purpose of murdering the European Officers of the Station.

I say therefore, abolish all Native Artillery; not only should no guns again be entrusted to Natives, but every means should be taken to discourage and to prevent them from acquiring a knowledge of the use of them.

Some officers argue that Natives make efficient Artillery men and excellent Drivers, and therefore recommend the continuance of the Native Artillery; but I maintain that their great efficiency is the very source of danger to be guarded against, and it forms therefore the most cogent reasons for discontinuing the employment of Natives with guns.

I earnestly trust the government will take warning from the past, and bear in mind that every gun in the hands of Natives forms a rallying point for mutiny, and source of danger; a retrospect of the mutiny clearly shows that no Native force is actually formidable unless supported by Artillery. Had the mutineers not been armed with a powerful Artillery well manned by Native Golundaz, there is every reason to believe the Mutiny would have been crushed in the beginning, for the Mutineers, however numerous, have never stood in the Field unless backed up by guns.

---

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Punjab Irregular Force.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Answered in the Bengal Paper.
2. Ditto, ditto.
3. Ditto, ditto.
4. Ditto, ditto.
5. Ditto, ditto.
6. Ditto, ditto.

---

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.,

*Commandant-in-Chief on the Frontier.*

*Bombay Army.*

1. I cannot say.
2. Ditto.
3. Abolish Articles of War, and leave Regimental Officers to deal with their men as they find best.
4. No;—scarcely any one is taken away.
5. By augmenting the number of Officers, chiefly of the Captains.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

6.

Undoubtedly, all such attempts are ruinous. Every effort should be made to cultivate and develop individual power and qualifications, and to employ them wherever they may be found most useful to the State, without the least regard to the particular branch of the service to which the Officer may belong.

---

BRIGADIER D. E. WOOD, C. B.,

*R. H. Artillery,*

*Commanding at Allahabad.*

*Bengal Army.*

1.

I have no knowledge.

3.

No Officers of Golundaz Artillery, except the European Officers of Troops and Companies; as few Non-Commissioned Officers as possible, and those chiefly acting so that the Golundaz may always be in direct communication with his European Officers.

4.

All Corps must suffer much in their efficiency, when perhaps their best Officers are selected for Staff employ. The loss of effective Regimental Officers is always felt by a Corps.

5.

By seconding the Officers so employed, and permitting them if absent not more than 10 years to return to their original place in the Artillery, their names being retained in Italics in the Army list.

6.

No; when I joined the Artillery the Duke of Wellington would not permit Officers of Artillery to serve on the Staff of the Army; he said to serve in the Artillery was a Staff appointment in itself, and the Officers who were then serving were perhaps more devoted to the Artillery service, having nothing else to look to, than they are at present, when all appointments are open to them.

---

BRIGADIER G. BARKER, C. B.,  
*Royal Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. They have been diminished.

3. After exercising great care and discretion in selection of Commanding Officers, the powers of reward and promotion should be vested in them, to be regulated solely by merit and good conduct, and punishment should not be confined within the narrow limits prescribed by the Native Articles of War. The power of summary dismissal exercised in some of the Irregular Regiments, appears to have been attended with the best effect.

4. Greatly.

5. By increasing the proportion of Officers to the strength of the corps sufficiently to admit of a fair proportion being withdrawn for Staff employment, and leave a minimum of 1 second Captain and two Subalterns always effective with Troops and Batteries.

6. I think so.

---

BRIGADIER C. BLOOD,  
*Commanding Scind Division of the Arm,*  
*Bombay Army.*

1. Diminished.

2. I have not remarked any particular result in the discipline of the Golundaz of the Bombay Artillery.

3. I would suggest the introduction of flogging, and under certain limitations the power of summary dismissal should be vested in the hands of the commanding Officers, this I am confident would have a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

far better effect in maintaining discipline than the present system of Courts Martial.

4.

With all the Officers present and in the performance of Regimental duty, I consider the strength far below the number required to ensure efficiency.

5.

By an augmentation of the Officers.

6.

The Regiment of Artillery, from the paucity of Officers, has seldom been able to detail many for general staff employ ; the hope of staff employ held out to the service at large, has been the means of producing the many eminent men who have shone so conspicuously in the Indian service.

---

BRIGADIER R. HORSFORD,

*Acting Commandant of Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

1.

The stricter application of Military Law, as compared with what was the case in former years, and the very restrictive nature of the Native Articles of war, has tended practically to diminish the powers of Commanding Officers.

2.

Less respect for the authority of Commanding Officers has resulted from their more limited power of punishing and rewarding. But irrespective of this cause, many agencies have been at work to produce a deterioration of the discipline of the Native Army.

3.

I would largely increase the power of all Commanding Officers of Battalions, Troops and Batteries—special magisterial powers, stringently and carefully defined, might be vested in them with great advantage.

4.

Nothing has tended so much to affect the efficiency of the regiment, more particularly of the Reserve Artillery, as the insufficiency

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of its Officers, and on no subject has more urgent and constant representations been made to the superior authorities, by each successive Commandant for years past.

Let the establishment of Officers be first placed on a footing proportionate to the requirements of the regiment, and the service of Artillery. Every Officer *removed for any extra regimental employ whatever* should, as in the Royal Artillery, be *seconded*, and promotion made in his room.

If the above plans were adopted, the inducement to study would not be lessened. The same opening to employment on the staff would offer itself, and I do not think there would be found under this system any want of properly qualified candidates for such employ.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL,  
*Secretary to Government, Bombay.*  
*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1.**

The questions in this Section have been answered in that of the Infantry.

---

COLONEL W. M. COGHLAN,  
*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**1.**

The Bombay Golundaz dates only from 1826. I do not think there has been any diminution of the powers of Commanding Officers since that date, they never had any power; all centred in the Adjutant General's office.

**2.**

The discipline has been surprisingly good, considering the disadvantages. No Company of Golundaz can have more than one Officer with it, usually a young subaltern. In the Bombay Artillery the Captains are employed as Field Officers, and the Subalterns as Captains, in both cases without the rank or pay. The Officers of the Royal Artillery have superseded us in every grade.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

Provide a Captain and three Subalterns to each Company and Battery and a establishment of Field Officers to Command Battalions and Divisions of Artillery under a strict system of discipline on the European model. Influence and authority will not be wanting to the Officers.

4.

Very seriously so; for example, in this garrison (Aden) which mounts 90 heavy Guns, the Commandant of Artillery is a Lieutenant and he is also Commissary, and Adjutant and Quarter Master of Artillery, and in charge of the Guns on the works.

A Field Officer is out of the question, but not even a Captain can be found for the Artillery at Aden.

5.

By giving a proper establishment per Troop and Company, and for Battalion Staff and Commanding Officers of Battalions and Divisions, and then seconding every Officer withdrawn for civil, political, staff, or any detached duty.

6.

Officers would hardly be found to serve in the Artillery on such conditions, it may be that practically an Officer never leaves his regiment and never cares to do so. Yet he is *eligible* for any superior employ for which he may be qualified, and that satisfies him; but it would break the Spirit of any Officer to be told that whatever his ability and character he could never emerge from the ranks of his regiment. Moreover such a rule as this question suggests would be injurious to the Government; under it the late Sir Henry Lawrence could not have been taken from the Artillery.

The system of seconding Officers withdrawn from the regiment removes all difficulty.

I have long been of opinion that it would be well for the efficiency of the Indian Army if all its civil establishments, such as Commissioners and Agencies, and Pay and Audit Departments were transferred to Civilians as in Europe.

During many years past the duty of the Corps of Artillery at Bombay has been carried on only by a system of continued contrivance. We have not had companies enough for ordinary reliefs, and the few we had, have been about *half* officered, or less. The question has always been before Government and the Court of Directors, the remedy has been always promised, and always postponed.

At Aden, I have not *one* European Artillery man per Gun (80 men, 90 heavy guns.) The Artillery of the Bombay Army is all Field Artillery, and it is almost all on detached duty; we have no re-



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

serve, hence on a call for service, some stations are left without any Artillery; at Regimental Head Quarters (Ahmednuggur) the Corps is represented chiefly by the band; this occurred during the Affghan war, and again lately.

We have already raised, emergently, four extra Companies (and Batteries) of European Artillery; these should be constituted a Battalion, and if another European Battalion (of the same strength) were added, the Corps would be efficient as regards its strength viz.,—

1 Brigade Horse Artillery, 4 Troops,	}	Europeans
4 Battalions Foot „ 4 Companies each		
2 „ Golundaz 6 „ „		

—  
Total 7 Battalions                      4 Companies each might suffice of Golundaz.

Every Officer withdrawn from the regiment should be seconded. At present we seldom have a Field Officer in command of a Battalion; the Adjutant is often left (in Command) at Head Quarters

But our inefficiency in respect of establishment has been so often and so forcibly represented to Government that further repetition is unnecessary. I believe the feeling amongst Artillery Officers in India is almost despair, their complaint is always before the authorities, it is always recognized, and admitted, but never remedied.

---

COLONEL G. HUTT,  
*Bombay Artillery.*

*Bombay Army.*

## QUESTIONS

## ANSWERS.

1.

Centralization has been our bane year by year. Commanders of Batteries and Battalions have been rendered more and more powerless, more and more useless.

2.

The G. G. Order of 30th April 1837 was the ruin of the Native Artillery which has gradually declined ever since.

3.

Revert to the system that obtained prior to April 1837; re-introduce corporal punishment, give greater power to Commanding Officers, and from them in proportion exact greater responsibility.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4.

I do not think so; the few that are absent are employed on duties, from which it would be an injustice to themselves and the State to remove them.

5.

We require a large increase of Officers for the performance of the ordinary regimental duties, at this moment while "working double tides" we are daily subjected to the most cruel supercession by the Royals.

In addition to this increase, all Officers not employed on strictly regimental works should, as in the Royal Artillery be placed on the non-effective list.

6.

This question is scarcely applicable to us, for years past we have been so hard worked as to be (with very rare exceptions) debarred all employment beyond the Corps, otherwise, the cry against "Officers being withdrawn for staff employ" is mere clap trap. A Native Corps in garrison cannot give occupation to more than three or four Officers. *Idleness* has ruined and killed more Europeans, than any disease in India. The Government has a right to the services of its servants and can confer no greater blessing than to work them hard in whatever capacity they can be most useful, and encourage them to qualify by every means in their power.

---

LIEUTENANT COLONEL E. W. S. SCOTT,

*Inspector General of Ordnance.*

*Bengal Army.*

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

1.

It has not undergone much change; the tendency has been to diminish the power, and place it in the hands of the Commandant and Commander-in-Chief.

2.

Bad.

3.

Nearly absolute power in the hands of Commanding-Officers, with immediate removal from command if the result showed they were not qualified for its exercise.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

Yes.

5.

By allowing a proportion to be taken for Staff appointments, and promotions made in their room; so that the regiment should always have the proper proportion for its efficiency present.

6.

I think it would.

---

BREVET COLONEL H. TOMBS.

*Horse Artillery.*

*Bengal Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 & 2.

My answers to these questions would be mere conjecture, and therefore I think it better not to reply to them.

3.

Ample magisterial power to Commanding-Officers, by which more summary punishment can be inflicted than through the weary medium of a Native Court Martial.

4.

Greatly; want of Officers has ruined for many years, the discipline of the regiment, more especially the Foot Artillery.

5.

By seconding, i. e., placing on a non-effective list, all Officers employed away from the regiment; this should include the Ordnance Commissariat and the different agencies of Powder, Gun foundry, and Gun carriage.

6.

No, I do not think so, and moreover I do not see why the measure above advocated should have the effect of removing the hope of Staff employ from those who chose to qualify themselves for it.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

*Bengal Army.*

1.

We believe they have been diminished ; for the Artillery was under the same system as the rest of the Native Army. General Orders and Regulations applied to all alike. An increasing centralization of power in the persons of the Commander-in-Chief and Adjutant General has characterized all recent administration.

2.

It was one of the seeds of the late mutiny.

3.

See replies noted below. Bengal Infantry Paper, No. 2. Reply No. 1. Bengal Infantry Paper, No. 4. Replies 6 and 7, the principles in which are equally applicable to the Artillery.

4.

Yes, unquestionably.

5.

By increasing the numbers of Artillery Officers, and limiting the number available for Staff, and detached employments, to a fair but fixed proportion.

6.

Certainly, and Government would lose the services of many valuable men whose idiosyncracies or studies impel them towards other lines. Everest, Cautley, Dixon, Lawrence, for instance, rendered far higher services to the country than they could have hoped to do in their own departments.

---

BRIGADIER W. HILL,

*Commanding Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Hyderabad Contingent Artillery.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I have not observed any increase or diminution in the powers of the Commandants of the Companies of Artillery.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2.

The discipline has been well maintained, being based upon the regulations of the Madras Artillery.

3.

I would strongly urge that the Golundaz Artillery of this Contingent should be abolished, and that European Artillery should be substituted for them.

The following instance of what occurred at Aurungabad last year, is a proof how little the Native Artillery can be relied on.

During the trials which took place after the Bombay column arrived there to quell the mutiny, it was discovered that the first Cavalry had been told that if they attacked the Cantonment, the Artillery were ready to join them and seize the arsenal. This in connexion with the convictions for mutiny which took place in the 4th Company of Artillery, is conclusive of the disaffection which existed in that Company.

The element of disaffection having once appeared in so serious a form, as to propose the seizure of the arsenal, and turning upon our own Officers, is the strongest proof of the necessity for securing ourselves in future against the possibility of the occurrence of any such disaster, should any unforeseen circumstances again throw this part of the country into the disturbed state it was last year.

Besides the four light field batteries in this Contingent, there are in the arsenals at Aurungabad, Ellichpore and Hingolee, heavy pieces of ordnance, as enumerated in the Margin, with an abundant supply of ammunition, which would make the Native Artillery very formidable were they to turn against us and seize the Arsenals.

I would therefore suggest that the four Companies of Native Artillery should be abolished, and two European Horse batteries be raised in their place, and that the whole of the heavy ordnance should be removed to Secunderabad as soon as there is room in the Arsenal there to receive it. The Native Officers of the Contingent Artillery being very intelligent men, might be provided for in the Police Corps, which I presume from some of the questions which have been sent to me to answer, are likely to be organized in the Hyderabad territories, and the men of the four Companies would form an excellent nucleus for the Police.

Should it be decided upon to substitute European for Native Artillery in this Contingent, two Companies of European Artillery might be lent by the Madras Government until the Contingent batteries were formed, which would at once make the Native Artillery available for the Military Police, as they are ready trained.

4 to 6.

No replies required.

*Return of the whole of the heavy Ordnance in use with the Hyderabad Contingent.*

*Ordnance Office, Hyderabad Contingent.*

Stations.	Guns.		Howitzers.		Mortars.		Remarks.
	18-Pounders.	12-Pounders.	8-Inch.	5½-Inch medium.	8-Inch.	5½-Inch.	
Bolaram, .....	2	...	...	2	2	...	Gun Powder. lbs 24,150
Aurungabad, .....	2	...	2	...	2	6	„ 18,600
Ellichpoor, ..	2	...	...	...	2	...	„ 11,000
Hingolie, .....	1	...	...	...	1	...	„ 10,800
Lingsoogoor, .....	...	...	...	...	1	1	„ 3,000
Total, .....	7	...	2	2	8	7	lbs 67,550

MAJOR G. ROWLANDSON,

*Dir. Arty. Depôt of Instruction,*

*Actg. Supdt. Gun-Powder Manufactory.*

*Madras Army.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Not more than in the European Battalions; but Battalion Commanding Officers are, I conceive, reduced to the nearest approach to a cypher in all.

2.

The effect of the diminution of the power, position and influence of the Commanders of our Battalions is equally injurious to Europeans, and Golundaz, to Officers and men.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

The measures necessary to this effect are equally demanded for the European and Native Battalions, and no peculiarities belong to either. The same causes are necessary to the same effects in both cases ; they are a great deal too long to answer here, but a paper is included which was written two years ago, and represents the state of the Madras Artillery, and the measures which are believed likely for its improvement.

4.

Seriously, and irremediably.

5.

By the adoption of the system in the Royal Artillery, in filling the place of any Officer withdrawn for Staff duty, by another Officer for regimental duty ; the former rising in his place as non-effective.

6.

Unquestionably, such a change would be most injurious ; the real principle is to raise the standard of qualifications necessary to Staff employ ; rigidly and impartially recognise and reward them when acquired, and supply the places vacated in the regiment by others for duty, as represented in the preceding answer.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B.,  
*Adjutant General, Bombay Army.*

*Bombay Army.*

1.

Much diminished, as regards Commanding Officers of Battalions, in the same degree as with Commanding Officers of Cavalry and Infantry.

2.

Frequent appeals to superior authority when that of the Commanding Officer should be sufficient, if discipline is to be maintained by those entrusted with command.

3.

By placing full confidence and power in the hands of the Commanding Officer, holding him responsible for the result, and removing him if he fails to maintain his influence and authority.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

Almost all the Field Officers are on the Staff: Commissaries of Ordnance, Gun carriage Agent, Agent for Gun powder, and similar appointments take away those who should be Inspecting Field Officers. The regiment is very much underhanded, and should be extensively augmented.

5.

An extensive augmentation is the only remedy; for there are few Artillery Officers ex-regimentally employed, and if the Staff employees were "seconded" as in the Royal Artillery, others must supply their places.

6.

I think this would be a great evil; all hope would die. I cannot conceive any measure more calculated to ruin any service, for the object of Government should be to induce their servants to attain in all things as much proficiency as possible in order, that the fullest benefit may be derived from their services in any situation where they may be required.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
*Commander-in-Chief, Madras.*  
*Madras Army.*

1.

The powers are slightly increased by the amended Articles of War.

2.

The discipline has continued good.

3.

I would make no alterations.

4.

Most materially.

5.

By not taking any Officers away for the Political and Civil service of the Government.

6.

Not necessarily, I would employ all Officers of Artillery in Departments relating to their own service.

---



# PRECIS

OF THE

## REPLIES TO QUESTIONS ON ENGINEER SOLDIERS OR SAPPERS AND MINERS.

### No. I. RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION.

#### QUESTIONS.

#### ANSWERS.

1.

The Commander-in-Chief in India states that the full complement is 12 Companies, each to consist of—

1 Subadar, 1 Jemadar, 6 Havildars,\* 8 Naicks, 2 Buglers, 100 Sepoys.

2 Serjeants† and 10 Corporals, trained at Chatham, are attached to each Company, or in such proportion as they may be available.

To the Corps there are a Commandant and Adjutant, always Engineer Officers; an Interpreter and Quarter Master, who may belong to the Engineers or the Infantry, and usually several young Engineer Officers attached; also a Conductor, an old Sapper, a Serjeant Major and a Quarter Master Serjeant.

The Commander-in-Chief at Madras states the Corps of Sappers and Miners at that Presidency to consist of 12 Companies with—

*Europeans*—1 Serjeant Major, 1 Quarter Master Serjeant, 24 Serjeants, 24 First Corporals, 24 Second Corporals.

*East Indians*—1 Assistant Apothecary, 24 Buglers.

---

\* The complement in the Pay Code is 4 Havildars per Company.

† The number of European Non-Commissioned Officers is, 24 Serjeants, 24 First Corporals, 24 Second Corporals to the Regiment, giving 6 of each grade to each Company. There are Privates also on the complement, but the number is not fixed.

#### *Native Establishment.*

12 Lascars, 24 Bheestees, 24 Sweepers, Artificers composing the Forge Establishment 70, but this is only for 10 of the Companies, 1 Native Doctor.

Two are Pontonier Companies, under the Command of an Officer of Engineers; with full complement of European Non-Commissioned Officers. The two united Companies have also 1 Staff Serjeant Major, 1 Drill Havildar and 1 Drill Naick, non-effective, and each of the two Companies has 13 Artificers (Natives).

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

*Natives*—12 Subadars, 12 Jemadars, 1 Havildar Major, 50 Havildars, 100 Naicks, 1350 Privates, 24 Recruit Boys, 24 Pension Boys, 12 Puckalies, 53 Artificers, 1 Second Dresser.

Captain Jones, Bombay Engineers, Commanding the Sappers and Miners, states that at Bombay the Corps is thus composed—

*Europeans*—1 Sub-Conductor, 1 Serjeant Major, 1 Quarter Master Serjeant, 10 Serjeants, 10 Corporals, and 10 Second Corporals.

*Natives*—5 Companies, each with 1 Subadar, 1 Jemadar, 4 Havildars, 8 Naicks, 2 Buglers, 100 Privates.

Captain Marriott, of the Bombay Engineers, who served for six years with the Sappers (and to whom Lieutenant-Colonel Crawford, Superintending Engineer Railway Department Bombay, made over the questions sent to him by Lieutenant-Colonel Durand,) remarks, that the number of European Commissioned Officers varies, consisting of a Commanding Officer and Adjutant, and the young Engineer Officers, on their first arrival in the Country; that the European Non-Commissioned Officers hardly form an essential part of the Corps, as they are continually drafted off to the Public Works Department.

## 2.

In Bengal, mostly Hindoostanees, till lately. The Sappers are much below their complement, and those enlisted during last year are believed to be generally Seikhs and Punjabees. The Hindoostanees, who used to enlist, were of all kinds, but with fewer high-caste men than in the Infantry.

In Madras, the Sappers consist of Christians, Mahomedans, Brahmins and Rajpoots, Mahrattas, Telingas, Tamil, other inferior castes, (these last in the proportion of 496 to 678 which is the aggregate of all the other castes) and Indo-Britons.

In Bombay, they consist of Jews, Mussulmans, and Hindoos, of the different castes of which Captain Jones gives the names in full enumeration.

Captain Marriott says that a large portion of the 1st Company which always were Sappers, were Hindoostanees; the remainder (there having been 4 Companies only in his time) were nearly all enlisted in the Deccan and Concan, within the Bombay Presidency.

## 3.

All state they are drawn from the same Districts as the Infantry in the three Presidencies.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4.

The general answer is in the negative; but Sir S. Cotton in Bengal, and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson in Madras, state—the former that menial classes have been excluded, and the latter that the lower castes have been preferred, as they make the best Soldiers and the most willing workmen.

5.

It is stated by all that none of such races exist; but Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson remarks that on account of the hard work, the Service is not popular with the Mahrattas and the Moplahs, each of which tribes might furnish good recruits.

6.

The general reply to these questions is, that what is done in the Infantry is done in the Sappers. Lord Clyde, with reference to question 6, thinks that no agency is necessary.

7 to 9.

His Lordship and Sir S. Cotton would admit all races who come forward, and would form each race into separate Companies.

For Madras, Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson suggests that Mahomedans might be excluded as being bad workmen, weak and lazy from the effects of their own excesses.

10.

The oath administered is that which is in use in the Infantry.

11 &amp; 12.

Lord Clyde thinks, with reference to question 12, that no change is required. Sir S. Cotton does not think oaths are of much use with any description of Natives; but if one is to be used, he would retain the oath now in use.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson considers that a Sepoy values nothing so much as an oath, and that it certainly ought never to be given up. He mentions having been told by a Native Officer of Sappers, that if a Sepoy, without reference to his caste, should be sworn upon a palm-leaf over-spread with salt, he will never break his oath for fear of the judgment that he imagines would follow. An oath sworn on the head of a parent, Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson believes, is never broken, and he would use the most binding form of oath in the Army.

On the other hand Captain Jones thinks that no oath would bind an evil-disposed man; and Captain Marriott considers oaths and covenants useless. The bond an Asiatic best understands, whether he practices it or not, is, he says, personal fidelity.

13.

Lord Clyde and Sir S. Cotton would have the Companies to consist of separate races or castes.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Sir P. Grant would have them composite, and in the proportions now existing. Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson concurs in this; but he would have Christians in a separate Company, and he would take care, except in the case of Christians, that any one class should not preponderate.

Captains Jones and Marriott would have Companies composite, without giving any one class a preponderance; but Captain Jones suggests that to secure the low-caste men against the influence of the higher, the low-caste men should have the superiority in numbers. He would have as many Jews as can be obtained.

**14 & 15.** Lord Clyde believes no agency necessary.

The other Officers consider no other agency and no other precautions beyond those already in use to be necessary.

**16.** Lord Clyde considers the old system to have worked well. He states that trained artificers could not easily be obtained for Sappers, because they earn more than the pay of Sappers, and they remain at home. Sir S. Cotton makes the same remark, and says that artizans are physically inferior men, and from their habits unfit for Soldiers, except the Seikhs and Pathans, who are able-bodied and likely to make good Soldiers, only the pay is too small to be an inducement to them.

Sir P. Grant states, that efforts are systematically made to obtain recruits acquainted with useful trades. Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson says that sometimes brick-layers, tile-makers, and potters are enlisted, and that more would enlist if the working pay were increased.

Captains Jones and Marriott notice the objection of low pay. The former says that the highest caste men willingly learn any thing, and that, for instance, they have been taught rope-making, which, as a caste employment, holds a very low position. Captain Marriott proposes that artificers on extra allowance should be enlisted, in the proportion of 4 masons, 4 carpenters, 4 blacksmiths per Company, to instruct the men of the Corps.

**17 to 19.** Lord Clyde and Sir P. Grant are adverse to the enlistment of foreigners; but if they are enlisted, Sir P. Grant would form them into separate Companies.

The other opinions are also against the enlistment of foreigners, excepting Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith (who now begins to answer the questions). He would enlist them and place them in separate Companies. In his opinion Goorkhas would make capital

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Engineer Soldiers. The men of the Sirmoor Battalion worked excellently at Delhi with the spade and bill-hook. Malays and some African races, Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith considers capable of being turned to account.

If men are brought from other tropical Countries, Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson would send European Officers to recruit them. Captain Jones also.

**20.**

Lord Clyde observes that the Bengal Sappers, if complete, and the two Corps of Punjab Pioneers, would give upwards of 3,000 men, and this, with two or three Companies of Royal Engineers, would probably suffice for Bengal.

Sir P. Grant thinks the Madras Sappers sufficient for the absolute requirements of the Service; but they are so useful that their number might with advantage be increased.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson is decidedly of opinion that neither for ordinary purposes nor for field service, are the Sappers sufficiently numerous.

Captains Jones and Marriott consider the strength of Bombay Sappers insufficient. The former would propose at least seven Companies, exclusive of an Adjutant's Detachment, to be about the strength of one and half Companies.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith declares that practically there are no Native Engineer Soldiers, the men now called Sappers and Miners being so in name only, and in a large proportion raw and very indifferent recruits, and they are not sufficient for the requirements of Field service.

**21 & 22.**

Lord Clyde can see no reason, save the disinclination of Natives to do any thing of the kind. They are not so employed in time of peace, and though sometimes so employed in time of war, they seldom work willingly.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith knows no other reason for the evasion of one of the essential duties of Soldiers. He says the Seikhs work willingly enough, but he thinks the Officers generally as bad as the men.

Sir S. Cotton is of opinion that every Infantry Regiment should be required to go through a regular course of training, and frequently exercised in digging trenches, &c. He would locate one or two Infantry Regiments at the Head Quarters of the Sappers,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

to allow the Officers and Men to undergo systematical training in the execution of Field works.

Sir Patrick Grant says that the Native Infantry Soldier's time is sufficiently occupied in the performance of his proper duties ; that he has always willingly labored on Military works when his services have been required ; but that to make Sapper training, even in a modified shape, part of his regular duty, would be exceedingly unpalatable to him. Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson expresses the same views.

Captains Jones and Marriott consider that Infantry Soldiers should be trained to Sapper work. The former would make it imperative to devote about two months in the year to throwing up Field works ; and he proposes that two or more Officers from every Regiment should attend a course of instruction at the Sapper Head Quarters, and when passed, return to their Corps as " Instructors of Field Works."

Captain Jones states that the 4th Bombay Rifles and Belooch Battalion were employed in the trenches at Bushire.

**23.**

Lord Clyde, adverting to his stated opinion, that for ordinary operations there are sufficient Engineer Soldiers, observes that in sieges, the Line, European and Native, must be and have been called on to work, but the Native Soldiers have never worked willingly.

Sir P. Grant's opinion is based on the fair wants of the service in Engineers.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith, and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, state their opinion to be formed irrespective of the efficiency of the line, which does not work willingly.

Captain Jones' opinion is given on the fair wants of the Service, and that of Captain Marriott on the inaptitude of the Infantry.

**24 & 25.**

Lord Clyde and Sir S. Cotton consider the present number, 6, to be sufficient, and of the present grade.

Sir P. Grant and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson consider them insufficient, because of the large employment of these men in the Public Works Department.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith finds it difficult to reply, because he thinks an entire change in the organization of the

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Engineer Department to be desirable, and he would not attach Europeans to Native Sappers at all, but organize them in separate Companies.

In this last suggestion Captains Jones and Marriott concur.

**26 to 28.**

Lord Clyde and Sir P. Grant see no advantage in any close resemblance of dress, and think the present dress appropriate.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith condemns "the old dress" of the Sappers; he would give them loose tunics and trowsers of khakee.

Sir S. Cotton and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson attach much importance to the dress of the men, as inducing smartness, and a value for Soldier-like appearance.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson says the men like the present dress, excepting the basket-work turban; and though proud of dressing like Europeans, they will not wear peaks to their caps, and they prefer sandals on a march. He would give them a loose dark-colored working-dress.

Captains Jones and Marriott would dress the men like the European Sappers; but the latter does not attach much importance to dress. Captain Jones would give them as working dress, a cane-hunting cap similar to those made at Tannah, a turban, loose tunic, and Zouave trowsers, similar in color to the Peshawur Guides.

The Native Sappers are armed with swords and carbines; at Bombay with the grooved Rifles. Lord Clyde, Sir P. Grant, and the others consider the present arms appropriate; but His Lordship and Sir S. Cotton think the two-grooved Rifle would be an improvement in Bengal.

**29 & 30.**

No reply to the 29th question as regards Bengal. Sir S. Cotton mentions that some Sappers and Miners are now and then found attempting to learn English, and read figures and draw plans roughly, and that there is an anxiety among them to learn.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson says that in a Company of 105 men, 70 can read and write their own Vernacular, 20 more can merely sign their names in the Madras Sappers, and the remaining 15 are wholly uninstructed. About 50 men in the Regiment can speak English intelligibly, about one-third of the Regiment can understand simple orders in English; perhaps 20 can read English books, and 4 or 5 write a very intelligible English letter.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Captain Jones says that one-third of the Bombay Sappers can read and write their own Vernacular, and one-thirtieth can understand, and read and write English.

**31 & 32.**

Lord Clyde considers them sufficiently trained in Bengal for all practical purposes, and that they may be so classed.

Sir S. Cotton, and Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith are of the contrary opinion.

Sir P. Grant and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson state that there is a good school of instruction with the Madras Sappers, in carpentry, brick and tile-making, stone-cutting and other artificer's work, and a school for survey and plan-drawing. But Sir P. Grant would not call them skilled Engineer Soldiers; and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson remarks that they have not sufficient time for effectual instruction, being liable to be called away to out-stations and to Burmah.

Captain Jones states that in Bombay the Sappers are obliged to attend school for one year when recruited, and the Non-Commissioned Officers to attend school for instruction in English, Arithmetic, Field works, &c., when other duties do not interfere. All Sepoys are encouraged to do the same.

They receive half a day's working pay for daily attendance for three hours, and a day's pay for five hours. He does not consider them so well-skilled as is desirable, for the Corps is too much broken up into Detachments to admit of that.

**33 & 34.**

All agree that the present Corps of Engineers in the three Presidencies are unable to furnish any Officers for additional purposes.

Lord Clyde thinks any additional Corps of Sappers unnecessary. If Companies of the Royal Engineers remain in India, he would have a reserve of European Sappers at Head Quarters to supply Officers (Non-Commissioned) to Native Companies.

Sir S. Cotton recommends a small Battalion of 5 or 600 men fully Officered from the Engineers, and he would have parties from all European Corps instructed at the Head Quarters of the Sappers, so as to instruct in their turn their own Regiments.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith proposes a Corps of European Engineer Soldiers as most desirable. 5 Companies of 80, or 4 of 100, with a Commandant, Second in Command, Adjutant, and Quarter Master, with a Second Captain and Subaltern for each Company, being 12 Officers in all, or 14 if 5 Companies are formed.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Sir Patrick Grant would entirely separate the Public Works Department from the Military Corps of Sappers; but he does not advocate establishing a Corps of European Sappers for actual work in this climate.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson is in favor of a European Corps of Sappers, 500 strong, of which number some could be always at Head Quarters instructing the Native Sappers; during peace their employment would be chiefly in the Public Works Department, and in war, any number of them might assist the Field Engineers. He would have in the Corps as many men as possible brought up to trades most useful in the Public Works Department, the want of such men having been much felt in times both of peace and war.

Brigadier-General Jacob (who now for the first time enters on the subject of these questions), strongly advocates a Corps of European Sappers for each Presidency. He would have them 800 strong, in 10 Companies, with a Captain and 2 Subalterns of Engineers to each Company, with Field Officers and Staff as usual.

Captain Jones would have for Bombay, a Corps of European Sappers of 3 Companies, of 100 Privates each, and with the Non-Commissioned Officers, &c., 120, and with 4 Engineer Officers to each Company.

Captain Marriott proposes a small Corps of European Sappers to be trained in England and employed in India chiefly in the direction of works. He thinks Royal Engineer Soldiers might be sent out for such a Corps, and it should have Engineer Officers with it.

He thinks the present mode of supply of European Overseers to the Public Works Department good, while the Corps of European Sappers is so only in name, but it would not be so were an Engineer Corps formed.



# NO. I. RECRUITING AND THE COMPOSITION OF CORPS. ENGINEERS, SOLDIERS, OR SAPPERS AND MINERS.

## QUESTIONS.

1. WHAT is the present constitution of the Corps of Sappers and Miners of the  
as respects the European and the Native elements ?
2. What are the races, tribes, and castes of which the Native Sappers and  
Miners of the  
are composed ?
3. What districts are the races, tribes, and castes drawn from ?
4. Have any races, tribes, or castes been excluded from enlistment, either by  
the Regulations or practice of  
?
5. Are there any races, tribes, or castes hitherto neglected or excluded from  
the field of enlistment, from whom Recruits might with advantage be drawn for the  
Sappers and Miners ?
6. What agency is employed for the enlistment of Recruits ?
7. On enlistment of Recruits, what precautions of registry and other forms  
are taken before the Local Authorities of districts ?
8. When Recruits are enlisted in Cantonments, or taken from the families of  
Sapoys, or the followers of the Corps, what precautions, if any, are taken ?
9. What alterations should be made in existing recruiting regulations and prac-  
tice relatively to races, tribes, or castes, with a view to improve the future composition  
and efficiency of the Engineer Soldiers ?
10. What are the words of the oath administered to the Engineer Recruit on  
his entering the ranks of the Sappers and Miners ?
11. How long has this form been in use in the  
?
12. Can you recommend any improvement in the wording or matter of the  
oath administered ? or do you think an oath useless ? Would you substitute any  
form of covenant or engagement ?
13. Should the Companies of Engineer Soldiers be homogeneous as to race,  
tribe, or caste, or be composite, and have them mixed up ; and if composite, in what  
proportion should the different classes enter ?

- 14.** What agency should be employed for recruiting?
- 15.** What precautions should be taken before the Local Authorities, or through their instrumentality?
- 16.** Has the recruiting of Native Engineer Soldiers been hitherto from unskilled men, and is it practicable in the with reference to the habits and qualities, moral and physical, of the people, to adopt to any extent, the system of the Royal Sappers and Miners, by enlisting Artificers and Recruits conversant with some trade, or special kind of labor?
- 17.** Will it be expedient to enlist natives of other tropical countries, equally qualified for hard labor and service in India, with the natives of the country, and if so, should they be formed in separate Companies, or mixed up throughout the Companies?
- 18.** If recourse be had to recruiting in other tropical countries for Engineer Soldiers, which are the countries and races to be preferred?
- 19.** What would be the best agency to employ for such recruiting?
- 20.** Are the Native Engineer Soldiers in sufficient strength for the requirements of service in the field?
- 21.** Is there any reason why all Native Infantry should not be trained to the ordinary work in the execution of trenches, and be taught much now confined in general to Sappers and Miners?
- 22.** Is any portion of the Native Infantry of the accustomed to work in the execution of trenches, batteries, &c., and is the work done willingly?
- 23.** Has the sufficiency or insufficiency of the Engineer Soldiers of the noted by you, reference to the peculiar aptitude, or the reverse of the Native Infantry of the Line, or is your opinion based purely on the fair Engineer wants of the Service, irrespective of considerations connected with the efficiency of the Line in siege and field-works?
- 24.** Have the Sappers and Miners of the as many European Sappers and Miners, Non-Commissioned Officers, and Privates as is desirable?
- 25.** How many European Sappers and Miners, and of what grades, should be attached to a Company of Native Sappers and Miners?

- 26.** Are you aware of any advantage which accrues from making the dress of the Native Sappers and Miners closely resemble that of the European Infantry ?
- 27.** How are the Sappers and Miners armed ?
- 28.** How should the Engineer Soldiers of be dressed and armed ?
- 29.** What proportion of the Sappers and Miners can read and write their own vernacular ?
- 30.** What proportion can understand or speak English, or read and write English ?
- 31.** Besides practice in Sapping, Mining, and Field operations, have the Sappers and Miners any schooling ?
- 32.** Do you consider that they are to be classed as skilled Engineer Soldiers ?
- 33.** With reference to the numerous demands for skilled European Overseers and Subordinates in the Department of Public Works, and to Military requirements, is it advisable to have in addition to Native, a Corps of European Sappers and Miners ? If so, of what strength, and how Officered ?
- 34.** Could the Corps of Engineers furnish the requisite number of Officers ?

HIS EXCY. GENL. THE HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1.** The Companies are composed of Natives. The full complement is twelve Companies, each Company *should* consist of—

- 1 Soubadar,
- 1 Jemadar.
- 6 Havildars.
- 8 Naicks.
- 2 Buglers.
- 100 Sepoys.

There is a European Serjeant Major and a European Quarter Master Serjeant to the Corps, and 2 Serjeants and 10 Corporals (Europeans) trained at Chatham, and attached to each Company, or in such proportion as they may be available. There is a Commandant and an Adjutant, always Engineer Officers ; an Interpreter and Quarter Master, who may belong to the Engineers or to the Infantry, and usually several young Engineer Officers are attached to the Corps ; there is also a Conductor, an old Sapper.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2.

Mostly Hindoostance until lately. The Sappers and Miners at present are several hundred below the proper complement, and those who have been enlisted during the last year, are believed to be generally Seikhs and Punjabees. The Hindoostanees who used to enlist were of all kinds, but there were probably fewer high caste Hindoos than in the Infantry.

3.

From the usual recruiting districts, it is believed of the North-Western Provinces.

4.

No such rule is known of.

5.

None, it is believed, now that Seikhs and Punjabees are employed.

6.

None necessary.

7.

The forms prescribed by Regulations.

8.

It is not known that any particular precautions are taken.

9.

In the Sappers, all races who come forward, should be admitted; each race formed into a separate Company or Companies.

10.

Supposed to be that laid down in the Native Articles of War.

11.

Not known.

12.

No.

13.

The Companies might be of separate races or tastes.

14.

None is believed to be necessary.

15.

The same as heretofore prescribed by Regulations.

16.

There would seem to be some difficulty in enlisting trained Artificers in the Sappers; one reason must be that the trained Artificer earns more than the Sapper receives as pay, and remains at his home. The old system seems to have worked well, and to have produced a very useful body of men.

17.

Seems unnecessary, and they would probably require high pay.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18.

Answered by answer 17.

19.

Answered by answer 17.

20.

The Corps of Bengal Sappers and Miners if complete, and the two Corps of Punjab Pioneers would give upwards of 3,000 men, and this, with 2 or 3 Companies of Royal Engineers, would probably be sufficient for the Bengal Presidency.

21.

There seems to be no reason save the disinclination of Natives to do anything of the kind.

22.

None are accustomed to the work in time of peace, sometimes Native Troops are so employed in time of war, but seldom have worked willingly.

23.

The Engineer Soldiers, as before stated, seem to be sufficient for ordinary operations. In siege the Line (Europeans and Natives) must be called upon to work and have done so generally, but the Native Infantry Soldiers of the Regular Army have never worked willingly.

24.

Six European Non-Commissioned Officers to a Company of Native Sappers seems sufficient.

25.

The present number (six) is sufficient.

26.

There is no advantage that I am aware of.

27.

With carbines and swords.

28.

Their present arms do very well, but the carbines of course would be more efficient if rifled. If other Native Troops have a smart dress the Sappers should have one likewise, but their working dress should be plain, as it is at present in fact.

29.

I cannot say.

30.

I cannot say.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**31.**

I believe so, they are apparently sufficiently trained for all practical purposes.

**32.**

Sufficiently so, as far as I can judge.

**33.**

If Companies of the Royal Engineers remain in India, the establishment of any other Corps of Sappers seems unnecessary ; a reserve of European Sappers should, however, be kept at Head Quarters to supply deficiencies in the Non-Commissioned Officers with Native Companies, whether caused by death or by appointment as Overseers.

**34**

That must depend upon the number of Officers required and taken for the Department of Public Works, but for the wants of Bengal, the number of Engineer Officers is too small.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF  
AT FORT ST. GEORGE,—*Madras.*

The Corps of Sappers and Miners consists of 12 Companies.

## EUROPEAN.

One Serjeant Major, 1 Quarter Master Serjeant, 24 Serjeants, 24 First Corporals, 24 Second Corporals.

## EAST INDIAN.

1 Assistant Apothecary.  
24 Buglers.

## NATIVE.

12 Subadars.  
12 Jemadars.  
1 Havildar Major.  
50 Havildars.  
100 Naiques.  
1,350 Privates.  
24 Recruits. } Boys  
24 Pension. }  
12 Puckallies,  
53 Artificers.  
1 Second Dresser.

**1.**



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

CASTES.

}	Christians. ....	135
	Mussulmans...	79
	Brahmins and Rajpoots. ....	8
	Mahrattas. ....	4
	Jelingas (Gentoo.) ....	191
	Tamil. ....	246
	Other inferior castes. ....	496
	Indo-Britons...	15

COUNTRY.

}	Hindoostan.
	Northern Circars.
	Central Carnatic (Madras, Vellore, &c.)
	Southern Carnatic (Trichinopoly.)
	Baramahal.
	Ceded Districts.
	Mysore.
	Tanjore, Madura and Tinnevely.

- 4. None.
- 5. I think not.
- 6. As in the Native Infantry.
- 7. As in the Native Infantry.
- 8. As in the Native Infantry.
- 9. None. The existing system answers perfectly.
- 10. As in the Native Infantry.
- 11. As in the Native Infantry.
- 12. As in the Native Infantry.
- 13. Composite, the present proportions are good, and should be left undisturbed.
- 14. The present system answers all purposes.
- 15. None which do not at present exist.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

Efforts are systematically made to obtain Recruits acquainted with useful trades.

17.

It is not considered expedient that natives of other tropical climates should be enlisted, as Sappers. If, however, it is determined that such shall be enlisted, they should be formed into separate Companies, and not mixed up with the Natives of India.

18 &amp; 19.

See replies to these questions in reference to Infantry.

20.

The existing establishment of the Corps is sufficiently strong for the absolute requirements of the Service, but the Sappers are found so useful a body of men that the number of Companies might with advantage be increased.

21.

The Native Infantry Soldiers' time is sufficiently occupied in the performance of duties proper to him. He has always willingly labored upon Military works when his services have been required, but to make Sapper training in a modified shape part of his regular duty, would be exceedingly unpalatable to him.

22.

Yes, when occasion has required, and the work has been done willingly.

23.

On the fair Engineer wants of the Service.

24.

Certainly not, for this reason, that the majority of the European Sappers (vide margin) are at present employed away from their Regiment under Civil Engineers of Divisions, &c.

	Serjeants.	1st Corples.	2nd Corples.
Present for duty.	3	17	4
Not joined.	0	0	4
In Civil employ.	22	6	11
Total.	25	23	29

25.

The existing establishment of 2 Serjeants, 2 Corporals and 2 Second Corporals is ample, provided these men are allowed to remain with their Corps.

26.

I am not aware of advantage from making the dress of the Native Sapper resemble that of the European Infantry.

The Europeans attached to the Sappers have an established working or fatigue dress.\*

\*Jackets, Trowsers and Boots supplied by Government biennially, G. O. G. 12th May 1854, No. 11.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

27. {

 Native Officers.  
 Staff Serjeants.  
 Havildars and  
 Buglers.
 
} with swords.  
 The Privates with Sapper carbine with sword bayonet.

## DRESS AND ARMS.

28. The present dress and arms appear to me to be quite suitable.

29. Unknown.

30. Unknown, but it is believed that a great many of them know a little English.

31. There is a school of instruction in carpentry, brick and tile-making, stone cutting, and other artificer work for Natives.

32. Their qualifications are scarcely sufficiently high to authorize their being classed as skilled Engineer Soldiers.

33. It appears to me highly desirable that the Public Works Department should be altogether separate from that of the Military Corps of Sappers. But I do not advocate establishing a Corps of European Sappers for actual work in this climate, a sufficient number of qualified European Sappers to act as Overseers and Superintendents would quite suffice.

34. Certainly not, unless a large augmentation to the Corps of Engineers takes place, or the existing establishment is restored to Military duty. Under the present system, there are never more than two Engineer Officers attached to the Corps of Sappers, namely, the Commandant and the Adjutant, and scarcely an Engineer Officer in purely Military employ of any sort, the Department of Public Works and various Civil duties absorb nearly the entire body of Engineer Officers.

---

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWAR DIVISION.

2. The same as the Native Infantry of the Line, but with a greater proportion of men of inferior caste.

3. From the same as the men of the Native Infantry.

4. I believe all the menial classes, such as Mehturs, and Dhanooks, have been excluded from the Sappers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5. The Muzbee Seikhs are, I think, excluded, but a Pioneer Corps raised of this class, has done excellent service at Delhi, Lucknow and elsewhere, where our forces have been employed against the Mutineers.
6. I do not know.
7. The same as the Infantry.
8. The same as in the Infantry.
9. The Sappers should be enlisted from as many different classes and countries as possible, each Company being composed of men of a distinct class or country.
10. I don't know for certain; but I believe the form of oath is the same as in the Infantry.
11. I don't know.
12. I don't think oaths are of much use with any description of Natives; but if a form is to be retained, the one in general use in the Native Army is perhaps as well suited to the purpose as any can be.
13. Yes, each Company should be composed wholly and solely of one class.
14. Recruiting parties would, I imagine, prove sufficient, but the recruiting should be carried on with much more care than hitherto; experienced Engineer Officers should be employed in this important duty. The Recruits moreover should, for some period, be considered probationary before being permanently posted to the Corps; the reason of this is, that a man who is a very excellent Soldier, may prove to be a very indifferent Sapper, and it is very necessary to see whether he has the physical endurance, as well as the ready will so necessary to the hard work required of this branch of the Service.
15. No precautions beyond the prescribed mode of registering Recruits appear to me necessary.
16. As far as I know unskilled men only have been enlisted; firstly, because in Hindoostan, from whence the Corps was mainly

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

recruited artizans are physically an inferior description of men, and from their habits are unfitted for Military duties ; and, 2ndly, the rate of pay is not sufficiently remunerative for a really good workman. Artizans may probably be derived from the Seikh and Pathan classes, who are fitted in every respect for the Service.

17.

I don't recommend the introduction of foreign races. I believe they would cause a vast deal of expence and trouble to the Government, and much more so than they would be worth.

18.

*Vide* foregoing.

19.

*Vide* foregoing.

20.

The Hindoostanee Sappers have wonderful endurance, much more so than from their physical appearance, any one would think ; they have, to the best of my belief, never failed at their work.

21.

No reason whatever ; on the contrary, every Infantry Regiment should be required to go through a regular course of training, and frequently exercised in digging trenches, &c., and the sooner the practice is commenced, the better ; when the organization of the Corps of Sappers is completed, it might perhaps be advisable to invariably locate one or two Infantry Regiments at the Head Quarters of the Corps, in order that Officers and men might undergo a systematical course of training in the execution of field-works, and any thing connected with this important duty.

22.

None can be said to be really accustomed to employment in the construction of field-works, nor have the Bengal Sepoys ever worked willingly when required to do so ; the excessive laxity of discipline in the Native Army, and the want of training and practice of the men in this duty, were perhaps the main causes for their unwilling performance of it. This evil will be perpetuated in the new Native Army, unless steps are at once taken for remedying it.

23.

I think the number of Sapper Soldiers has never been adequate to the requirements of the Service ; independent of the Line working or not, a body of not less than 3,000 men should invariably be kept up, whether there be war or peace ; Sappers are always a useful body of men, and ever in requisition.

24.

Yes, I believe the present complement of European Non-Commissioned Officers has been found sufficient, but it might be

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

advisable to increase their number if the Native Commissioned grades are abolished.

**25.**

I would recommend no Europeans under the rank of Serjeant being attached to the Native Companies of Sappers, and these should be especially selected with reference to their steadiness of conduct.

**26.**

The dress ought to be assimilated to that of the Line, as far as can be consistent with the duty of a Sapper. From their working habits and detached duties, Sappers are always apt to lose their smartness and Soldier-like appearance. I think then a dress that enforces cleanliness and respectability in appearance most desirable, and although the dress is rarely worn when at work, they should not be deprived of it.

I attach great importance to the dress of a Native Soldier, as having a favorable influence on his habits and character generally.

**27.**

With carbines and swords.

**28.**

They might be armed with advantage with the two-grooved rifle, and their dress, as above mentioned, should be assimilated to that of the Infantry, each Company (if of a distinct class) being allowed to wear their own peculiar form of head dress, although the material as regards texture and color of cloth should be uniform throughout the Corps.

**29.**

I don't know.

**30.**

None. A very few indeed were sometimes found attempting to learn the English language, many could read English figures, and some draw plans roughly, it is said that there is an evident anxiety among the Native Sappers to learn.

**31.**

I believe none.

**31.**

Certainly not.

**32.**

Yes, I should recommend a small Battalion of about 5 or 600 men fully Officered from Officers of the Engineers; and while on the subject of European Sappers, I should recommend that parties from all European Infantry Corps, under Commissioned Officers, should be attached to the Head Quarters of the Sappers

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

and Miners for the purpose of undergoing a course of instruction in Field Engineering, these on rejoining their Regimental Head Quarters would furnish instructors for the remainder of the Corps; instruction in this very important branch of Military duty is, strange to say, wholly neglected in the British Army.

34.

Not as at present constituted, but an increase of European Engineer Officers is essentially necessary.

---

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., POLITICAL SUPERINTENDENT AND COMMANDANT ON THE FIELD, UPPER SCINDE.

## BOMBAY ARMY.

33.

UNDOUBTEDLY there should be a Corps of European Sappers and Miners belonging to the Army of each Presidency. Such Corps should be at least eight hundred (800) strong, divided into ten Companies, fully Officered by Regular Engineer Officers, a Captain and two Subalterns to each Company, with Field Officers and Staff as usual.

34.

No; it assuredly could not do so on its present strength.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL H. D. HARNESS, COMMANDING ROYAL ENGINEERS.

*Calcutta 10th August 1858.*

Sir,

HAVING received a number of printed queries, relating to the Sappers and Miners of the Bengal Army, without any memorandum explanatory of the object with which they have been forwarded to me, I consider it right to address to you, for the information of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, the remarks which their perusal has induced me to make.

The queries, with one or two exceptions, can only be properly replied to by persons who have carried on works with the natives of the country, and have employed the Native Sappers, and it is therefore useless for me to offer answers to them. But a general question occurs to me, which ought perhaps to be discussed as a preliminary to the discussion of the queries, and to this I think it right to direct attention.

Does the Indian Army require Sappers or Miners, or other special Military working Corps, and if it does, what are to be the duties of such Corps?

The reasons which cause Corps of Sappers and of Miners, or of Sappers and Miners conjoined, to be added to each of the National Armies of the Continent of Europe, are not applicable to India. No one of those Armies can become engaged in war, without being almost immediately involved in the attack or the defence of some important fortress, during which a number of men trained to the execution of peculiar descriptions of Military work will be required; and the war might involve a succession of such sieges.

The maintenance of the fortresses belonging to the nations of the European Continent, affording, during peace, a sufficiency of purely Military work for Soldiers thus trained, their skill and discipline are preserved without difficulty.

The Engineer Soldiers, formerly known as the Sappers and Miners of the British Army, are trained for the same duties in war as those of the Sappers and Miners, and the Pontooneers of Continental Armies, and the fortifications of our foreign possessions are sufficiently extensive to afford employment on Military works for a large number, without such dispersion as would endanger their Military habits and discipline.

But the great variety of circumstances met with in our Colonies and Dependencies, affect in a most important degree the duties of these men, and many of them acquire an amount of knowledge and intelligence which could hardly result from such employment on the duties of the Sappers of other nations.

Thus I have met with no less than three Civil Engineers in charge of difficult works in England and Ireland, whose training had been received in our Corps of Sappers and Miners. The Corps is now therefore regarded as a body from which the Engineer Officer can derive an efficient Field and Office Staff, and its designation has been very properly changed to Engineers.

There is nothing analogous to either of these cases in the position of our Army in India.

It appears so improbable that any extensive siege operations of the character above referred to, can be required from it, as to render it necessary to train a body of Native Soldiers to those peculiar processes which are only adopted at sieges; nor are those fortresses in India in which to employ such Soldiers on Military works, and it is hardly possible to suppose that the Native Sappers could ever be able to attain in the Indian Army, by being competent to supply the Field and Office Staff of the Engineer Officer.

If a working Corps be formed to supply laborers to an Army, instead of supplying only skilled artificers, and the superintendents of working parties furnished by the Battalions of that Army, it should be termed a Corps of Pioneers. For a large body of Pioneers, or organized workmen, there will probably be employment in India during peace and war, all work of every description in the vicinity of a Camp, or Cantonments, which they were competent to perform, might be executed by them. They might be Officered from the ranks of the European Sappers or Regiments, and without being attached exclusively to either of the departments of the Army, supply working parties to the Commanding Officer of Engineers, or to the Quarter Master General, on the requisition of those Officers.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I think also that a distinct Corps of Pontooners could be advantageously added to the Indian Army, if the floating bridges required during peace, were under the charge of such a Corps, its efficiency might be easily maintained. It is probable that for a great number of years the communications of this country will be more or less dependent on bridges of that description, and that under this arrangement the character of those bridges would be eventually improved, and the interval during which their use is interrupted, be diminished.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. HENDERSON, MADRAS ENGINEERS,—CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

## MADRAS ARMY.

1.

THE Corps of Madras Sappers and Miners is constituted of Native Rank and File, Non-Commissioned and Commissioned Officers, in the same manner as the Regiments of Native Infantry of the same Army, with the addition of three or four European Non-Commissioned Officers to each Company. The Commanding Officer and Adjutant of the Corps belong to the Corps of Engineers, the remaining Officers are taken from the Infantry, although occasionally one or two young Engineer Officers under two years standing are appointed to do duty with the Sappers and Miners as a temporary measure, previous to their being admitted into the Department of Public Works.

2.

The Native Sappers and Miners are of nearly all the races, tribes and castes found within the Madras Presidency. The greatest number belong to the Hindoo race, divided into the castes of Gentoos, Malabars, Canause, Panahs, Pullers, &c., These again are sub-divided into Chucklers, Dhoopees, Cooks, Potters, Brick-makers, and Layers, and even Barbers. A considerable number of the men are Roman Catholic Christians, and in the whole Corps there are about 50 or 60 Mahomedans.

3.

The men are drawn from all parts of the Madras Presidency, but chiefly from the Northern and Southern Divisions of the Madras Army.

4.

None have been excluded, but the lower castes have been preferred, as they make the best Soldiers and the most willing workmen.

5.

As above stated, none are excluded, but on account of the hard work to which the men are exposed, the Service is not popular

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

with either the Mahratta or Masalah races, each of which is capable of furnishing good men for the Sappers and Miners.

6.

Recruiting parties are sent out to all parts of the Presidency, and though on account of the prevailing idea of the hard service exacted from the Corps, some difficulty is experienced in procuring Recruits, yet after they have joined the Corps, very few men, whether good or bad characters, ask for their discharge.

7.

I am not aware of any registry being made before the Local Authorities of Districts on the enlistment of Recruits, but I believe a certificate has to be applied for from the first Medical Officer met with, as to the Recruit's physical fitness for the duties of a Sapper Soldier.

8.

A certificate of the relationship of the Recruit to one of the families of the Sepoys, and a guarantee for his past and future good conduct, are generally given by his friends to the Havildar Major. I know not if this is passed on to the Adjutant.

9.

The most of the men are already drawn from the best castes for working, and I am of opinion that no alteration either in the regulations or practice relative to the races, tribes, or castes now composing the Corps is advisable, unless it should be to exclude Mahomedans from it, who are generally bad workmen, being weak and lazy from the effects of their own excesses.

10.

I believe an oath is administered to the Native Christian Soldiers only, and to all others merely a declaration which a badly disposed man would not consider binding.

I know not the words used in either case.

11.

Since 1846, I believe, but here I may be in error.

12.

I consider that a Sepoy values nothing so much as an oath, and that it certainly ought never to be given up. It has been suggested to me by a Native Officer of Sappers that, if a Sepoy without reference to his caste should be sworn upon a pan leaf overspread with salt, he will never break his oath, for fear of the judgment that he imagines would follow. This may be prejudice on the part of the Native Officer, but I believe an oath sworn by a Native on the head of his parent, is never broken. I think the most binding form of oath ought to be used in the Army.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

13.

The Companies ought to be composite as at present, unless they are Christians, when they might be homogeneous. I do not think the proportion of the different classes of much importance, provided care be taken to prevent any one class from greatly preponderating (unless they should be Christians) either in number or influence over the others.

14.

As I understand that very few Recruits present themselves at Head Quarters, I would continue the agency alluded to in paragraph 6, and in order to remove any apprehension from the minds of the people it might be useful that a paper should be drawn up, describing the pay, privileges and duties of a Sapper Soldier, and circulated in the Districts through the Magistrate.

15.

The name of the Recruit, his family and birth-place should in all cases be registered before the chief Local Authority, whether Civil or Military.

16.

At the present rate of pay it is not to be expected that good tradesmen can be procured, but sometimes brick-layers, tile-makers and potters are enlisted, and if the working pay were increased more of such skilled labour would be procurable. The enlisting of artificers and tradesmen is highly necessary in the Sappers and Miners, as they are frequently sent to new countries where there are no skilled workmen to assist them in the performance of their duties. In such cases the Sappers must either do the work themselves, or they must instruct the people of the country; hence the necessity of their being previously well instructed themselves. Wherever the Sappers are called upon to serve, their qualifications as tradesmen are sure to be in request. At present the rates of working pay for a Sapper Soldier are 1½ anna, 2½ anna and 3 annas per diem, according to class, but this, though added to the pay of a Soldier, is not sufficient inducement to a tradesman to quit his home and endure all the hardships of a Sapper's life.

17.

I do not consider that the natives of any tropical climate would excel the Madras Sappers in the performance of the duties required from the Corps.

18.

Were it ever necessary to have recourse to other tropical climates for procuring Engineer Soldiers, I should recommend that they be brought either from Africa or the West Indies.

19.

In the case just alluded to, I should think it would be necessary to employ European Officers in recruiting the men.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

20.

Certainly not. In time of peace even, the men are in such great request for field service for road-making in new countries and for public works generally, that they are never sufficiently long at Head Quarters to learn their duties. With an Army and especially during a siege there never have been sufficient Sappers in the field for the duties required from them. In the field I have known one Company split up into twelve Detachments, so much were the services of such useful men in request to aid in carrying out the different projects of the Officers charged with the establishment of British power in a new country. Were the numbers of the Corps increased, their training would be higher, and their usefulness to the State would be augmented in proportion.

21.

As the Native Troops of the Line have already more work to do in India than European Troops in their own climate, I consider that any attempt to add to the duties of an Infantry Soldier would make the Service very unpopular. The Army ought to be increased before additional duties are imposed upon it generally, but where the duties are light at a large Station, and the number of reliefs more than usual, the training of the men in the duties of a Sapper might be carried out in lieu of other occupation; such training is highly desirable, as the Infantry Soldier would thereby become more useful and efficient when his services are required in the trenches.

22.

The Native Infantry Soldier is accustomed to work in the trenches during sieges, and I believe the duty is generally performed willingly, though for want of training the works are not done either so rapidly or efficiently as is desirable.

23.

It is presumed that men of the Line must always be employed in siege operations, and therefore any recommendation for an increase to the Sappers is quite irrespective of the efficiency of the Line in siege and field-work.

24.

If the European Non-Commissioned Officers are always liable to be removed from the Corps for employment in the Public Works Department, as is the case at present, it is highly desirable that they should at once be largely increased. But it is equally desirable that these men should be selected for the Sappers in England, and there trained thoroughly for their duties. Many men lately transferred from the Line to the Sappers are totally unqualified for their new duties.

25.

The Europeans were formerly attached to Companies in the proportion of two to each, but probably on account of the clashing

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

of authority between the Commissioned Natives and Non-Commissioned Europeans, the latter have lately been taken from the Companies and placed immediately under the Adjutant. If the Europeans were *permanently* posted to the Corps, I should think six Non-Commissioned sufficient to each Company, *viz*, 2 Sergeants and 4 Corporals.

26.

The present dress is highly approved by the men, with the exception of the basket-work turban, which is a highly objectionable article. The working dress should be loose, of dark color, and shaped like a tunic. Upon the whole the men are proud of being dressed like Europeans, but they object to wear a peak to their cap. In marching and work they prefer sandals, which are easily removed for crossing streams, &c., but for parade and drill short boots would have a better appearance, and the men would, I believe, prefer them.

27.

With a Sapper carbine and a sword that fixes in as a bayonet.

28.

*Vide Supra.*

29.

Taking a Company of men to be 105 strong, about 70 of these can read and write their own vernacular, so as to correspond and read books for their own amusement, 20 more can merely sign their names, and the remaining 15 are totally uninstructed.

30.

About 50 men in the Regiment can speak English intelligibly. About  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd of the Regiment can understand simple orders in English. Probably 20 can read English printed books, and about 4 or 5 can write a very intelligible letter in English. I beg to give these numbers subject to correction.

31.

I believe there is a very good school and school master attached to the Corps. There is also a Survey and Plan-drawing school under a European Survey instructor.

32.

Those few who have been at the Head Quarters long enough to go through the prescribed course of instruction, may be classed as skilled Engineer Soldiers, but very few possess this advantage, as sufficient opportunity for instruction is not allowed to the Corps from the services of the men being so much in request at out stations, and particularly in Burmah, where there are now four Companies engaged in road-making.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**33.**

I am of opinion that such a Corps of European Sappers as is here proposed, would be of infinite service to Government, and give invaluable aid in the improvement of the country. Were the Corps to be five hundred-strong, a portion of them could be always at Head Quarters, and there they would aid in instructing the Native Sappers, whilst during peace the men would be employed chiefly in the Public Works Department. In time of war any number of them that might be considered necessary could be sent into the field to assist the Engineer in Military operations. In raising such a Corps care should be taken to enlist as many men as possible who have been brought up to the trades most useful to the Public Works Department. The great want in India is practical men for carrying out public improvements, and therefore such a Corps would supply a desideratum that has been felt by Engineer Officers both in time of peace and war ever since this Corps has been embodied.

**34.**

As the Corps of Madras Engineers is unable to Officer the Native Sappers and Miners now supposed to be attached to it, of course it could not supply the Officers required for a European Corps of Sappers and Miners.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. BAIRD SMITH, C. B. OF ENGINEERS, MINT MASTER.

BENGAL ARMY.

**1 to 15.**

Questions that require reference to Regimental Records, or like special information, I have passed over.

**16.**

I believe the recruiting of Sappers and Miners has hitherto been entirely from among unskilled men, and that to ensure the services of artificers, much higher rates of pay would be necessary than are now given; rates approximating to those paid in Civil establishments.

**17.**

Yes, placing them in separate Companies.

**18.**

Goorkhas would make capital Engineer Soldiers. I never saw men work more willingly or better with spade and bill-hook than the men of the Sirmoor Battalion did at Delhi. Malays and some African races have capacities both for labor and war which might be turned to account.

**19.**

No reply.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**20.**

There are practically no Native Engineer Soldiers at present. The men that are now called Sappers and Miners are so almost by name only, being in a very large proportion raw and very indifferent Recruits. They are not sufficient for the requirements of field service.

**21.**

None other than that the Bengal Army has hitherto been allowed to evade one of the essential duties of Soldiers, and the precedent may be powerful. I am aware of no other cause that should prevent Soldiers being trained to trench work.

The Seikhs do it willingly enough.

**22.**

No; and in my experience the work has never been done willingly when required on emergencies. The Officers, however, have been generally quite as bad as the men.

**23.**

My opinion on this point is materially influenced by the fact that main reliance in siege or field works must be on the personnel of the Engineer Department, and such a reliance is a necessity when the Infantry of the Line wont work.

**24.**

I think they have not. It is difficult to reply to such a question as this, when I am of opinion that an entire change in the organization of the Engineer Department is desirable to make it effective for field service.

**25.**

I would not attach them to Companies of Native Sappers at all, but organize them in separate Companies.

**26.**

I never saw any dress worse suited for working men than the old dress of the Sappers and Miners. I have seen a man drop his ram-rod, and be wholly unable to stoop to pick it up, having to call a lad to help him. I am quite ignorant of any advantages that dress had.

**27.**

No reply.

**28.**

With loose tunics and trowsers of Khakee black belts;—for arms the present carbine and sword.

**29 & 31.**

No reply.

**32.**

Assuredly not at present.

**33.**

A Corps of European Engineer Soldiers would be most desirable. I think 5 Companies of 80, or 4 of 100, if thought better, would, I believe, be sufficient. A Commandant, Second in

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Command, Adjutant and Quarter-Master, with a Second Captain and Subaltern for each Company, would suffice, being 12 Officers in all, or 14, if 5 Companies are formed.

**34.**

Not as at present drawn upon.

## MEMORANDUM.

THE experience of the siege works during the Mutinies has brought out prominently some facts bearing on the questions submitted in this paper, which seem worthy of notice. A very material part of the siege works both at Delhi and Lucknow was executed by men who, under the name of Pioneers, and with a rude organization, were in fact fair samples of the working population of the country. Those of them brought from Roorkee, about 600 in number, were almost exclusively men of the Bildar class from the Province of Oude, their good conduct from the commencement of the Mutinies was uniform; the total number of the class in the immediate vicinity of Roorkee was between 2,000 and 3,000, yet not the slightest disturbance occurred among them; about 200 of them were regularly drilled and armed with carbines, showing great aptitude for discipline and desire for employment as Soldiers. Their courage under heavy fire and in trying circumstances was shown on dozens of occasions in the trenches, and they seem to me to be a material for Engineer Soldiers well worthy of the attention of Government. They have great capacity for work, a ready apprehension of mechanical details in works, and at any rate a passive courage of no mean order.

My conception of the personnel of the Engineer Department of the Indian Army is—

*1st.* A small Corps of European Engineer Soldiers trained to the highest degree of professional efficiency, and competent to act as Superintendents of labor in all forms of Military works.

*2nd.* A larger Corps of Pioneers recruited from the ordinary laboring classes trained to as high a degree of skill in the operative details of Military works as they can attain to. To be commanded by a selected Officer from among the Warrant or Non-Commissioned Officers of the Engineer Department, who have received unattached Commissions, to be organized in Divisions of 120 men each, with due proportion of Native Officers or Supervisors; each Division to be commanded by a Warrant Officer and a Serjeant Overseer to be attached to each sub-division. An Adjutant and Quarter Master being Warrant Officers to form the Staff. All the Europeans to be men accustomed to deal with native workmen and to have pay and prospects of promotion on the same standards as their fellows in the Department Public Works. The Corps to be considered one for Army works, not for fighting, and to be armed and drilled accordingly.

*3rd.* A small body of native artificers, such as are always required in Engineer Parks, and are often extremely difficult to procure when most wanted. An Engineer Store Depôt or Arsenal to be established at Roorkee, and the Corps of Artificers to be employed therein, a proportion of European Supervisors to be attached to the body, and the whole to be commanded by the Engineer Officer in charge of the Engineer Arsenal or Depôt.

I do not attempt to work out the details of this organization here, but were they desired, it would not be difficult to do so both as concerns the personnel and material of the Service.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I have myself no anxiety as to the consequences of instructing our Native Engineer Soldiers as thoroughly as their capacities will permit in Military works. We have seen the worst of such a course, in the late troubles, and though trained Sappers may have occasionally added to our difficulties and losses when their instruction was turned against us, the effect is infinitesimally small when compared with what the same class of men have done for us during the long period they have been employed under European supervision in siege operations. They are excellent tools, but are little to be feared as opponents.

(Signed) R. BAIRD SMITH, LIEUT.-COLONEL,

*Engineers.*

CALCUTTA,  
13th November 1858. }

CAPTAIN JENKINS JONES, BOMBAY ENGINEERS, COMMANDING SAPPERS AND MINERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

EUROPEANS as follows: 1 Sub-Conductor, 1 Serjeant Major, 1 Quarter Master Serjeant, 10 Serjeants, 10 Corporals, 10 Second Corporals.

Total number of Europeans..... 33

NATIVES.

Five Companies, each consisting of

Soubadar.	Jemadar.	Havildars.	Naicks.	Buglers.	Privates.	Total.
1	1	4	8	2	100	116

Total number of Natives,..... 580

Grand Total..... 613

2.

Inhabitants of India, Jews, Mussulmans and Hindoos, of the following castes and denominations, *namely* :—

“Brahmin, Chutree, Byes and Gosain, Ahier, Soad, Kooree, Coonbee, Tellee, Moorai, Blytea, Tambooley, Gunderiah, Soonar, Ghat, Nas, Coomar, Lohar, Kayet, Bhaut, Dhobee, Passee, Barree, Bhoojwa, Kalwar, Cochee, Moochee, Mallee, Purwarree, Mharatta, Commattee, Durzee, Coolee, Bundaree, Huggain, Wanjaree, Barood, Bunya, Telunga Bunya, Goidlee Bhoe, Sootar, Panjanah, Naik, Jungum, Ramorsee, and Thackin.”

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

3.

Scind, Hindoostan\*, Bengal, Guzerat, Candeish, Deccan, Concan, Saidnut, Warred, Carnatic, Madras, Mysore, Malabar.

4.

No.

5.

None.

6.

Native Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and Privates of the Corps.

7.

Each Recruit after enlistment is first taken to the Patell in whose jurisdiction the village he belongs to is situated, in order that the Patell may enquire and verify that his name, caste, parentage and residence have been duly stated, lists with the signatures of the Patell and Coolcarnee will be shown to the District Officer, that he may satisfy himself and record that the returns are formal and correct. A nominal roll will then be prepared by the District Officer and handed to the Recruiting Officer for delivery to the Commanding Officer of the Regiment.

8.

When men are enlisted in Cantonments they are usually brought forward by Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers or Privates of the Corps ; and every possible enquiry is instituted as to their antecedents, by the Commanding Officer.

9.

I am not aware of any alterations which would answer this purpose.

10.

I swear in presence of Almighty God that I will never desert my Regiment, that I will obey every order of my Officers, to the best of my ability ; that I will go wherever I am ordered, whether it be in India or in a Foreign country, and that I will act in every particular as becomes a good Soldier and faithful servant of Government, and should I in any way commit an offence as regards any point of my duty, that I will submit to whatever punishments are laid down in the Articles of War which have been read before me.

11.

For thirteen (13) years.

12.

I cannot suggest any improvement in the matter of the oath. I am of opinion that no form of oath which could be drawn out,

\* Note.—Under the term of Hindoostan are included North-Western Provinces, Oude and Central India.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

would bind a really bad disposed man. In some cases a small security might be taken when practicable.

**13.**

Composite. The different classes should be so mixed as to prevent any one class having a preponderance of influence in the Company, consequently low castes ought to have *superiority* in number, to compensate for their *inferiority* in social position.

In a Company, 116 strong, say 16 Mussulmans and 100 Hindoos, (25 men of high caste and the remainder of mixed or low castes\*).

**14.**

A selected European Officer accompanied by intelligent Non-Commissioned Officers and men of his own selection belonging to the District whence Recruits are to be obtained.

**15.**

The present system would answer all purposes, if properly carried out by an European Officer.

**16.**

From unskilled men, the pay of a Private not being a sufficient inducement for a good artificer to enlist.

For about *double* the present pay of a Sapper, good artificers might be enlisted.

I should propose the following proportion of artificers per Company, each of whom to receive "an extra artificer allowance" of about Rupees (7) seven per mensem, namely,—

Establishment of artificers per Company.

4 Goundiss	.....	.....	(Masons)
4 Carpenters	.....	.....	(Sootars.)
4 Lohars,	.....	.....	(Smiths.)

These men would be found extremely useful in instructing the men of the Corps in their respective callings.

**17.**

I should prefer the natives of India, who have an interest in the country, and whose families are dependent on us, for our Army in India. The natives of other tropical countries would be only mercenaries for a long time to come. If foreign aid of this kind is necessary, the Regiment should be organized separately. There

---

\* Note.—As many Jews as can be obtained.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

can be no objection to enlist individual foreigners who may at any time offer themselves for service.

18.

Africa and the countries adjacent to Persia.

19.

European Officers assisted by the natives of the country in which the recruiting is to take place.

20.

Certainly not. Instead of *five* Native Companies, there ought to be at least *seven* Companies, exclusive of an Adjutant's Detachment to be about the strength of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  Companies.

21.

I am not aware of any reason why it should not be imperative to all Officers commanding Native Corps to devote a certain portion (say two months) each year in throwing up trenches, batteries and ordinary field-works, the more scientific work being left to the Sappers. Let two or more Officers from every Regiment in the Service attend a course of instruction at the Sapper Head Quarters, and when passed to return to their Regiments, as "*Instructors of field-works*," or let three or four Regiments attend in rotation every year at the Sapper Head Quarters for instruction.

22.

Yes; for instance at Bushire the four Rifles and Belooch Battalion were employed in the trenches. The latter Corps worked the best.

23.

Based purely on the fair Engineer wants of the Service, irrespective of the efficiency of the Line in field-works.

If Line Troops were not to be employed in trench-work, at least *six* times the number of Sappers I have proposed would be required in order to carry on operations against any respectable foreign power.

24.

No, it would be very desirable to do away with the present system of attaching six European Non-Commissioned Officers to each Native Company, and instead, to substitute a Corps of European Sappers and Miners as proposed in question 33.

25.

As pointed out in the previous question it would, in my opinion, be preferable to have two distinct Corps, a European and Native, as the European Non-Commissioned Officers clash with the Native Officers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

26.

I think that their dress ought to be similar to that of the European Sappers, as they belong to the same Corps.

27.

Two-grooved rifles

28.

Armed with the Lancaster carbine ; full dress to be assimilated to that of the European Sappers of Her Majesty's Service to be worn in Cantonments on guard and for parades. Working dress\* to be worn on the Line of march in the field and for field-works, viz : cane hunting cap (similar to those made at Tanna) with a turban, loose tunic and Zouave trowsers made of some cheap and serviceable material, and similar in colour to the uniform of the Peshawur Guides.

29.

One-third.

30.

One-thirtieth.

31.

Yes, every Recruit is obliged to attend school for a period of one year. The Non-Commissioned Officers are ordered to attend school for instructions in English, Arithmetic, field works, &c., when their other duties do not interfere with their so doing, all the Sepoys are encouraged to do the same. They receive half day's working pay for a daily attendance of three hours, and a day's pay for five hours.

32.

Not as well skilled as is desirable. The strength of the Corps being far too small for the requirements of the Service ; it is of necessity too much broken up into Detachments for instruction being properly carried out.

33.

Yes, it would be very desirable to have a European Corps of Bombay Engineers of the following strength, viz :—

3 Companies, each consisting of

Color Sergeant.	Sergeants.	Corporals.	2nd Corporals.	Buglers.	Privates.	Total.
1	5	6	6	2	100	120

Total number of Europeans ... 360

\*To be worn by both European and Native.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

This to be exclusive of the requisite Non-Commissioned Staff. These Companies to be Officered from the Corps of Bombay Engineers, at the rate of four Officers to each Company. Total of twelve Officers.

**34.**

Not at the present strength of the Corps, namely, three Battalions. The increase of one more Battalion which is equivalent to an addition of 27 Officers, would enable the Corps to furnish the requisite number of Officers, both for Military and Civil employments.

## CAPTAIN W. FREDERICK MARRIOTT, BOMBAY ENGINEERS.

*Employed with the Sappers and Miners from 1838 to 1843, both years inclusive.*

## BOMBAY ARMY.

**1.**

There are five Companies of Natives, and a body of Europeans, of the aggregate strength noted in the margin. The number of European Commissioned Officers varies, consisting of a Commanding Officer and Adjutant, and the young Engineer Officers

EUROPEANS.	NATIVES.
1 Warrant Officer,	1 Subadar Major,
1 Sergeant Major,	4 Subadars,
1 Quarter Master Sergeant,	5 Jamadars,
10 Sergeants,	5 Color Havildars,
10 Corporals,	15 Havildars,
10 Second Corporals.	1 Bugle Major,
	9 Buglers,
	40 Naicks,
	500 Privates,
	11 Bheesties,
	12 Boys.

on their first arrival in the country. The European body can scarcely be regarded as an essential portion of the Corps. They are continually drafted off to the Public Works Department, and the attachment of them to the Head Quarters of the Sappers and Miners is rather a convenient disposal of them, than an essential part of the Military organization.

**2.**

When I was with the Corps a large portion of the 1st Company which had always been Sappers, were Hindoostanias. The remaining three Companies (there were then but four in all) have been enlisted as Pioneers, and were nearly all enlisted in the Decan and Concan within this Presidency.

**3.**

See reply to previous question.

**4.**

No.

**5.**

No.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

6. Men on furlough and men detached for the purpose.
7. None, so far as I know.
8. None, so far as I know.
9. I am not certain of what may be the existing practise; our best men in former days, and those who gave least trouble about caste, were the Hindoostanies. But I think any advantages of aptitude out-weighed by the disadvantages of exclusiveness relatively to caste, and would make no regulation relative to race, tribe, or caste.
10. I forget.
11. I don't know.
12. I think any oath or form of covenant useless. The bond an Asiatic best understands, whether he practises it or not, is personal fidelity.
13. I would mix in any proportion excepting such as would signify or tend to exclusiveness.
14. Men on furlough. Recruiting parties, in fact the ordinary agency.
15. I know of no need for any, excepting such as may be necessary temporarily in consequence of the late Mutinies.
16. It has hitherto been from unskilled men. I certainly doubt the practicability, to any considerable extent, of enlisting artificers. The demand for such men in Civil employ is so great, that I see no adequate inducement to such an uncustomary proceeding. But we never found the highest caste men unwilling to learn any thing. We taught them rope-making, which, as a caste employment, holds a very low position.
- If considerable additional pay attended ability to exercise some handicraft, and if it were treated as a Military qualification, like basket work in making gabions, rowing in pontooning and digging in trench work, I should expect success in gradually introducing a large number of skilled laborers. I think the sons of the Sepoys would soon be sent to learn in the Regimental work-shops.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**17. to 19.** Wholly inexpedient in my opinion. The European Soldiers, the foreigners, are not so in relation to the governing power. They are here in an honorable, and so to speak, in a natural position, and great as probably the antipathy is between the Natives and European Soldiery, I do not doubt that however indistinctly and unconsciously, the fact that the English Soldiery are not mere foreign mercenaries, is felt and has its due influence. But I can conceive nothing more galling or hateful to a people than the presence of a body of Soldiers not born, nor naturalized subjects of the ruling power, but foreigners without the pretence of any legitimate sympathy, with either the governing or subject race, much might be said of the danger to the employers who thus recognize the subjection of the moral relations of mankind to purchase. One might write a long essay on the theme of question 17, but it will suffice here to record my hearty conviction that whatever be expedient this is inexpedient.

**20.**

I should say, certainly not, so long as so little reliance can be placed upon the services of the Line for trench-work in the field.

**21.**

I conceive that there is no sufficient reason why all Infantry should not be trained to much which is now confined to Engineer Soldiers. I cannot say there is not "any reason," because there is the reason of traditionary usage against it, and the large amount of guard duty which, under the present system, is required of the Infantry. The question may be stated conversely, and although it may seem to come to the same thing, the force of habit causes great difference. The question might be put,—“Is there any reason why the Sappers, if increased in numbers, should not fulfil all the purposes of as many Infantry?” To this I should answer,—“No reason, excepting that the guard duty of Infantry is too frequent to allow adequate instruction as Sappers.” In making this suggestion, I being an Engineer Officer, perhaps lay myself open to the proverb,—“The Tanner said there is nothing like leather,” but I believe my remarks tend as much to supplant Engineer Officers by Infantry Officers as the converse.

**22.**

No, not *accustomed* in any sense.

**23.**

Yes, on the inaptitude of the Native Infantry. See reply to question 20.

**24.**

The European Sappers are a distinct body as far as they can be regarded as a body of Sappers at all (see my reply to question 1).



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

I do not think any European should be attached to the Native Companies (excepting of course European Commissioned Officers), as respects European Sappers distinct from the Corps of Native Sappers, I shall reply under question 33.

**25.**

None. The unsuitable relations or rather the impossibility of establishing any relation between the Non-Commissioned European and Commissioned Native is the principal amongst many objections.

**26.**

It does not resemble it more closely than the dress of the Native Infantry does. I think that similarity of dress probably tends to a common "esprit," but I do not pretend to attach much importance to it.

**27.**

With rifles.

**28.**

As at present in essentials. I mean that it is essential that Engineer Soldiers be as capable of self-defence as Infantry, that all such Corps as our former Pioneers being imperfectly armed, and requiring to be protected by Infantry, are merely very expensive bodies of laborers; highly effective bodies of laborers, it is true, but with an unnecessarily expensive organization.

**29.**

I do not know.

**30.**

I do not know.

**31.**

Some of the men have some schooling. I do not know the number which attend school on the scope of the teaching.

**32.**

Yes.

**33.**

I will take the latter part of the question *first*, whether it be advisable to have, in addition to the Native Sappers, a Corps of European Sappers, and if so, of what strength and how Officered?

Considering the large proportion of European Troops which we shall probably have in future, and the position of accidental superiority and authority which a Sapper supervising and directing men of the Line in defensive works and field operations necessarily assumes, I think a body of European Sappers advisable. I think that they should be trained in England to all the

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ordinary operations, principally because the climate of India is unfavorable to such hard work as a properly trained Engineer Soldier ought, once, to go through. I see no reason why Royal Engineer Soldiers should not be sent out for the purpose.

On the question of the necessary number I am not prepared to give a precise opinion, but as they would principally be used for directing works, the numbers would be small.

They should be Officered by Engineer Officers of the Royal Engineers, (if Royal Engineer Soldiers).

In relation to the question of maintaining a Corps of European Sappers, in order to meet the demand for skilled subordinates in the Public Works Department, there are doubtless certain advantages attendant on the Military character of these men. On the other hand if there is to be a really Military Corps of Engineer Soldiers, there is a great disadvantage in a system under which the best men are always expecting and desiring to leave the Corps. I do not regard the supply of the Department by Military men as essentially necessary.

The one advantage of the substantive Military position of the public works subordinate is the better control which attends the power of remanding the man to his Corps, and the habit of subordination and obedience. English notions of personal freedom lead to the supposition that a civil subordinate, if he perform his work, and do not cheat the Government, is subject to no other control than the law of the land provides. I attach the greatest importance to the maintenance of the idea, that the meanest Officer in the Government service is a representative of Government, and as responsible to Government for character and general conduct, as for the performance of his special duties; nevertheless, I would maintain that control and responsibility, by carrying the best principles of Military organization into the departmental system, rather than by actually maintaining the Military relation, with all its technicalities, good and bad. In other words, whilst I think the present mode of supply of European Overseers to the Public Works Department good, so long as the Corps of European Sappers, as a Military body, is a mere name and form. I would abandon it on the determination to maintain an effective Corps of European Engineer Soldiers.

**34.**

Yes. But of course at the expense of the Public Works Department, which would require to be supplied otherwise.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT OF BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

**1.**

Four Companies of Native Sappers and Miners are attached to the Bombay Army. These Companies are organized on the system laid down by General Tasley in the year 1841, of which the general principles may be thus described; the Native Sappers are essentially a working Corps; but they are armed and drilled as Infantry; and qualified to act as such, if necessary. They are instructed and practised also in the duties of Field Engineering, such as making gabions, fascines, &c., the practical operations of a siege, such as the construction of parallels and approaches, Sapping and Mining, &c., and in the construction of Military Bridges, and Pontooning.

When fully drilled as Soldiers and instructed in the duty of Field Engineers, the Native Sappers are detached for employment on public works of permanent utility; but unless the exigencies of the Service require it, they are not to be broken up into small Detachments. When practicable, they are detached in entire Companies, and each Company is periodically, brought back to Head Quarters to renew the courses of instruction and revive discipline.

A few Europeans are attached to the Sapper Companies; they are of a superior class, educated at Chatham, and specially appointed. They are all Non-Commissioned Officers, and act as supervisors and instructors.

**2.**

Out of 550 men, 300 are Mahrattas from the Concan and Deccan, and 225 are from Hindoostan. 500 are Hindoos, and 50 are Mussulmans.

**3.**

Answered above.

**4.**

None.

**5.**

Not that I am aware of.

**6 to 15.**

The answers given in former Sections of the queries, are equally applicable here.

**16.**

The system of the Royal Sappers is that adopted in the Corps of Bombay Sappers, in which recruits who are artizans or conversant with some trade or special kind of labor, are enlisted,

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

when such recruits are to be had. But the high price which labor, and especially skilled labor, bears in the Bombay territories, renders it difficult to obtain on the pay of Soldiers, men with such previous qualifications.

17.

I doubt both the practicability and the expediency of such enlistment. I do not know from what tropical countries, Engineer Soldiers could be drawn, and I believe that no foreign mercenaries could be obtained who would not be more troublesome to manage, more expensive to maintain, and at the same time less efficient for service, than English troops. As mere laborers, the Natives of India are to be preferred; they are more economical, and more easily managed; as intelligent and skilful Engineer Soldiers, the British are the fittest and the best instruments in the hands of the British Officers. And in the Engineer Corps, as in the Infantry and Cavalry, the union of the two elements, Native Indian and British in such proportions as shall ensure the subjection of the first to the power of the second, is the best combination of strength that can be devised for the composition of the Indian Army.

18 &amp; 19.

Require no answer.

20.

Generally speaking, yes,—provided the full strength were always available for field service.

21.

The only reason to be adduced against the training of all Native Infantry Soldiers to much of the ordinary work of the Sappers and Miners, is that the present strength of Corps is barely sufficient for the performance of their proper duties, and the introduction of additional work would harass and distress the men, and might disgust them with the Service. If such a system of general training for Trench operations, &c., were adopted, it would be necessary, unless the strength of the Army were largely augmented, or the duties of Native Soldiers of Guards, &c., greatly reduced, to give the men working pay in order to reconcile them to the additional labor.

22.

Not habitually.

23.

My opinion as above given of the sufficiency in numbers of the Native Engineer Soldiers in proportion to the other branches of the Bombay Army, is based purely on the actual requirements of the Service, without reference to the line in any other respect.

24.

There are only a very few Europeans attached to the Native Sapper Corps of the Bombay Army, and they are all Non-Commis-

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

sioned Officers. In the present constitution of the Corps, they are of little account; being generally drafted off for employment in the Public Works Department. The European Sappers, I consider, should be kept distinct as a Corps from the Natives.

**25.**

Two Serjeants and four Corporals, as at present, probably are sufficient for the purposes of the Corps as at present constituted.

**26.**

I am not aware of any particular reason for dressing the Sappers as the Infantry of the Line.

**27.**

Percussion carbines with sword bayonets.

**28.**

I am not prepared to propose any change.

**29.**

I do not know.

**30.**

I am not informed.

**31.**

There is a school in the Corps, but I am not prepared to describe it.

**32.**

I do not know what would be considered a fully skilled Engineer Soldier, and not having the standard before me, cannot say whether or not the Bombay Native Sappers can be regarded as coming up to it.

**33.**

I think that for many reasons it is most desirable that there should be a Corps of European Sappers attached to the Army; and that the relationship between the European and the Native Sappers and Miners should be precisely the same in all respects as that subsisting between the European and Native Infantry. Looking to the requirements of the Public Works Department, as well as to those of a purely Military nature, I conceive that two European Companies might advantageously be added to the strength of the Bombay Army, to be organized and Officered exactly as the Corps of Royal Engineers.

**34.**

The existing Corps of Bombay Engineer Officers is altogether insufficient for the duties, Civil and Military, it is called upon to discharge.

CAPTAIN C. HILL, COMMANDANT, SAPPERS AND MINERS, MADRAS.

## MEMORANDUM.

The Corps of Madras Sappers and Miners is composed of 12 Companies, numbering  
 Constitution of the Corps. 24 Serjeants, 24 First Corporals, 24 Second Corporals,  
 12 Subadars, 12 Jemadars, 50 Havildars, 100 Naiques,  
 1,354 Privates, with an allowance of 4 Artificers to each Company, and the usual  
 establishment of 24 Buglers, 24 Recruits, and 24 Pension Boys.

The Corps is Officered by a Commandant and Adjutant, both Engineer Officers, and  
 Officers. 24 Company Officers drawn from the Line.

Recruits are accepted from all districts in the Presidency, but in practice the greater  
 portion come from the more Southern parts. The  
 Districts from which recruited. Corps is, and has ever been, constitutionally Tamil,  
 although there are numerous Teloo goos in the ranks. Thus, whilst we recruit largely  
 from the Tamil Districts of Tanjore, Trichinopoly, South Arcot and Madura, the Northern  
 Division (Teloo goos) furnishes us with a much smaller number;—very few come from  
 the Mysore or the Ceded Districts, and none from the Western Coast (Malabar and  
 Canara).

I have personally a strong prejudice in favor of the Tamil race, who have unde-  
 niably proved the best and hardest working Sappers, but I would refuse men of no  
 district, if otherwise adapted for the peculiar duties of Sappers.

But, whilst I would admit men of all countries, I would by no means recruit from  
 every caste—very high caste men must naturally be  
 Castes from which recruited. excluded—Mussulmans are not excluded either by rule  
 practice, but as will be seen by the annexed Memorandum very few find their way into  
 or in the Corps, and I am by no means anxious to attract them. They are better fitted  
 for Sepoys of the Line, or Cutcherry peons, than for the hard work of a Sapper.

The following are the numbers of the different castes at present in the Corps.

	Christians.	Mussulmans.	Rajpoots.	Mahratta.	Telinge.	Tamil.	*Other Castes.
Native Officers.....	6	1	1	.....	3	5	7
Non-Commissioned Officers....	25	12	.....	.....	22	35	56
Privates.....	114	67	8	4	195	228	496

\*Dholey.  
 Pariah.  
 Pullah!  
 Chuckler!

The terms Tamil caste and Teloo goo caste here used, are erroneous; and serve only  
 to happily show how little the Natives of these parts know or care for such matters,  
 when they confound their race or country with their caste. The castes really embraced  
 under this title are all sub-divisions of the 4th or Soodra caste.

I would venture to call attention to the very great proportion of Native Christians  
 who have gained their promotion. The proportion of  
 Native Christians. Commissioned Officers is particularly remarkable, being  
 quarter of the whole number, and amongst the Christians themselves more than one-fifth

have been promoted. A fact which speaks volumes for the good conduct and efficiency of this portion of the Corps.

Nothing can, I think, be better than the material both as to country and caste of which the Corps is at present constituted. It can not be bettered. The recruiting should be general, but excluding high castes. The formation of the Companies "composite"—such is the present system, and as it has been found to answer well, there can be no reason whatever for upsetting it for the purpose of separating the various castes into distinct Companies.

At the commencement of the present year having been directed to raise two new Companies of Sappers, I suggested to His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief that if it was the intention of Government to receive into its ranks, men of any other tribe than those to be found amongst the Natives of Hindoostan, the opportunity appeared a favorable one for making the experiment by recruiting for one of these Companies from the Negroes of the African Coast, who from their physical capability and reputed docility, would doubtless form excellent material for the Sapper ranks. I did not, however, make this suggestion, because I anticipated that the Sappers as a body would be improved thereby, and Sir Patrick Grant was himself too well satisfied with the present stamp of men to wish to see any change. There is no other race from which I can believe, it would be desirable to draw recruits, but if the experiment was made, the great point, so far as the Sappers are concerned, would be the presence of an Officer on the spot, who was fully alive to the requirements of the Corps, and one who had its interest at heart.

The general recruiting is at present carried on under difficulties, from the great distance the Head Quarters of the Corps has been removed from the recruiting field. Until very lately small parties of men under Native superintendence have been detached to the Southern Districts for the purpose of enlisting, but I soon found from the style of men we received, (many of whom I was obliged to reject) that this system would not answer, and I have been obliged to detach an European Officer on the duty; this plan must, I think, be maintained so long as the Head Quarters of the Corps remain in the Northern division. Enlistments made at Head Quarters are naturally much more satisfactory, when every recruit who offers himself is seen by the Commandant, Adjutant and Surgeon of the Corps; on the other hand, when men are sent from a distance of some hundreds of miles and have been perhaps two or three months in receipt of Government pay, it is difficult to reject them if they are up to the regulation standard, although they, for some reason, may be by no means fitted for Sapper labor.

Requisite strength of the Corps.  
be much increased.

The labor of Sappers being equally useful in War or Peace, their number might, I think with advantage,

Head Quarters.....	5
Burmah.....	4
Madras.....	1
Bangalore.....	1
Hyderabad.....	1
Nagpore.....	1
Waltair.....	1
Trichinopoly and Tanjore.....	1
Cannanore.....	1
Bellarey.....	1
Ootacamund.....	1

The strength at Head Quarters of men going through a course of discipline and instruction, should never fall short of five full Companies. A Company should be placed at every large station in the Presidency, and certain districts where there may be great works of Civil Engineering, and allowing a fair proportion to be on furlough after return from foreign service, &c. The number of Companies would amount to twenty.

A part from the general use to which their labor might be applied at the several Instruction of the line in Trench divisional Head Quarters, the presence of a com-  
duties. pany of Sappers would, I conceive, prove invaluable in training both Officers and men of the Regiments of the line to the common duties of the Trenches. There would, I am inclined to believe, be no difficulty in this with the Madras Troops. The experiment indeed was made with success by the late Captain J. W. Rundall,\* in communication with Colonel Ap-  
\*The then Commandant of Sappers. thorp who commanded the 2nd Madras Native Infantry at Mercura. The Head Quarters of the Corps, however, soon after proceeded to Burmah, and since their return, having been at an isolated station, there has been no opportunity of making any further trial.

The employment of Soldiers of the line in such work would, I am confident, be the means of reducing crime in the Army. It is to  
Absence of crime. their constant work alone that I attribute the very small proportion shewn by the Sapper records. It is a very exceptional case when a man has to be brought before me by his Commanding Officer; and in answer to the question proposed in the paper sent me by Colonel Durand,—“Were my Native Officers of sufficient ability to conduct satisfactorily the proceedings of a Court Martial?” I was enabled to state “that I really did not know.” Courts Martial were so unfrequent, the last having been held in November.

As far as the requirements of the country go, the Corps, as at present constituted, may, I think, be said to consist of skilled workmen.  
Skilled and trained Artificers, &c. I do not consider that any great advantage would be obtained by endeavouring to confine our recruiting more entirely to Artificers, (already trained as such) neither do I think, we should succeed in filling our ranks from those classes; moreover, we do not require them. We enlist a sufficient number to instruct the remainder. The following is the complement of Artificers I have directed the Company Officers to keep up.

5	Brick-makers.
5	Brick-layers.
5	Carpenters.
2	Sawyers.
5	Stone-cutters.
3	Smiths.
5	Thatchers and Basket-makers.
10	Who have learnt blasting.
10	Who have learnt rowing.
—	
50	Total per Company.
—	

Added to this I have lately instituted a class for instructing a certain number of the men in plan drawing and surveying. For all useful and practical purposes this proportion will, I think, be found sufficient.

The arms of the Sappers should be the best light rifled arm which can be obtained.  
Arms. Whatever regulation is made as to not putting rifles into the hands of other Native Corps, an exception should, I think, be made in favor of the Sappers, whose peculiar duties often place them



in isolated positions, where they can look to themselves alone for defence. With a little trouble they would become excellent marksmen.

The present carbine served out to the Corps is clumsy in the extreme, and so ill balanced that when the sword is fixed, the men are quite unable to carry their arms steadily at the advance. The men should, for the most part, be trained as Light Infantry, and great attention paid to their firing.

Every Company of Sappers should be provided with a sufficient number of mules or ponies to carry the whole of their tools. Such carriage would always be found useful wherever their work may be; and would render them quite independent. The recognised system (which cannot be carried out in practice) of obliging them to carry their tools as well as their arms, must cripple them as workmen, either on the line of march, or after they have reached their encamping ground, must render them comparatively unfit to put themselves heartily to any further work which may be required of them. They should be spared as much as possible for such after duties.

Their dress should, I think, be more adapted to the climate, substituting the color scarlet for blue. Nothing could be better than the dress of the Zouave of the "Garde Imperiale" of France. Dress. Something may be said in favor of identifying the Sepoy with his European brethren in arms, but the question is whether the Europeans also might not advantageously adopt the same dress. There is, however, I think, no doubt that the tight, hot, buttoned-up coat of the present day is even less adapted to the Sapper than to any other arm of the Service. The present head dress should be thrown aside by order, as indeed it is in practice on service. The neat black handkerchief is far more suitable in every way.

Although in my first paragraph I have numbered upwards of 70 European European Non-Commissioned Officers. Non-Commissioned Officers as belonging to the Sappers there are in truth none who are permanently attached to the Corps.

With the Companies who are on active service, a few of the juniors are usually All employed in the Department detached; the remainder are altogether absorbed by the Public Works. Department of Public Works, after remaining at Head Quarters for instruction for from one to two years, but they cannot be said to form a part of the Corps (at least for any useful purpose).

The 72 men above noted form, therefore, a *depôt* to feed the *Department Public Works*.

It is a question whether a part from these; the requirements of the service demand European Sappers. I am most decidedly of opinion that they should not *supersede* the Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned ranks. Serjeants and Corporals could never enforce discipline with Natives so well as it is done by the men who have risen from amongst themselves. If European Sappers or Engineers are added to the Corps, they should form a Company or Companies apart from the Natives. It is extremely inconvenient to bring the Native Commissioned and European Non-Commissioned in contact. There is always a hesitation to command on the part of a Native, no matter of what rank European Sappers.

when an European is present, and yet it is manifest the European Non-Commissioned cannot take the Command over the Native Officer.

I am extremely opposed to the present system of making every European Sapper a Non-Commissioned Officer. The fact of being a Sapper does not provide a man with a good character, which is a point generally looked to in making Non-Commissioned Officers in other branches of the Service. It is scarcely fair towards the Soldier himself. The great temptation to a young man on first arrival in this country is drink, and I should have some means of punishing this without proceeding with undue severity.

With a Non-Commissioned Officer this is impossible. I must either let him off altogether or try him by Court Martial; the latter course ruins his prospects for ever, the former is apt to lead him into repeating an excess, for which he may think I am unwilling to punish him.

For hard work in this country Europeans can never be put in the place of Natives; but if a superior body of Sappers is required, I would suggest that they be kept distinct from the Native portion, that they be quite isolated from the Department Public Works, that whilst receiving the same pay as at present they are not ranked as Non-Commissioned Officers, that a portion be employed on working pay (class A.) whenever their services may be required, but that in like manner as the Native portion returns once in so many years to undergo Head Quarter's discipline, the European Sappers shall do the same (still of course continuing to draw their pay in class A.) I think it highly necessary that all such men should be kept up in practice of Artillery, and I would therefore suggest that a few guns be always kept at Head Quarters.

The Native Commissioned ranks, I have every reason to be satisfied with; taking the average they are perhaps unequalled by any Native Officers in the Army. In proof of this I beg to annex a few extracts as to the estimation the Native Officers are held in by the Officers in charge of Companies, who, it is to be remembered, are all drawn from the lines.

*Extract from Captain Carpendale's Recommendation Roll.*

An Officer of soldier-like bearing, who is highly respected and is worthy of trust in any situation a Native Officer could be placed; very intelligent and well acquainted with this duty, and most efficient in the discharge of both. He is of long service, throughout which he has always given the greatest satisfaction. His bright example is most beneficial in the Corps.

B Company, Subadar Major Veerasawmy.

*Extract from a letter from Captain Sage.*

I would respectfully bring to the notice of the Commanding Officer the very meritorious conduct and services of Subadar Ram Sing, and I can only say that a more efficient, sensible, and gentlemanly Native Commissioned Officer I have never before met with in the course of my service (upward of 15 years).

D Company, Subadar Ram Sing.

*Extract from a letter from Lieutenant Butt.*

Before giving over command of the G. Company, I beg to bring to the conduct of SUBADAR VEERASSOO to the favorable notice of the  
 G. Company, Subadar Veerassoo. Commanding Officer; during the time I have held the command of the Company, his conduct has been most exemplary, and I have invariably found him intelligent, smart, and active. If at any time this testimony of his good character is likely to be of service to him, I trust it may be received in his favor. I can confidently recommend him as a most excellent and industrious Officer.

*Extract from Lieutenant Gordon's Recommendation Roll.*

Subadar Seelony, an exceedingly honest, zealous, and intelligent Native Officer: very much respected by all the men, and distinguished  
 K. Company, Subadar Seeloney. himself much at the siege of Rahatghur in January 1858, deserves any rank or honor to which he can be promoted.

There is no occasion to multiply instances, suffice it to say that, with very few exceptions, the general report of the character of my Native Officers is much in the same strain as above.

The explanation of this is, I believe, to be found in the fact, that within the last few years, the Corps has been augmented to double its original strength; and the Native Officers are therefore not old and worn-out, which, in the absence of such a run, must generally be the case where the rule of promotion by seniority obtains.

Seniority and merit combined will, I believe, best describe the Madras system of promotion, that is to say, merit alone is allowed to have  
 Promotion in Native Ranks. its full weight in promoting to the junior grades, and in recommending a man as a Jemadar, it is allowed certain influence, but in the absence of any thing decidedly against the Officer, seniority alone is considered in promoting to the higher grade of Subadar. I confess I should like to see merit have still more weight—that when I had found a first-rate man, I could put my hand on him at once, and promote him to his proper place without regarding the seniority claims of men, perhaps in every other respect, his inferior. But even under the present system Native Officers are invaluable, more particularly whilst the Corps is so badly off for European Officers, as I shall presently describe. If promotion by merit is made the rule, they will naturally become still more efficient, and I see no reason why a Sapper Native Officer should not pass a high examination in all duties he may be called on to perform, such as battery tracing, plan drawing, surveying, &c.

The European Officers of the Sappers have, for the last ten years, been drawn from  
 European Officers. the line. The experiment was no doubt a good one, had it been carried out in its integrity. Its actual want of success is fully shown by the fact, that on every occasion of a Company of Sappers being sent on service, Engineer Officers have been specially detailed to accompany it. I by no means argue that good Sapper Officers cannot be selected from the line, but it must be under a very different arrangement to that at present in force.

Whilst it is considered in the light of a Staff appointment, the post of Sapper  
 Ill success of experiment of Officer- Officer is in point of emolument far below that of any  
 ing from the line. other. The consequence is, that as a rule, Officers do not remain with the Corps for a sufficient length of time to qualify themselves. They

are sometimes changed as often as once in six or twelve months. It is impossible that they can do justice to themselves or the Corps under these circumstances. The constant changes have a particularly unhappy effect on the men, the best of whom are perhaps unknown to their Company Officers.

There is only one remedy for this, no matter whether the Officer be drawn from  
 Remedy. Engineers or Infantry. The appointment must be paid more liberally, and thus put on a footing with other Staff employ, and more particularly with the Department Public Works.

Being so often on detached employ, the Sappers require to be *thoroughly* well Officered, and if a selection is still made from the line, I would urge that such Officers should not be removed on obtaining their promotion to the grade of Captain. If a Captain may command a Company of Native Infantry, why not one of Sappers?

The interior economy is altogether in the hands of the Company Officer, for it is impossible for me at a distance to exercise any great control over him. It is to him too that I must entirely look for the recognition of the claims of the men under him. The Engineer Corps would doubtless furnish the most efficient Officers, provided they were not constantly removed for more lucrative employ in the Department Public Works, but the Engineer Corps is not nearly strong enough to provide even for the calls of that Department. It appears therefore at present impossible that any can be spared for the Sappers.

The position of the Commandant and Adjutant (so long as he remains an Engineer Officer) is equally detrimental to the Corps. Under the present arrangement both are likely to be changed continually, because they are not on the same footing as their brethren of the same standing in the Department Public Works. Being however personally interested, it would be invidious for me to enlarge on this head, and I will therefore content myself by calling attention to the strong representation made by both the Commander-in-Chief and Government of Madras as to the necessity of guarding against the evil by obtaining the services of an Officer who will be content to remain for a lengthened period.

I am of opinion that a Commanding Officer once chosen should be vested with some-  
 Power of Commandant. what larger powers than at present. The punishments he can award are, generally speaking, sufficiently severe, but I would urge that he should have the power of reducing an inefficient Non-Commissioned Officer to the ranks, and of promoting decided merit whenever he may find it. More confidence should be placed in him, and so long as he conducts the discipline of his regiment in accordance with regulations, he should be relieved as much as possible from all interference.

On the Articles of War I feel I am not competent to give a decided opinion; I can  
 Articles of War and Oath. however scarcely believe that any alteration in the form or wording of the oath on enlistment, would prove more binding on the Sepoy than that at present administered. It is after all a mere form, and looked on by the Sepoy merely as the sign of his having been really received into the ranks.

With respect to pensions I would not only continue but extend them. It is manifestly a more economical course for Government to pay an old worn-out man a small pension, than the full rate of pay of an effective soldier; keeping the names of such men on the roll is after all nothing but a deception, and the payment of the same a dead loss to the State.

## Pensions.

I think the sons of Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers are entitled to some consideration. It is scarcely becoming that the son of a Subadar should enter the Regiment as a Private; at the same time it is by no means necessary, nor would it be advantageous at once to raise him to the Commissioned rank. A medium course might however be followed, and all such candidates for enlistment might be put at once as Non-Commissioned Officers, leaving it to their merit whether they are further advanced or not.

## Sons of Native Officers.

So far as I can remember, I have now touched on all points on which questions were proposed in Colonel Durand's paper; there may, however, be many omissions from the fact of my having to depend entirely on my memory, for all such I must apologise.

(Signed) C. HILL, CAPT.,

*Commanding Sappers and Miners.*

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B., ADJUTANT GENERAL, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

## QUESTION.

## ANSWER.

1.	EUROPEANS.										NATIVES.						ESTABLISHMENT.		ARTIFICERS.													
	Non-Commissioned.					Commissioned.		Non-Effective.			Non-Commissioned.	Rank & File.		Buglers.	Echeesties.	Recruit Boys.	Pundit.	Hospital Assistant.	Hospital Apprentices.	Bazar Chowdherry.	Baker Peons.	Mistry Carpenter.	Mistry Smith.	Carpenters.	Smiths.	Hammer-men.	Bellows Boys.	Masons.	Tinners.			
	Warrant Officers.	Serjeant Major.	Quarter Master Serjeant.	Serjeants.	1st Corporals.	2nd Corporals.	Subadar Major.	Subadars.	Jemadars.	Pay Havildars.	Drill Havildars.	Drill Naique.	Buggie Major.																	Havildars.	Naiques.	Privates.
Corps ....	1	1	1	10	10	10	1	4	5	5	1	1	1	14	39	506	9	10	12	1	2	2	1	2	1	1	3	5	6	6	6	1
Per Company...	0	0	0	2	2	2	0	1	1	1	0	0	0	4	8	100	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	1	1	1	1	1	0

## QUESTIONS.

2. Much the same as the Native Infantry of all kinds and castes, from the Brahmim to the Parsee among the Hindoos; Syeds, Pattans, and Shaiks among the Mohamedans; Jews and Christians, a small number only.

**3.** From Hindoostan, the Deccan and Concan, the Nizam's country, Guzerat, and Madras.

**4.** None have been excluded by Regulation or practice.

Mangs and Dhers are not represented in the ranks of the Native Army generally. Their enlistment being obviously objectionable, and they never present themselves as soldiers.

**5.** Not that I am aware of.

**6.** That of the Commanding Officer.

**7.** The Regulation on this subject will be found in Bombay Government General Order, No. 539, 5th July 1855, Jameson's Code, Section XLVI Article 215, *et infra*, Page 182, 3rd Appendix; but they do not apply to men enlisted beyond Presidency limits.

**8.** None. The matter is left entirely to the Commanding Officer.

**9.** The Recruiting Regulations do not require alterations. But the pay of the Sappers should be increased to make the Corps efficient, for the service is not popular by reason of the hard work required from the soldier.

**10.** I swear in the presence of Almighty\* God, that I will never desert my Regiment, that I will obey every order of my Officer to the best of my ability, that I will go wherever I am ordered, whether it be in India or in a Foreign country; and that I will act in every particular as becomes a good soldier and faithful servant of Government; and should I commit any offence as regards any point of my duty, then I will submit to whatever punishments are laid down in the Articles of War, which have been read before me.

\*For Hindoos " Bhugwan."  
For Jews, Christians } Khooda.  
and Mussulmans. }

**11.** The above form has been in use in the Corps for above thirteen (13) years.

**12.** I think the oath useless. I would substitute a form of covenant or engagement to which the Recruit should subscribe his name or mark; in the presence of witnesses at the time of enlistment.

**13.** Composite; and as much mixed as possible. The proportions must depend upon the numbers of the different classes offering for enlistment, but, if possible, no one caste should predominate over another.

**14.** That of the Commanding Officer alone, who should be held responsible in all respects for the proper enlistment of the Corps.

**15.** Nothing more is required than those alluded to in my reply to query 7.

**16.** Yes, it has.

There would be no possibility of enlisting artificers without increasing the rates of pay ; any thing like skilled labour in India now obtains far higher wages than what enlistment holds forth.

**17.** I think this would be inexpedient and unnecessary, were a scientific Corps like the Sappers placed in the position as regards pay, that it should hold in comparison with the " Line."

**18.** I would infinitely prefer our East India Soldiers properly organized and suitably paid.

The extreme dearness of all articles of consumption now existing causes the rates of pay to be insufficient to provide for the wants of a Native Soldier with a family.

**19.** I am quite certain that recruiting in the manner alluded to, would not answer ; and cause a distrust and dislike of our rule among the Natives of India, for which nothing could compensate.

**20.** The Corps of Sappers and Miners is insufficient for the duty it has to perform.

**21.** This should be as much a part of the Infantry Soldiers training as the Manual and Platoon Exercise.

**22.** The men are not accustomed to this work when in Garrison. In the field they do what they are ordered, and willingly.

**23.** Purely on the fair Engineer wants of the service, irrespective of any other consideration.

**24.** The European Non-Commissioned Officers attached to the Native Sappers at the rate of six per Company, are of little or no use as regards the Military efficiency of the Corps ; though they serve to supply Overseers to the Département of Public Works.

**25.** I think it undesirable to attach European Non-Commissioned Officers to the Native Companies of Sappers.

Few of them understand the management of Natives, who work best under their own Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, if these are properly selected men. European Non-Commissioned Officers are attached to the Native Sappers under

present arrangement, but only nominally. They have nothing to do with the interior economy of the Native Companies, and at Head Quarters live separately, have separate rules and duties, forming a distinct body, which they should be.

**26.** The advantage is, that it preserves uniformity. There is nothing disadvantageous in the dress, if it be made to fit loosely, and white lace or tape, and pipe clay be abolished.

**27.** With two-grooved rifles, and bayonet swords.

**28.** Dress.—Kilmarnock forage cap, tunic and trowsers, as now ordered.

Arms.—Rifled carbine as used by the Royal Engineers.

**29.** About 14 per cent. can read and write with facility; about 20 per cent. can read and write a little.

**30.** About 4 per cent. can read and write English, and speak it with more or less fluency; about 6 per cent. understand it a little.

**31.** All Native Non-Commissioned Officers are required to attend the school, when off duty, for three hours daily.

In school they are taught elementary fortification and field works, simple plan drawing, arithmetic, and the preparation of office returns. The attendance of Recruits is enforced; that of Privates optional.

**32.** No. But they are a useful body of men, who will turn their hands to almost any thing.

The men are so much detached on Civil works, that they have a smattering of most things without a thorough knowledge of any.

**33.** I think so decidedly. There should be a Battalion of European Sappers and Miners, to consist of six Companies, and Officered from the Corps of Engineers.

**34.** Certainly not.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER-MASTER GENERAL  
OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 to 4.** No reply.



QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Men of all castes and races should be entertained.

6 to 12.

No reply.

13.

I would have Class Companies.

14.

Commanding Officers can always procure recruits.

15.

The usual precaution of registering their homes and parentage.

16.

No reply.

17.

I would have Class Companies as stated in reply to No. 13.

18.

All countries and races whence they can be procured.

19.

No reply.

20.

I believe they have been.

21.

I think it would do them a great deal of good.

22.

I have never seen them refuse, though I have heard of their doing so. Among themselves they will always labor readily at such works.

23.

I have not much experience, but I believe the Corps of Sappers and Miners, aided occasionally by working parties, has always sufficed.

24 to 26.

No reply.

27.

With percussion carbines, I believe.

28.

In khakee coloured uniform.

29 to 32.

No reply.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**33.**

They would be very valuable, but I am unable to say of what strength they should be.

**34.**

I believe not.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

BENGAL ARMY.

**1.**

This question is best answered by a reference to the monthly return of the Corps, which I cannot obtain in Camp, to my great regret.

**2, 3 & 4.**

According to the practice of the late Army. There was no distinction between this Corps and other Regiments of the Army, except that there were rather more low castes in it.

**9.**

Take all castes indiscriminately.

**10, 11 & 12.**

These matters have no real consequence. The only covenant likely to be respected is the certainty of monthly pay.

An oath is totally useless.

**13.**

Already answered in the response to No. 9.

**17.**

No.

**18.**

China is the only country from which such men could be drawn. But to enlist them would be most extravagant, seeing that there are no better Pioneers than Indian Coolies taken from the field, as shown by the late history of the Delhi Pioneers.

**20.**

There are quite enough. It is easy to obtain Pioneers when a war breaks out, or during its progress.

**21.**

Trench work requires no previous instruction. It is not advisable to train Infantry as instructed Sappers.

**22.**

Not in the construction of Batteries, but the Bengal Infantry is liable to work in the Trenches like all other Soldiers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

24. Yes, if the establishment of European Sappers and Miners, and Non-Commissioned Officers, be kept complete.
25. The present scale is satisfactory.
26. No.
27. With carbines and swords.
28. They should have *no* arms, and their dress should be a working one.
31. Yes.
32. Yes.
33. See Memorandum.
34. No.

---

No. 297.

MEMORANDUM BY THE CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

On the employment of European Overseers, in answer to question No. 33, of the 1st Section ("The Recruiting and the Composition,") of Engineer Soldiers, or Sappers and Miners.

One of the great wants of India in time of peace, as well as war, is a sufficient number of subordinate European Overseers in the Department of Public Works. The Secretary of Government in that Department is obliged to have recourse to Her Majesty's Infantry Regiments to compensate the deficiency. This is not very satisfactory either to the Government or to the Regiments, as the best men are taken from the latter, while they have not the necessary instruction to fit them for the purposes of the former.

2. I think it might be advisable to form a Corps in England, to be called "The Corps of Assistant Overseers of Public Works." This Corps should have its Head Quarters in England, and the men should go through a thorough course of instruction in all matters appertaining to their calling, before leaving their own country. The practice is very objectionable of bringing young men out to a tropical climate who are incompetent for the performance of real duty, and who are necessarily obliged to go through a course of regular education.

3. During the interval that such men might pass in England for this purpose, there would be time to watch their moral character, and therefore to discharge them summarily if they should be found from such cause to be unequal to the responsible and detached duties which would fall to their lot.

4. In forming such a Corps for Indian service, the error of the Crimean Army Works Corps should be avoided, and in the attestation of the men when enlisted for the European Overseer Corps, it should be stated that they are liable for Military duty according to a relative scale of rank that might be fixed upon, with Non-Commissioned and Warrant Officers in time of war; and always amenable to the Articles of War.

5. The question of organization would be a matter for future consideration, if the principle of the Corps were adopted. A distinction of ranks analogous to that of Private Soldier, Non-Commissioned Officer and Warrant Officer, would be necessary to give effect to the punishment of reduction.

6. I may as well remark that the Corps of Royal Engineers as at present constituted, and applied according to the views of the Royal Engineer Officers, is not likely to be very useful in India, unless the Commanding Officer of that Corps receives an order from the Government at home, to distribute all the Non-Commissioned Officers and Private Soldiers of the Royal Engineers in India as subordinate Overseers, and Assistant Overseers, in the Department of Public Works.

7. As Companies of Sappers and Miners, they are perfectly useless in India, except in time of war, but as subordinate Overseers they may be considered invaluable in the present dearth of that description of Officer.

The Royal Engineer Officers object very much to such distribution of their men as they allege, and perhaps with reason, that it is fatal to their discipline. I am informed that the head of the Regiment at home, the Inspector General of Fortifications, is of the same opinion. I regret this very much, as to maintain the opinion in practice, will condemn the Officers and Soldiers of the Royal Engineer Regiment employed in India to a state of useless idleness.

I consider it of great benefit, both to the Royal Engineers and to the service at large, that they should have the experience of, and be ready to take part in, Indian warfare. I should deplore that mere Regimental views on the part of the Officers should prevent them from taking their proper share in the great public works of India, where their assistance is much required.

I consider that it would be most expedient that the Royal Engineer Officers and their men should receive orders to adapt themselves to the requirements of the Indian Government, in peace, as well as in war, and that the Officers should not be allowed to plead a difference in the manner of transacting business, or a new money responsibility, as ground for rejecting the desire of the Government, that they should reinforce the amount of Engineers now at the disposal of the Governor General for Civil purposes. I think that they should be put on precisely the same footing in this regard, as their comrades of the Bengal Engineers on their arrival in India; in short to take the service as it comes, either in war or peace, according to the regulations of the Government and of the Army with which they are associated.

## HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.

## QUESTION.

## ANSWERS.

	EUROPEANS.										NATIVES.										ESTABLISHMENT.		ARTIFICERS.														
	Non-Commissioned.										Commissioned.			Non-Effective.				Non-Commissioned.		Rank & File.		Huglers.	Bheesties.	Recruit Boys.	Pundit.	Hospital Assistants.	Hospital Apprentices.	Bazar Chowdherry.	Bazar Peons.	Mistry Carpenter.	Mistry Smith.	Carpenters.	Smiths.	Hammer-men.	Bellows Boys.	Masons.	Tinmas.
	Warrant Officers.	Serjeant Major.	Quarter Master Serjeant.	Serjeants.	1st Corporals.	2nd Corporals.	Subadar Major.	Subadars.	Jemadars.	Pey Havildars.	Drill Havildars.	Drill Naique.	Bygle Major.	Havildars.	Naiques.	Privates.																					
Corps ....	1	1	1	10	10	10	1	4	5	5	1	1	1	14	39	500	9	10	12	1	2	2	1	2	1	1	1	5	5	6	6	6	1				
Per Company...	0	0	0	2	2	2	0	1	1	1	0	0	0	4	8	100	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	1	1	1	1	0				

2.

Much the same as the Native Infantry : of all kinds and castes, from the Brahmin to the Parsee among the Hindoos ; Syeds, Puttans and Shaiks among the Mahomedans ; Jews and Christians a small number only.

3.

From Hindoostan, the Deccan and Arracan, the Nizam's country ; Guzerat and Madras.

4.

None have been excluded by regulation or practice.

Mangs and Dhers are not represented in the ranks of the Native Army generally. Their enlistment being obviously objectionable, and they never present themselves as soldiers.

5.

Not that I am aware of.

6.

That of the Commanding Officer.

7.

The regulations on this subject will be found in Bombay Government General Order, No. 539, 5th July 1855, Jameson's Code, Section XLVI, Act 214 *et infra*, page 182, 3rd Appendix ; but they do not apply to men enlisted beyond Presidency limits.

8.

None ; the matter is left entirely to the Commanding Officer.

9.

The Government has ruled that recruits are not to be enlisted beyond the Presidency.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

I swear in the presence of Almighty God\* that I will never desert my Regiment, that I will obey every order of my Officers to the best of my ability, that I will go wherever I am ordered whether it be in India or in a Foreign country, and that I will act in every particular as becomes a good soldier and faithful servant of Government, and should I commit any offence as regards any point of my duty, I will submit whatever punishments are laid down in the Articles of War, which have been read before me.

\*For Hindoos " Bhugwan."  
 For Jews and } " Khooda."  
 Christians. }

11.

The above form has been in use in the Corps for above thirteen (13) years.

12.

No.

13.

Composite ;—exclude Brahmins entirely.

14.

The Commanding Officer.

15.

Nothing more is required than those alluded to in my reply to query 7. •

16.

Yes, it has.

There would be no possibility of enlisting artificers without increasing the rates of pay, any thing like skilled labor in India now obtains higher wages than what enlistment holds forth.

17.

Certainly not.

18.

Answered above.

19.

Not necessarily.

20.

The Bombay Engineers are worked too hard, they ought to have four more Companies.

21.

I think it very advisable that the Native Infantry should be practiced in those duties.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**22.**

The men are not accustomed to this work when in garrison. In the field they do what they are ordered, and willingly.

**24.**

The European Non-Commissioned Officers attached to the Native Sappers at the rate of six per Company are of little or no use as regards the Military efficiency of the Corps; though they serve to supply Overseers to the Department of Public Works.

**25.**

None beyond the number at present attached as Non-Commissioned Officers according to the strength.

**26.**

No advantage.

**27.**

With two-grooved rifles and bayonet sword.

**28.**

The tunic, and for work a "khakee" undress. Armed as present.

**29.**

About 14 per cent. can read and write with facility, about 20 per cent. can read and write a little.

**30.**

About 4 per cent. can read and write English and speak it with more or less fluency; about 6 per cent. understand it a little.

All Native Non-Commissioned Officers are required to attend the School when off duty, for three hours daily.

**31.**

In the School they are taught Elementary Fortification and Field Works, Simple Plan Drawing, Arithmetic, and the preparation of office returns; the attendance of Recruits is enforced, that of Privates optional.

**32.**

They are very skilful, if time could be given for instruction.

**33.**

A complete Corps of five hundred Sappers, Officered as the Royal Engineers.

**34.**

No.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

BREVET MAJOR A. J. M. BOILEAU, OFFICIATING CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD,  
DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

MADRAS ARMY.

1. This question will no doubt be fully replied to by the Officer commanding the Corps. I am not in a position to state this with sufficient precision.
2. Chiefly the Gentoos of Northern India, and the Malabar or Tamil tribes of Southern India. There are also a few Mussulmans, and Roman Catholic Christians.
3. The Telogoos or Gentoos from Rajamundry, Masulipatam, Gentoor, &c., and the Tamil men from the districts south of the Cavery, such as Tanjore, Trichinopoly, Madura, &c.
4. None, but some, such as the Malayalams have excluded themselves, refusing to enlist.
5. The Malayalams, as, I said, exclude themselves, but there is no reason to think that any great advantage would arise by enlisting them. I believe that formerly the caste of Pullas, a working class, were enlisted; but latterly for some reason unknown to me, they have not been enlisted.
6. Chiefly Native; latterly a European Officer has been deputed on this duty.
7. None.
8. The Havildar Major is held responsible for their good conduct.
9. None that I can suggest.
10. I do not know, having never been with the Sappers at Head Quarters, and only temporarily attached to them for service in the field.
11. I do not know.
12. It appears to me that each man should be bound upon the form of oath he considers most sacred and binding, according to the creed of each.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

13.

I should say composite as at present ; three-fourths Tamil, and the rest mixed castes.

14.

Europeans, aided of course by Natives.

15.

I see no need of further intervention on the part of the Local Authorities than that advantage should be taken of their opportunities of gaining information to ascertain where there is any public reason for the non-enlistment of a man.

16.

Skilled labor is very scarce in the parts of the Madras Presidency that I have visited. There is consequently a great demand for it, and skilled workmen being able to earn sums greatly in excess of what they would gain as artificers in a Sapper Company, are rarely obtained as recruits.

17.

I have heard it suggested that the Siddees of Africa would make good Sappers. They are stalwart fellows, with plenty of sinew and good workers, but I have nothing to guide me as to whether they would fight or not. Chinese carpenters would be useful, but the Sapper carpenters now are fighting-men, Chinese cannot fight. (Read China War.)

18.

Answered above.

19.

European (if resorted to at all) aided by Natives of the country.

20.

Decidedly not. Whole Regiments should have Sapper training. The insufficiency of the number of Sappers is evidenced by the fact of the B. Company having been ; for 7 years out of 8½, away on Foreign Service. There are not, it will thus be seen, sufficient reliefs. I remember the C. Company in Scinde being broken up into 7 detachments extending from Cabul to Kurrachee. The Madras Sappers are called, or have been called, to serve in China, Java, Burmah, Affghanistan, Persia, Scinde, and I believe Egypt and the Mauritius, and have been in this last year, in many parts of the Bombay and Bengal Presidencies. To meet such extended calls they should be multiplied greatly in number.

21.

None whatever, only let them understand clearly that they are to get working pay when so employed in the field.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**22.**

I believe the Madras Sepoys are always ready and willing to work in the Trenches.

**23.**

My remarks as to the insufficiency of the Madras Sappers are based on the Engineer wants of the service. When as at Dhar, Ratgurrh, and other places, small Brigades are sent to take large Forts, Infantry cannot be spared; the Engineer Officer is necessarily refused working parties of the line, and must rely on his Sappers, whom of course he is obliged to break up into 3 or 4 reliefs.

**24.**

If the Europeans are continued attached to the Sappers, there should be two men to each Native sub-division. We have no Privates of European Sappers, all come out as 2nd Corporals.

**25.**

A Serjeant and Corporal to each sub-division, if attached to the Sappers at all; but as these men are only useful for field service or practice in the field operations in peace, they should be part and parcel of a Field Engineer's Department, and kept distinct from the Corps of Native Sappers and Miners.

**26.**

No advantage; every disadvantage—dress them loosely like Zouaves. Away with tight fitting jackets and trousers. The B. Company on service in Central India and Persia always wore Native turbans, a step in the right direction.

**27.**

With carbine and sword, to fix on as bayonet, or to be used separately as a sword.

**28.**

I know nothing much more appropriate than an assimilation to the Zouave dress.

The carbine should be rifled.

**29.**

I believe about two-thirds can write their names, about one-third can read and write in the vernacular.

**30.**

They can nearly all understand ordinary orders in English. Very few indeed, (say 10 per cent.) can read and write English a little. I believe this number is increasing.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**31.**

Yes, those who wish to attend the Regimental Schools, may learn plan drawing and surveying.

**32.**

Not when enlisted, but they soon acquire skilled habits, and many of them soon learn trades, &c.

**33.**

No. In my opinion it would suffice, were a body of Europeans entertained with rank, in a department under a Field Engineer for training natives in peace time, and to aid them in setting out works in a siege, &c. ; such men are further useful in service when a call is frequently made for intelligent men for various purposes, as for instance to work the Telegraph on the Hill near Jhansi.

**34.**

The Corps of Engineers is barely sufficient for the requirement at present made upon it, and could not furnish Officers for a Sapper Corps. If it be argued that this should be their first duty as Military men, and the Department of Public Works should only be treated as a secondary consideration, I then say, you must give Officers the same incentives to Military employ as you have been wont to give in the Civil Department.

---



# PRECIS

OF THE

## REPLIES TO QUESTIONS ON ENGINEER SOLDIERS OR SAPPERS AND MINERS.

### No. II. MILITARY CODE AND RULES OF DISCIPLINE.

---

#### QUESTIONS.

1 to 4.

#### ANSWERS.

Those who have replied to this set of Questions in the Infantry branch, refer to their answers as there given, as the Commander-in-Chief, and Sir Patrick Grant, and Sir S. Cotton.

Brigadier General Jacob replies only to the 1st Question, and in three words, "Abolish them altogether."

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith gives no reply.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, (Madras) would assimilate the rules regulating punishment to those obtaining in the British Army. He believes the system works well, but Courts Martial are seldom required in the Madras Sappers.

Captain Jones (Bombay) would allow Commanding Officers to punish minor offences without a Court Martial. He would retain the Special Rules with certain amendments (which he does not specify.) He objects to Native Courts Martial in general, but to Regimental Courts especially; because the Members usually have the case beforehand and know the Commanding Officer's opinion, and go into Court prejudiced, because they are subservient to the Superintending Officer, and because the Superintending Officer knows the Prisoner's case, and usually is instructed by the Commanding Officer as to the punishment to be awarded. (This last is a remarkable statement and probably was not intended to be literally understood.) He would make the Commanding Officers all powerful, and considers Courts Martial unsuited to the Native character.

Captain Marriott (Bombay) thinks the system works satisfactorily on the whole, though there is much in it superfluous and cumbrous. But his want of experience does not furnish him to form or give any strong opinion.

---



## 2.—RULES OF DISCIPLINE AND MILITARY CODE.

### SAPPERS AND MINERS.

#### QUESTIONS.

1. CAN you suggest improvements in the Articles of War in
2. Should the special Rules regulating punishment in the Native Army be retained, or should they be assimilated to the Rules which obtain in the British Army?
3. Does the system of Native Courts Martial work satisfactorily in
4. What means are adopted to acquaint the Native Sappers and Miners of the with the Military Code under which they serve?

---

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL THE RIGHT HONORABLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

#### QUESTIONS.

#### ANSWERS.

1. ANSWERED under the head of Infantry.
2. Alterations are desirable, but the Rules should not be assimilated to those of the British Army.
3. No more satisfactorily than in other branches.
4. The same as in other branches—see "Infantry."

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,  
FORT ST. GEORGE.  
MADRAS ARMY.

1. As in the Infantry.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. As in the Infantry.
  3. As in the Infantry.
  4. As in the Infantry.
- 

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. I THINK they might with advantage be abolished ; European Courts Martial only should be allowed for the trial of capital crimes, all other offences should be disposed of under the orders of Commanding Officers whose powers should be correspondingly increased.
  2. The present special rules have far too lenient a tendency, I see no advantage in assimilating them to the Rules which obtain in the British Army. What is most wanted is to furnish Commanding Officers with increased powers, no appeal beyond them should be listened to.
  3. In no portion of the Native Army does the system of Courts Martial work satisfactorily, the ends of discipline are rarely met by it, and crime to a certain extent goes unpunished.
  4. They are read to them by interpreters at stated intervals, but with no satisfactory result, for none comprehend them.
- 

BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE FRONTIER

BOMBAY SAPPERS AND MINERS.

1. ABOLISH them altogether.



LIEUT.-COL. R. HENDERSON, MADRAS ENGINEERS, CHIEF ENGINEER OF HYDRABAD, DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1 & 2.**

I AM unable to suggest any improvement in the Articles of War in use in the Madras Army, except that provision should be made in them for the Rules regulating punishment being assimilated to the Rules that obtain in the British Army.

**3.**

It is but seldom that Native Courts Martial are required to be held in the Madras Sappers and Miners, but I believe the system works well when necessity compels recourse to it.

**4.**

The Military Code is read out to the Corps once in three months, I believe, in the Tamil and Hindoostanee languages.

---

CAPTAIN JENKINS JONES, BOMBAY ENGINEERS, COMMANDING SAPPERS AND MINERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

**1.**

MINOR offences, which can now be dealt with by Regimental Courts Martial should be punished by the Commanding Officers of the Native Corps, without the necessity of convening a Regimental Court Martial ; a Defaulters' Roll being submitted to the Commandant of the Station as at present.

**2.**

The special Rules for the Native Army should be retained, with certain amendments.

**3.**

No ; I object to Native Courts Martial generally, but to Regimental Courts especially. *1st.*—The members have almost always heard the prisoner's case before hand, and know their Commanding Officer's opinion, and go into Court prejudiced. *2nd.*—They are inclined to be subservient to the Superintending Officer and European Subaltern of their own Corps. *3rd.*—The Superintending Officer is acquainted with the prisoner's case, and usually receives instructions as to punishment to be awarded, from the Commanding Officer of the Regiment. I consider that in a Native Corps the Commanding Officer should be all powerful, and should be empowered to give the same extent of punishments as a Regimental Court Martial can award ; general and district Native Courts Martial are less objectionable, but a Court Martial is not suitable to the Native character.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

Read out to them on parade, and explained to the men by the European and Native Officers.

---

CAPTAIN W. F. MARRIOTT, BOMBAY ENGINEERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

I HAVE not given sufficient attention to the subject, to permit a reply of any value.

2.

The same answer as to question 1.

3.

I am inclined to think it does, on the whole, although there is much that is superfluous and cumbrous in the system. But I have inadequate experience for a strong opinion.

4.

No special means so far as I know.

---

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY MILITARY DEPARTMENT.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1 to 4.

Answered as for the Infantry.

---

COLONEL C. GREEN, C. B., ADJUTANT GENERAL.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

No, I cannot. I think they are quite useless in Native Corps, and they are unintelligible to the men.

2.

A few standing Rules may be adopted ; the assimilation with those in the British Army is unnecessary with Native Troops.

3.

Yes, practice has made perfect, but except for high crimes and misdemeanors I would have no Courts Martial in the Native Army ; only Panchayets.

4.

They are read in portions to the men periodically after the muster parade.

LIEUTENANT COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER MASTER  
GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. I would abolish them altogether, save in cases of grave crime ; then European Courts Martial only should be held.
  2. For all offences of a grave nature they might be retained.
  - 3 & 4. No reply.
- 

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1. No.
  2. Retain, as at present.
  3. Yes.
  4. They are read in portions to the men periodically after the muster parade.
- 

BREVET MAJOR A. J. M. BOILEAU, OFFICIATING CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD,  
DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

MADRAS ARMY.

1. No.
2. I have had no experience in Military detail, so an answer to this point from me would be of no worth.
3. I am informed that Courts Martial in the Madras Sappers and Miners are extremely rare, so that there are no means of judging.
4. The Articles of War are read out once in three months.



# PRECIS

OF THE

## REPLIES TO QUESTIONS ON ENGINEER SOLDIERS OR SAPPERS AND MINERS.

### No. III. ORGANIZATION, PROMOTIONS AND REWARDS.

#### QUESTIONS.

#### ANSWERS.

#### 1 to 18.

In answering these Questions, Lord Clyde refers for the most part to his replies already given to the Infantry Questions. He considers that the Native Officers of Sappers are too old, but believes that they make themselves useful. With reference to Question 16, Lord Clyde sees no objection to Infantry Officers being appointed to the Sappers, if competent, but he thinks there ought to be sufficient Engineer Officers to render this unnecessary.

Sir Sydney Cotton replies to the same effect as he did to the Infantry series. In the 16th Question he considers the appointing of Infantry Officers to Command Sapper Companies must tend to lessen the efficiency of the latter. They have, he says, no interest in the men, and the men feel that the Officers are liable to be removed at any time. In seige-work their place is taken by Engineers. And the Infantry Officers are not properly trained for the duty.

Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith says (Question 2) that most of the Native Officers are inferior men. He would maintain (Question 7) the equivalent of Native Commissioned Officers as essential to any organized body meant for purposes of War. He is opposed to the notion (Question 10) that any pay or pension would compensate for the abolition of the Commissioned grades. He would maintain (Question 11) the system of pension in spite of its failure as a constraint against mutiny. With reference to Question 13, he thinks the best safe guard for the efficiency would be an impartial examination in professional matters. He thinks the Native Commissioned Officers (Question 15) unequal to the Europeans attached to the Sappers. He considers (Question 16) the appointment of Infantry Officers destructive to the unity of the Sappers ; and would have in this, as in all other Regiments, Officers and men of the same branch of the Service. He thinks the distinctions of

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

ances and of organization favorable to our power in India, just as is the case with Austria or any other power ruling mixed races, and he would keep the three Armies distinct.

Sir Patrick Grant states that the Native Officers (Madras) are efficient and intelligent, (Question 2) but that none of them can take the place of a European Officer. On Question 6, he observes, that from the earliest time the conduct of the Madras Sappers has been conspicuously excellent. With reference to Question 8, he states that by the practice of the Madras Army the Native Officers' Commission holds good over the European Warrant or Non-Commissioned Officer (the contrary practice is stated by the Bengal Officers to obtain in Bengal.) He says on Question 16, that the system answers sufficiently well; but that the standard of efficiency of the Infantry Sapper Officer is very much lower than that for the Officers of Engineers. On Question 17, he remarks, that perhaps the Infantry Officer is better suited to the Native Sapper work than the more highly educated Engineer Officer; but that the Corps should be separately officered, as demands for it take Officers from their own Regiments, and they are often strangers to their men.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, (Madras) says on Question 2, that with few exceptions among the seniors, the Native Sapper Officers are very intelligent and efficient in the field, and their bravery and devotedness in action admits of no exception; that promotion is made (Questions 3 and 4) for general superior intelligence and qualification. On the other Questions, he replies to the same effect as Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith. But on Question 12 he strongly advocates pensions at earlier periods for Sapper Soldiers, as he has much harder work to perform and is therefore sooner worn out, and is exposed to climate and work in time of peace, and has to fight as well as work in time of war. With reference to Question 18, Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson suggests that several Corps of Native Christians be raised; as many as seven might be raised in the Madras Presidency, whose fidelity might be counted upon, and they would make as good soldiers as men of the highest caste in Bengal. This measure, he observes, would give employment to people who practically are excluded from the Army for no other reason than that they profess the same religion as their masters.

Captain Jones (Bombay) states on Question 1, that merit alone regulates promotion, and that gallantry in the field would have great weight, that (Question 3) there are examinations for each of the Non-Commissioned grades, but not for the Commissioned grades specially; that no Havildar is considered eligible

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

for promotion unless he is a man of sufficient education, but that the senior Jemadar is always promoted to Subadar, the duties of the two ranks being the same. On Question 8, he remarks that no European will submit to be commanded by a Native, and no European is ever put with a party of Natives where there is a Native Officer, or Non-Commissioned Officer of *superior* rank. Referring to Question 9, he would do away with the present complement of Europeans attached to Native Companies. He would maintain the Native Commissioned Officers, and the Pension system with regard to men now in the service, making any necessary modifications for the future. (Questions 7, 10 and 12.) With regard to Question 16, he would have Engineer Officers as the only proper men to Command Engineer Soldiers.

Captain Marriott (Bombay) says on Question 8, that practicable subordination of the Native to the European, or the contrary, is altogether avoided; that where no European Commissioned Officer is present, the Serjeant Major took Command of the Europeans and the senior Native Officer of the Natives. He replies to the other Questions to the same effect as Captain Jones; but to Question 16, he states, that he has no experience, but remarks, that if an Infantry Officer should receive no training under an Engineer Officer, the Sapper Officers would feel themselves superior in some respects, which is undesirable.

To this Section of the Questions, and to the next, Brigadier General Jacob gives no replies.

---





### 3.—ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARDS.

#### SAPPERS AND MINERS.

##### QUESTIONS.

1. What is the system of promotion in the Sappers and Miners; is it based on merit alone; on seniority alone, or on merit and seniority combined?
2. Are the Native Officers of the Sappers and Miners generally of that intelligence and efficiency, which renders them useful in the field?
3. Is there any test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade? or on promotion from one Commissioned grade to another?
4. Are their acquirements usually of a higher grade than those of the Sappers and Miners, from among whom they have risen?
5. Does the intervention of the Native Officers between the European Officer and his men, weaken the influence of the European Officer?
6. Has it been found on the occurrence of mutinies, that the Native Officers of Sappers and Miners gave timely information, or were of use in aiding the European Officers to maintain discipline? Have they sided with the mutineers, or with the European Officers?
7. Should the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be continued, or discontinued in the Sappers and Miners?
8. When the European Non-Commissioned Officers of Sappers come upon duty with the Native Commissioned Officers, do the Native Commissioned Officers, or the European Non-Commissioned Officers command in the absence of any European Commissioned Officer?
9. Is the substitution of a full complement of European Serjeants and Corporals of Sappers and Miners to each Company in lieu of its Native Officers advisable?
10. If the abolition of the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be advisable, and the prospect of distinction and emolument be thus closed to the Native

Sappers, would a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions claimable, after specified periods of service, be a compensatory encouragement, and as efficacious as the Commissioned grades?

**11.** Have retiring pensions proved effectual in attaching the Native Troops to the British service?

**12.** Should the system of pensions as now in force by regulation, be maintained or modified, or abolished?

**13.** If Native Commissioned Officers are retained, should the system of promotion generally, by seniority, be altered, and promotion by merit and efficiency be the rule?

**14.** Are Native Commissioned Officers of Sappers and Miners generally fit to take part in Courts Martial?

**15.** Are the Native Commissioned Officers of Sappers and Miners on a par in professional intelligence and efficiency with the European Non-Commissioned Officers and Privates of the Sappers and Miners?

**16.** What is your opinion of the system of appointing Officers of the Native Infantry to the command of Companies of Native Sappers and Miners? Does it work well with the Engineer Soldiers; and is it advantageous as training to the European Officers nominated to the duty?

**17.** Has the distinct organization and the differences of system, regulations, and component races in the three Native Armies, proved favorable to our power in India?

**18.** Should a certain degree of distinctness of system, organization and composition, according to the views of separate Governments, to time and to local circumstances, be allowed; or should endeavours be made to assimilate, or even to amalgamate the three Armies?

---

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL THE HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**1.**

Much the same it is believed as in other branches.

**2.**

It is believed they make themselves useful, but they are too old.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. It is not known whether there is any examination. There appears to be no general regulation for it.
4. They must have had more instructions.
5. The answer given to a similar questions under the head of "Infantry," appears to apply to the Sappers.
6. The answer already given to similar question under the head of "Infantry," appears to apply to the Sappers.
7. The answer already given to similar question under the head of "Infantry," appears to apply to the Sappers.
8. An European Non-Commissioned Officer would command it is believed.
9. The proportion now allowed is simple, and if Native Officers are allowed in other branches, they must be continued in the Sappers.
10. The answer to this question under the head of "Infantry," applies equally to the Sappers and Miners.
11. Not at all.
12. Modified as under the head of "Infantry."
13. Answer as under head of "Infantry."
14. Answer as under head of "Infantry."
15. Answer as under head of "Infantry."
16. There seems no objection to it if the Native Infantry Officers are competent, but there ought to be sufficient Engineer Officers to render it unnecessary.
17. Answered already under the head of "Infantry."
18. Answered already under the head of "Infantry."

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, MADRAS.

## MADRAS ARMY.

1. As in the Infantry.
2. The Native Officers are efficient and intelligent, but none of this grade can take the place of an European Officer.
3. As in the Infantry.
4. I think not, they are promoted for Military efficiency, rather than on account of professional acquirements, as in the Infantry.
5. As in the Infantry.
6. I am not aware that there has been any thing approaching mutiny in this Corps; nor do I think that portions of it have been at stations at which other Troops have been insubordinate. From their earliest formation, the Madras Sappers have been eminently conspicuous for their admirable conduct in every situation. On every occasion of service throughout India, in Afghanistan, in Scinde, and in Persia, they have been employed, and always acquitted themselves with marked distinction.
7. As in the Infantry.
8. By the practice in this Army, the Native Officer's Commission holds good over the European Warrant or Non-Commissioned Officer.
- 9 & 10. As in the Infantry.
11. As in the Infantry.
12. As was recommended for the Infantry.
13. As in the Infantry.
14. As in the Infantry.
15. I think not, the European Sapper is educated expressly for Engineer work, and is taught a variety of Sapper duties that the native never learns.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

Infantry Officers are appointed to the Sappers as a substitute for Engineer Officers, and the system answers sufficiently well. But the Infantry Sapper Officer's standard of efficiency is very much lower than that for the Officer of Engineers.

17.

The instruction the Infantry Officer receives at Sapper Head Quarters before he can be detached in command of a Company, is no doubt advantageous to him, and when qualified for such detached duty, he is competent to superintend all the works that can be required of Native Sappers, and perhaps the Infantry Sapper Officer is better suited to the Native Sapper work, than the more highly educated Engineer Officer. At the same time I think the Corps should be separately Officered, as demands for it takes Officers from their own Regiments, and they are often strangers to their men.

18.

No doubt it has. See reply to this question in reference to Infantry. As in the Infantry, attempts at amalgamation, assimilation or centralization of the three Native Armies must, in my opinion, prove most injurious to our power in India.

---

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.  
BENBAL ARMY.

1.

Seniority alone.

2.

They are too old to have any intelligence or to be of any use whatever; there are but few exceptions to this rule.

3.

None under any circumstances.

4.

No. Faculties and energies being impaired with old age, their general ability and acquirements are, if any thing, of a lower standard than those of the Sappers.

5.

Yea. The necessity for recognizing the rank and position of these imbecile old men, and at the same time of endeavouring through them to uphold and enforce discipline among the men, is a difficulty which can only be appreciated, when attempted by a Commanding Officer, zealous for the good of the Service. The existence in the Native Army of the Native Commissioned Officers, will ever prove a source of embarrassment to the European Officers, excepting in Corps organized on the Irregular system.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

- 6.** I believe the Native Officers of the Sappers were no better than their brethren of the Infantry and Cavalry branches.
- 7.** I strongly recommend their abolition.
- 8.** The European Non-Commissioned Officer commands.
- 9.** Yes. I should strongly advocate this measure. I conclude that it is intended to retain the Native Non-Commissioned grades.
- 10.** Amply sufficient in my opinion.
- 11.** Not with respect to the late Mutiny. Prior to this calamitous event, the pensions being greatly prized by the Natives, doubtless must have influenced them in their attachment to the British rule.
- 12.** Modified considerably, for what with pay batta and pension, the Native Soldier was paid more than he is worth to the State.
- 13.** Promotion by merit, and on the recommendation of the Commanding Officer.
- 14.** No ; they do not understand the working of our Military Courts of Justice.
- 15.** Unquestionably not.
- 16.** I think the system of appointing Officers to the command of Sapper Companies must tend to the deterioration of the efficiency of the latter. The Infantry Officers have no interest in the men, and with little knowledge of their duties, the men also feel that they are commanded by strangers who are liable at all times to be removed. In siege work, it has generally been found necessary to replace the Infantry Officers by Engineers. I don't think, however, that the Infantry Officers have the advantage of a proper course of training for being considered as not belonging to the Corps; no pains are taken in their instruction.
- 17.** I think the distinct nature of the Armies of the three Presidencies, has been one of the means which has checked the spread of the Mutiny.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

18.

This happy result has, I think, emanated solely from the difference of races, and not from the distinct organization or system; and for proof of this, it is only necessary to look at the many Bombay Regiments which have shown disaffection, and in which men were enlisted from the same class as that to which the mutinous Sepoys of Bengal belong.

19.

I see no reason for keeping up any distinction between the 3 armies, on the contrary I think all should be placed exactly on the same footing.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. HENDERSON, MADRAS ENGINEERS, CHIEF ENGINEER OF HYDERABAD, DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

## MADRAS ARMY.

1.

The promotion from Private to Lance Corporal is made on merit alone.

Afterwards promotions are made upon general merit, and qualification for higher employment, and consideration given to seniority, but it gives no claim.

2.

With very few exceptions amongst the Seniors, the Native Officers of the Corps are very intelligent and efficient men in the field. Their bravery and devotedness in action admits of no exception.

3.

The Non-Commissioned Officers are promoted for superior qualifications, and from these are selected the Native Commissioned Officers. I am not aware of any formal test or examination prior to this selection, but believe it is made solely upon the ground of general superior intelligence and qualification.

4.

They are all selected from the ranks and subordinate grades for their superior acquirements and intelligence.

5.

No. The Native Officers of Sappers and Miners are considered to be of great assistance to the European Officers.

6.

The Madras Sappers and Miners have never mutinied, but, speaking generally, I should say that men can never Mutiny unless the Native Officers side with them.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7.

I recommend the grades of Native Commissioned Officers to be continued, and that their position should be made as worth holding to themselves as their important duties, if faithfully performed, are useful to the State.

8.

The Native Commissioned Officer, according to orders, always commands the European Non-Commissioned Officer when they are associated on duty. This association is, however, avoided when it might be inconvenient by placing the Europeans on the Adjutant's list, from whom they would get their orders direct.

9.

The abolition of the grade of Native Officer would, by closing the prospect of distinction and emolument to the Native Sappers have a very prejudicial effect upon the Corps. The Military ambition and *esprit de Corps* now strong in the men, would thereby be destroyed, and they would feel themselves inferior to their brethren of the line in all a soldier looks to as reward for long and approved service.

10.

I am of opinion that neither good service, nor retiring pensions would compensate the men for the destruction of their hope of Military rank and preferment. Officers look to rank as well as pay, and in all armies it is advisable that each Soldier should feel the possibility of his carrying in his knapsack the key to his obtaining the rank of a Commissioned Officer, independent of good conduct pay and pension.

11.

There is every reason to believe that retiring pensions have had great weight in attaching the Native troops of India to the British service, but late events have shown that these are not all powerful to secure the fidelity of troops, and that discipline and prudent organization are also essentially necessary to accomplish this end.

I would recommend the system of pensions now in force to be retained, as in most cases it is the strongest motive with the Sepoy, both for entering and remaining in the Service.

12.

I would beg, however, here strongly to advocate the justice of a Sapper Soldier being admitted to pension after a shorter period of service than is exacted from the Infantry Soldier, as he has much harder work to perform, and is therefore sooner worn out.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

He is subject to continued exposure and bodily exertion in unhealthy climates in time of peace, besides the hardships of war, which fall upon him with two-fold severity, as he is then obliged to fight as well as work.

13.

Promotion by merit and efficiency should be the rule as it is at present in the Madras Sappers and Miners, and seniority is only taken into consideration when other grounds of claim are equal, or nearly so.

14.

I believe they are, and at least can see no reason why they should not be.

15.

The Native Commissioned Officer cannot rival the Europeans in general intelligence, as he has not had equal advantages; but I consider taking into account his intimate relations with the men, that he is more efficient in his position than a European would be.

16.

The appointment of Officers of Native Infantry to Command Companies of Native Sappers and Miners, is certainly advantageous as training to the Officers themselves, but I consider it to be unfair to the men, as it involves a constant change of Officers, who in many cases are not long enough with the men to know them. It is also objectionable, as the Officers belonging to another branch of the Service cannot have that *esprit de Corps* so conducive to the zealous and efficient discharge of duty, and the maintenance of discipline. I consider also that the system is also destructive of the independence of the Corps, as young Infantry Officers are often more desirous of obtaining the good opinion of a Brigadier or Commandant of a station, who is supposed to possess influence at Head Quarters, than of looking after the interests of the Corps by carrying out the instructions he may receive from its distant Head Quarters.

17.

It the distinct organization, and the difference of system, regulation and component races in the Madras Army, that has saved it from the disastrous consequences of imbibing the spirit so lately manifested in the Army of Bengal.

18.

The distinctiveness of system, organization, and composition in the Madras Army should by all means be allowed to remain, and no attempt should be made to amalgamate the three Armies.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**19.**

I beg particularly to advocate the enlistment of men of what is called low caste into the Army in still greater numbers than hitherto. These men, especially when they rise to be Native Officers are entirely dependent upon the stability of the British power, and will use their influence accordingly. I would also advocate the raising of several Corps composed entirely of Native Christians from the South of India where probably 7 Regiments of such men could be raised within the Madras Presidency. These men having no hope beyond our Government, would serve it with fidelity, and when trained to arms would in my opinion make as good Soldiers as men of the highest caste in Bengal. This measure would also give Military employment, and open the door of Government patronage to a people who are practically excluded from the Army for no other reason than that they profess the same religion as their rulers.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. BAIRD SMITH, C. B., OF ENGINEERS, MINT MASTER.

## BENGAL ARMY.

1. No reply.
2. In my experience most of them were inferior men.
- 3, 4 & 5. No reply.
6. In my experience no Native Officer gave the slightest hint or warning of the impending Mutiny, they took no active part in maintaining discipline, but a few remained faithful to Government.
7. Men wont serve as Soldiers without prospects of promotion and pay. The equivalents of Native Commissioned Officers must be maintained, I apprehend, in any organized body meant for purposes of war.
8. No reply.
9. I think not.
10. I believe not, and such an arrangement seems to me quite inconsistent with the ordinary motives of men serving as Soldiers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

11.

Clearly not.

12.

Maintained of course in spite of its failure for its influence must be most powerful, though not powerful enough, to counteract the expectations, formed by the Sepoy Army before the Mutiny.

13.

Some safe guards are necessary in the working of any system of promotion, nominally by merit or efficiency.

The best being probably tests by impartial examination in professional matters. With such safe guards merit and efficiency may justly be made the basis of promotion.

14.

No reply.

15.

Generally from my own observation, I would say they are not.

16.

I think the system is destructive of the unity of the Corps, that it introduces into it a body of Officers who can not identify themselves with it, and that if it be desirable to have a really efficient Corps of Engineer Soldiers, the usual rules of Military organization should not be violated, and Officers and men should be of the same branch of the service.

The training of European Officers of the Line may be much more unexceptionably affected than by means that insure an indifferant Engineer Corps.

17.

I would say unquestionably just as the distinction of races and national organization is favorable to the power of Austria, or any other power ruling mixed races.

18.

Keep them distinct as concerns each other, and united only in their interests, being dependent on the English Government.

---

CAPTAIN J. JONES, BOMBAY ENGINEERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

Merit alone, when two men are equally meritorious, the senior would have the preference, any distinguished act in the Field would have great weight.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2. Yes, certainly.
3. There are examinations for each of the Non-Commissioned grades, but not for the Commissioned grades, specially. But no Havildar is considered eligible for promotion unless he is a sufficiently educated man. The senior Jemadar is always promoted as a matter of course, the duties of a Subadar and Jemadar being the same.
4. Yes, They ought to be the smartest and most intelligent men in the Corps.
5. I think not, if the European Officer makes friends of his Native Officers and does not neglect his duty by leaving every thing to them, he will find them of great assistance to him in encreasing his influence with the men.
6. As there has been no Mutiny in the Corps of Sappers, the Native Officers have not been tested, but from what I have seen of them, I have no doubt of their loyalty.
7. The Native Commissioned Officer should certainly be continued. But they all must be selected men and respected by the men of the Corps. The step to a Native Officer should be a very marked one.
8. No European will submit to be commanded by a Native, and no European is ever put with a party of Natives when there is a Native Officer or Non-Commissioned Officer of *superior* rank. There is no necessity to mix them in the ranks. Few European Non-Commissioned Officers understand Natives and to work well with them, they ought to be very carefully selected.
9. No, certainly not, I would do away with the present complement of European Serjeants and Corporals attached to each Native Company.
10. The present grades of good conduct pay as granted in the Bombay Army are useful to reward old Sepoys of good character, who are unfit for any higher rank than that of a private, but, I do not think it would be desirable to substitute good conduct pay for the present rank of a Native Commissioned Officer.
11. All natives appear to attach a good deal of importance to retiring pension.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

Maintained as regards those men now in the service; any modifications which might appear to be desirable, could be at any time introduced.

13.

Merit and efficiency.

14.

Yes, as far as can be expected from Natives.

15.

The European Non-Commissioned Officers vary so much in intelligence, that it is very difficult to compare them with the Native Officers; perhaps, generally speaking, they are superior in professional knowledge.

16.

Engineer Officers only are, in my opinion, the proper men to command Engineer Soldiers.

17.

I think it has.

18.

A certain degree of distinctness of system might be allowed in the three Armies where desirable.

---

CAPTAIN W. F. MARRIOTT, BOMBAY ENGINEERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

Merit and seniority combined.

2.

When I was with the Sappers, a large portion of the Corps had been previously Pioneers, and lately converted into Sappers, and the Native Officers of Pioneers were deficient, though by no means useless. But the Sapper Native Officers were remarkably intelligent and efficient.

3.

There was none when I was with the Corps.

4.

Certainly, much higher than the average of the men of the Corps.

5.

No.

6.

I know nothing on this point.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

7. They should be continued undoubtedly.
8. Neither one nor the other. They were always treated as independent of each other, and whenever they paraded together without the presence of an European Commissioned Officer (which seldom happened) the Serjeant Major took separate Command of the Europeans, and the Senior Native Officer of the Natives.
- \* Practical subordination of one to the other was altogether avoided.
9. Certainly not.
10. I cannot conceive good reasons for the abolition, and certainly no pay or pension would answer the same purpose.
11. I cannot doubt it.
12. They should be maintained, whether they be capable of advantageous modifications, I have not considered.
13. Promotion should be by merit and efficiency.
14. Yes, according to my experience.
15. Yes, according to my experience, always excepting the efficiency due to the energy and force of character of an Englishman, irrespectively of his technical knowledge.
16. I have no experience of it. If the Officers of the Line were trained at first under an Engineer Officer, I should think it would answer very well; but if the Infantry Officer should receive no training under an Engineer Officer, the Native Officers would feel themselves superior in some respects, which is undesirable.
17. In the late Mutinies, it appears to me evident that the separation was favorable to our power.
18. The distinctness of system within reasonable limits, is, I think, advantageous.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT, BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

**1 to 7.**

The answers already given for the Infantry apply equally here.

**8.**

An European Non-Commissioned Officer cannot command a Native Commissioned Officer.

**9.**

The European Serjeants and Corporals cannot supply the place of the Native Commissioned Officers.

**10 to 14.**

Answered as before.

**15.**

The Non-Commissioned European Officers of the Native Sappers are all picked men, educated at Chatham. They are greatly superior in professional acquirement and efficiency to any Native Officers, either Commissioned or Non-Commissioned.

**16.**

I think that Engineer Soldiers are best commanded by Engineer Officers. Whether European Officers of the line can be advantageously attached to Sapper Companies, for their own training and instruction, is another question. With the existing establishment of Officers, none could be spared from their proper sphere of duty for such detached instruction.

**17 & 18.**

Answered as before.

---

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B. ADJUTANT GENERAL, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

**1.**

Merit and seniority combined.

**2.**

When well selected, they are very much so.

**3.**

The practice has been to recommend no Havildar for promotion to Native Officer, who has not passed the examinations for promotion to Havildar.

**4.**

Necessarily so, as they are selected from the most efficient of the Sappers.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

5.

On the contrary. The European Officer is necessarily the arbiter between the two. Generally speaking the Native Officer has but small power in the Native Army, except in the case of one of much personal influence, either of caste or character.

6.

There has been no mutiny in the Sappers.

7.

Certainly continued.

8.

It is the rule of the Army of the Bombay Presidency, that no Native Commissioned Officer can be commanded by a Non-Commissioned Officer.

9

In my opinion very unadvisable.

10.

Under such a system, in my opinion, any thing like an efficient Native Army.

11.

They are a great bond, there cannot be a doubt. Events have shewn that they have not been effectual. The movers of this wonderful mutiny have shaken the belief of the men in the stability of the pensions even.

12.

Certainly maintained. The system may be modified with advantage.

13.

The rule in the Bombay Army is, promotion by merit and efficiency ; combined with seniority.

14.

Quite fit.

15.

I think not ; the European Non-Commissioned Officers of Sappers are specially trained in England for this scientific Corps, and are selected for intelligence and efficiency.

16.

As an emergency it may be very useful, but Engineer Officers should command Engineer Soldiers. To the Infantry European Officers so attached, it is very advantageous making them proficient in other duties than those peculiar to them. But all must depend upon the individual character of the Officer.

17.

I think this has proved the saving of the Indian Empire.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

Had the organization, system, regulations, and component races, of the Armies of the three Presidencies been one and the same, it cannot be doubted that the mutiny would have been general throughout India.

18.

The races to be met with in the Continent of India, are as dissimilar in many respects as are the races of Europe. The attempt at assimilation should not be made. Armies and Regiments must be raised from the surrounding population to avoid the inconvenience and difficulty of gathering the material from a distance; besides this is not necessary. Every where there are abundance of men of all races, castes and tribes. We should avoid being exclusive, and every man capable of bearing arms who presents himself, should be enlisted without respect to caste. I think the amalgamation of the three Armies would be impossible.

LIEUT.-COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER MASTER GENERAL  
OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

1 to 6.

No reply.

7.

Like all other classes, they should have something to look forward to from good service.

8.

There is an old order, by which European Non-Commissioned Officers of *Sappers and Miners* assume command on such occasions.

9.

If this be done, some other mode of rewarding good service, than by promotion, should be devised for the Native Sapper.

10.

I believe it would answer.

11.

They have undoubtedly been considered by the Native Troops to be perhaps the greatest boon of the service.

12.

This appears to be purely a question of finance. To grant the pensions would be advantageous, and render the service more attractive to the Native Soldier. But at the same time, he can get any number of Native Soldiers without them.

13.

By merit and efficiency alone.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

The majority of all Native Officers of whatever branch of the Army, are unfit in my opinion. I would have no Native Courts Martial.

15.

I should think not ; but have no personal knowledge on the subject.

16.

I believe it has been found to answer well.

17.

Undoubtedly. The more varied the systems, regulations, and races, the less likely are we to have combinations formed against us.

18.

The more separate and distinct they are, the better.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

BENGAL ARMY.

1.

Seniority, with slight exceptions.

3.

No, not by general regulation.

6.

I believe not.

7.

To follow the general practice of the Army.

8.

Yes.

9.

See No. 7.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

Merit and seniority combined.

2.

When well selected they are very much so.

3.

The practice has been to recommend no Havildar for promotion to Native Officer, who has not passed the examination for promotion to Havildar.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. Necessarily so, as they are selected from the most efficient of the Sappers and Miners from among whom they have risen.
5. No.
6. There has been no mutiny in the Sappers.
7. I would assimilate them to the rest of the Native Army, whatever may be decided on that head.
8. It is the rule of the Army of the Bombay Presidency that no Native Commissioned Officer can be commanded by a Non-Commissioned Officer.
9. No.
10. Yes; if on a liberal scale.
11. Certainly.
12. Maintained.
13. Promotion by merit is the system of the Bombay Army.
14. Quite fit.
15. According to the duties they have to perform, yes.
16. If permanently posted to the Corps of Sappers, very advisable.  
It would be advantageous to the European Soldiers, as the men would then know their own Officers; on the present system the command of Companies fluctuates to a mischievous degree.
17. I think it has.
18. Not assimilate, and on no account amalgamate.

---

BREVET-MAJOR A. J. M. BOILEAU, OFFICIATING CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD,  
DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

MADRAS ARMY.

1. Firstly on merit, if two seem equally meritorious, then seniority decides.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

2. Yes.
3. Yes ; they are examined in reading and writing the vernacular, and also on their knowledge of drill.
4. Certainly, having been selected for merit.
5. No.
6. The Madras Sappers and Miners have never mutinied.
7. I can see no disadvantage in continuing them.
8. The Native Commissioned Officers command the Native Sappers, and have no command over the European Serjeants and Corporals, and these again have no command over the Native Sappers. The European Sappers mark out the works in company with the Native Officers, who instruct their men how to carry them out. That is the rule, but in my recent services I had reason to see that the European Serjeants and Corporals had necessarily much direct communication with the men, not actually to command them, but in pointing out to them immediately the work to be done.
9. No, certainly not *in lieu*, nor indeed would I maintain European Serjeants and Corporals as attached to Sappers at all, but I would form a Field Engineer's Department of Instruction in time of peace, and for employment under the Field or Commanding Engineer in time of service.
10. The abolition of Commissioned grades is not advisable I think.
11. It is the principal binding link.
12. Let them be maintained.
13. Promotion by *mérit* should certainly be the rule.
14. Yes, for they are in almost all cases very intelligent men.
15. This is a difficult question to answer, for men vary so exceedingly. Some are, some are not. The Native Officer's qualities in the Field are not fully developed as long as the European Non-Commissioned are at hand to mark out the Batteries, &c., for them.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

16.

I confess that I think that a further and fuller training is required, if Officers of Native Infantry are to be in command of Sapper Companies. The specimens I have had the opportunity of seeing did not impress me favorably with the system, but on the other hand under the present constitution of the Engineer Corps, Officers cannot be spared for the duty. Give the Infantry Officers attached to the Sappers an *Engineer's training* and then they may be suited. Those whom I met did not seem to be fully trained. I do not know how far the employment of Infantry Officers is considered favorable or otherwise by the Sappers themselves.

17.

I think the year 1857 has abundantly shewn this. What would have been the result if the inflammable materials of which the late Bengal Army was composed had largely entered into the composition of the Madras Army, or even if we had a large sprinkling of Pandies? A flame would have been kindled in this Presidency, fuel would have been added in the Deccan, and a fire would have been raised which would have burned us out of India.

18.

Assimilation to a great measure, such as in pay, pensions, leave and other privileges, should, I think, be adopted, but not amalgamation.





# PRECIS

OF THE

## REPLIES TO QUESTIONS ON ENGINEER SOLDIERS OR SAPPERS AND MINERS.

### No. IV. EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

---

#### QUESTIONS.

#### 1 to 6

#### ANSWERS.

Lord Clyde replies as he did to the Infantry Questions.

Sir Sydney Cotton does the same, and concludes with a summary recital of the substance of his replies as given in the previous sheets, and takes occasion to condemn the present system of detaching solitary Companies or Detachments for months and even for years, in places where there can be no proper check on the men.

Lieutenant Colonel Baird Smith, giving no replies to the first three Questions, says in answer to the fifth, that the powers of Officers should be increased. (Some notes appended to this Officer's answers will be separately stated.)

Sir Patrick Grant remarks, when replying to Question 1, that the constant changes of Commandant and Adjutant in view to their obtaining the superior allowances in the Department of Public Works, to which their standing gives them a claim, is very injurious to the Corps.

For the rest, he replies as to the Infantry series, that the powers of Officers Commanding the Regiment and the Companies, have been increased, &c.

Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson (Madras) states that the powers of the Commanding Officer and of Officers Commanding Companies have been diminished; but that the discipline of the Sappers has not suffered much thereby, because it depends in a campaign on the Officers Commanding Companies and Detachments, who then probably assume more power than the regulations allow. But he says that the Corps is too much scattered to admit of any system of general discipline.

Captain Jones (Bombay) states that the powers of Officers have been slightly increased; but he would increase them still.

To Question 6, he replies, that the Corps, both European and Native, should be increased to meet the wants of the service, and should be properly instructed ;—that the pay of a Native Sapper should be raised from 7 to 8 Rupees, to obtain suitable men ; that the Head Quarters of the Corps should be removed from Poona to some Station where there would be greater facility for Field Works, Mining, &c., as Kirkee, for instance ;—that 2 Native Companies, besides the Adjutant's Detachment, should always be at Head Quarters for instruction ; that no Company should be absent from Head Quarters for more than two years, if possible ; that the emoluments of the Officers of the Military branch of the Corps should be placed on a better footing ; and that a proper Head Quarters Staff of Officers should be appointed.

Captain Marriott has not had sufficient experience to give an opinion as to the powers of Officers, but he would rather increase them. He makes no further reply.

Separate note by Lieutenant-Colonel Baird Smith.

He observes that a very material part of the siege works, both at Delhi and Lucknow, was executed by men called Pioneers ; with a rude organization, a good sample of the working population of the Country. Six hundred came from Roorkee, almost exclusively Beldars from Oude. Their good conduct during the Mutinies was excellent. Between 2 and 300 of them were close to Roorkee, yet no disturbance occurred among them. About 200 were armed with Carbines and drilled, showing great aptitude as Soldiers, and their courage under trying circumstances and heavy fire was conspicuous. Colonel Smith considers them to be a material for Engineer Soldiers well worthy of the attention of Government.

He then states his idea of the personnel of the Engineer Department of the Indian Army.

1st.—A small body of European Engineer Soldiers, of very high professional training, to superintend all Military Works.

2nd.—A large Corps of Pioneers of the ordinary laboring classes, well trained, to be Commanded by a selected Engineer, Warrant or Non-Commissioned Officer, who may have attained an unattached Commission, to be in Divisions of 120 men with Native Officers or Supervisors, each Commanded by a Warrant Officer, with a Serjeant Overseer to each Sub-Division. An Adjutant and Quarter Master, being Warrant Officers, to form the Staff. All the Europeans to be used to deal with Native workmen, and



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

to have like pay and promotion in prospect, as their fellows in the Department of Public Works. The Corps to be considered one for Army Works, not for fighting, and to be armed and drilled accordingly.

3rd.—A small body of Native Artificers, such as are always wanted in Engineer Parks, and very difficult to obtain when wanted ; an Engineer Store Depôt or Arsenal to be established at Roorkee and the Artificers employed there, with European Supervisors attached ; the whole commanded by the Engineer Officer in charge of the Arsenal or Depôt.

Lieutenant-Colonel Smith thinks that instructing our Native Engineer Soldiers as far as their capacities will permit should occasion no anxiety. Though trained Sappers may have occasionally added to our difficulties where their skill was turned against us, the effect is in his opinion infinitesimally small when compared with what the same class have done for us during the long period they have been employed under European supervision in siege operations. They are excellent tools, but little to be feared as opponents.

---



## 4.—EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

### SAPPERS AND MINERS.

#### QUESTIONS.

1. Within your experience have the powers of Commanding Officers of Sappers and Miners increased or diminished in the \_\_\_\_\_ ?
2. During the above period, have the powers of Officers of Companies been increased or diminished ?
3. Has the discipline of the \_\_\_\_\_ Sappers and Miners been influenced by the above causes ?
4. Upon what does the discipline of a body of Sappers and Miners mainly depend during a campaign? Upon the distant authority of Head Quarters or upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies and of the Commanding Officer of the Corps ?
5. Should the powers of Commanding Officers and of Officers in charge of Companies be increased or diminished ?
6. What other measures can you suggest for the improvement of the discipline and efficiency of the \_\_\_\_\_ Sappers and Miners ?

---

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL, THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

#### QUESTIONS.

#### ANSWERS.

1. The answer given under the head of "Infantry," equally applies to the Sappers and Miners.
2. The answer given under the head of "Infantry," equally applies to the Sappers and Miners.
3. It would seem that it must necessarily have deteriorated.
4. The answer given under the head of "Infantry," equally applies to the Sappers and Miners.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**5.**

The answer given under the head of "Infantry," equally applies to the Sappers and Miners.

**6.**

The measures that have been suggested for the "Infantry" are desirable for the Sappers, but it is most essential that a selected Commandant should be always present with the Sappers and a proportion of experienced European Officers.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,  
FORT ST. GEORGE.

**1.**

The power of the Commandant of the Sappers has been increased, as described in the answer to this question in reference to the Infantry. But the constant changes of Commandant and Adjutant, in view to their obtaining the superior allowances in the Department of Public Works, to which their standing gives them a claim, is very injurious to the Corps.

**2.**

There has been also an increase of power of Officers Commanding Companies.

**3.**

There has been little or no change as regards the Native portion of the Sappers. The conduct of the few European Sappers has decidedly improved.

**4.**

On the authority and influence of Officers Commanding Companies, and the Officer Commanding the Force under whose immediate orders the Sappers are serving.

**5 & 6.**

As in the Infantry.

---

MAJOR GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

**1.**

I believe they have diminished in common with those of all other European Officers in the Native Army.

**2.**

Vide foregoing.

**3.**

I conclude that the discipline of the Sapper has suffered in like manner with all other Native Corps.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4.

It ought to depend upon the due control of the European Officers over the men. The distant authority of Head Quarters is not known or felt by the men, excepting to make use of in cases of appeal against their own Commanding Officers.

5.

Considerably increased.

6.

I believe the efficiency and discipline of the Corps of Sappers will be ensured, if the measures advocated in the foregoing questions are carried out, and I may briefly sum them up as follows :—

*1stly.* Increasing the number of European Engineer Officers, permanently posting them to the Corps, and, furthermore, placing the Corps under a well selected Officer of standing.

*2ndly.* Increasing the powers of European Officers generally over the Native Soldiers.

*3rdly.* Abolishing Native Commissioned Officers, and substituting, in lieu of them, European Serjeants of steady habits.

*4thly.* Increasing the European strength of the Corps of Sappers by the addition of an European Battalion from which the Barrack Masters Department could be supplied with Overseers.

*5thly.* Increase to the Native portion of the Corps which can be done with much advantage and with little additional cost, if the number of Native Infantry Regiments be correspondingly diminished.

*6thly.* Separating the Natives into Companies composed of distinct classes.

*7thly.* Introducing a more rigid system of Barrack discipline among the Natives, to keep them constantly under surveillance; and while on this subject I must utterly condemn the present system of detaching solitary Companies on Detachment for months and even years, in out of the way places where there can be no proper check over the men. No Troops can be so employed without deterioration in every respect as Soldiers.

A Battalion of Sappers and Miners might with advantage be located at the Head Quarters of every Division of the Army; properly organized with a due complement of European Officers it would be highly useful, and from it Detachments on duty in the District could be periodically relieved.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF ON THE SCINDE FRONTIER.

## BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

I have not sufficient acquaintance with the details of information regarding the Bombay Sappers and Miners especially, which is necessary to enable me to reply to these questions with advantage. Those questions which have reference to general arrangements and principles, have been fully answered by me in replies to questions regarding other arms, and it appears useless to repeat the answers here.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. HENDERSON, MADRAS ENGINEERS, CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD, DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

## MADRAS ARMY.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers have been diminished within my experience.

2.

The powers of Officers Commanding Companies have been similarly diminished within the same period.

3.

The discipline of the Madras Sappers and Miners has not suffered much from the above causes, for the reasons assigned in the next paragraph.

4.

The discipline of a body of Sappers and Miners depends mainly during a campaign (in the absence of the Commanding Officer) upon the Officers in Command of Companies and Detachments, who probably in the field assume more power than is allowed by the Regulations. But here I beg to remark that under the name of discipline I speak chiefly of the behaviour and obedience of the men, for the Corps is too much scattered to admit of any system of general discipline to thoroughly pervade it. The Head Quarters of Companies of the Corps are all at different Stations; and sometimes a Company is sub-divided into 6 or 7 Detachments, to the defiance of all good discipline in the more extended sense of the word. The Regiment of Madras Sappers and Miners cannot be looked upon as a disciplined Military body, till its numbers bear a fairer proportion to the aggregate of the Madras Army, and to the vast extent of territory over which it is employed.

Were this the case, and every Company commanded by an Engineer Officer, it would be practicable to introduce a regular system by which a certain number of Companies could always

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

be at Head Quarters under instruction, whilst the remainder of the Corps were employed on different public works, and giving efficient aid in improving and developing the vast resources of the Madras Presidency.

The powers of Commanding Officers should be increased, but I leave any further suggestions for the discipline and efficiency of the Corps to the Commandant of Engineers, and the Officer in Command of the Sappers and Miners.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. BAIRD SMITH, C. B.; OF ENGINEERS, MINT MASTER.  
BENGAL ARMY.

1 to 3.

No replies.

4.

Necessarily during a campaign, on the authority of the Local Officers.

5.

Increased in my opinion.

6.

No reply.

---

CAPTAIN JENKINS JONES, BOMBAY ENGINEERS, COMMANDING SAPPERS AND  
MINERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1.

Slightly increased.

2.

It has always been the system in the Corps to give the Officers Commanding Companies as much power as the Regulations of the Service admitted of.

3.

Possibly.

4.

Upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies, and of the Commanding Officer of the Corps.

5.

Increased.

6.

That both the European and Native Corps should be sufficiently increased so as to meet the wants of the Service, and be also properly instructed.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

That the pay of a Native Sapper be increased from Rupees seven (7) to Rupees eight (8), in order that good and suitable men may offer themselves for enlistment: That the Head Quarters of the Corps may be removed from Poona to some station where there would be more facility in throwing up field works, mining, &c., such as to Kirkee for instance. That two Native Companies, exclusive of the Adjutant's Detachment, should be always stationed at Head Quarters for instruction. That no Company should be absent more than two years from Head Quarters if possible. That the Military branch should be placed on a better footing for the Officers employed in it, as regards emoluments, and a proper Head Quarters Staff of Officers appointed.

CAPTAIN W. F. MARRIOTT, BOMBAY ENGINEERS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1. I have not sufficient information to enable me to answer.
2. As above.
3. As above.
4. Upon the authority and influence of the Officers in immediate Command.
5. They should rather be increased.
6. I have not sufficient acquaintance with the details of the present system, to enable me to make suggestions of any value.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT, BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

- 1 to 6. Answered as before.

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B., ADJUTANT GENERAL. BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

1. The powers of all Commanding Officers of Native Troops have been much diminished within my experience.
2. They are much the same now as they were before.



## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

**3.**

I do not know that it has. The men are willing and obedient. But the system of looking beyond Commanding Officers is bad, and has been caused by the centralization of power in the superior Officers, Army Head Quarters, and Government. All this causes constant references, and discipline is maintained more by pen and ink than the legitimate influence of Commanding Officers.

**4.**

In times of difficulty and danger the discipline of all Soldiers must depend upon the influence of the Regimental Officers. No distant authority can then avail.

**5.**

Under the system of selected Officers, which I have all through these papers recommended as essential to the well being of a Native Regiment, the power of a Commanding Officer should be almost unlimited, and he should be the judge of how much should be delegated to his subordinates.

**6.**

I do not know that I can make any suggestion peculiar to the Sappers and Miners to improve their discipline and efficiency. The pay of these men should be looked to, as it is insufficient; the Native Officers should be better paid. Times have changed much in the last 30 years, but our Native Army is much the same now as it was then.

---

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL A. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER-MASTER-  
GENERAL.  
BENGAL ARMY.

**1 to 6.**

I would beg to refer to my answers to the questions regarding European Officers generally, (forwarded to Colonel Durand with my letter No. 1313 of the 5th July last) as they are equally applicable to these questions.

---

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, K. C. B., K. H.,  
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

**1.**

The amended Articles of War have slightly increased them.

**2.**

They continue the same.

**3.**

I think the discipline is very good.

## QUESTIONS.

## ANSWERS.

4.

On the Commanding Officer in the field.

5.

I think Officers must be restricted to the Articles of War, and the Regulations of Service.

6.

None.

---

A. J. M. BOILEAU, OFFICiating CHIEF ENGINEER, HYDRABAD, DEPARTMENT PUBLIC WORKS.

## MADRAS ARMY.

1.

Diminished.

2.

Diminished.

3.

I do not think so.

4.

As the Sappers are rarely in greater strength than a single Company on field service, their discipline depends almost entirely on the Commanding Officer of the Company.

5.

Increased, I should say; but carefully guarding the additional power entrusted to them.

6.

I think it is a mistake to keep the Sappers at an isolated station like Dowlaishwarum, and am of opinion that they should have their Head Quarters at a large station where they can be occasionally brigaded with other troops, and when the work they do, might be not only instructive to themselves, but useful to Government in a further sense; for instance, Secunderabad should be defended. How could the Sappers be better employed? The numerous details of work to be done, some pertaining to permanent, some to field fortification, would afford valuable instruction to Officers and men. At present I hear they are chiefly employed in making roads at Dowlaishwarum. The course of instruction should be assimilated as much as possible to that in use with the Royal Engineers.

